This is a reproduction of a library book that was digitized by Google as part of an ongoing effort to preserve the information in books and make it universally accessible.

Google books

http://books.google.com

NYPL RESEARCH LIBRARIES
3 3433 08186087 0

THE MINUTE MEN OF '17

Digitized by Google

The New York
Public Library
ASTOR, LENOX, TILDEN FOUNDATIONS

Digitized by Google

9th Coast Guard NY
Art. Corps.

See Pg 144-145
Stuch

The New York
Public Library
ASTOR LENOX AND TILDEN FOUNDATIONS

JFF
89-953

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

THE MINUTE MEN OF '17

Digitized by Google

Copyright, 1922, by
MEMORIAL AND PROPERTY COMMITTEE
OF THE NINTH COAST ARTILLERY CORPS

Digitized by Google

IT IS THE SAD DUTY OF THIS COMMITTEE TO ANNOUNCE THAT ON THE 1ST OF JULY, 1922, OUR REVERED HISTORIAN, LIEUTENANT ALEXANDER R. THOMPSON, DIED AT HIS HOME IN PENN YAN, N. Y.

Memorial and Property Committee
of the Ninth Coast Artillery Corps.

Digitized by Google

COLONEL JOHN ROSS DELAFIELD, D. S. M.

Digitized by Google

THE MINUTE MEN OF '17

A HISTORY OF THE SERVICE RENDERED DURING THE RECENT WORLD WAR BY THE

Ninth Coast Artillery Corps

NEW YORK GUARD

and the

Veteran Corps of Artillery

STATE OF NEW YORK

Published by the
MEMORIAL AND PROPERTY COMMITTEE
OF THE NINTH COAST ARTILLERY CORPS
1922

Digitized by Google

HEADQUARTERS, VETERAN CORPS OF ARTILLERY, 71st REGIMENT ARMORY.

Digitized by Google

CONTENTS

PAGE

FOREWORD, BY COL. GEORGE W. BURLEIGH 1

INTRODUCTION, BY LIEUT. ALEX. R. THOMPSON 10

CHAPTER ONE—THE CALL TO ARMS 11

The Veteran Corps of Artillery—founded by officers of the Revolution—served in the War of 1812—present personnel and organization—desire to do its bit in the World War—Colonel Delafield's efforts—anti-aircraft activities—co-operation from Governors Island and elsewhere.

CHAPTER TWO—FILLING THE RANKS 17

Recruiting—tactical reorganization of the Artillery Service Detachment—drilling in the 71st Regt. Armory—character of recruits—batteries added from Brooklyn, Staten Island and Queens—Ceremonies at City Hall at welcome of French and British Commissions.

CHAPTER THREE—ARMS AND EQUIPMENT 26

The acquisition of Krag rifles—purchase of Lewis machine-guns—the raising of the Fund.

CHAPTER FOUR—THE COMMISSION FOR STUDY ABROAD 29

Information on up-to-date methods of anti-aircraft defense wanting—attempts to acquire same in U. S.—decision to send officers to Europe to procure same—aid and co-operation of City, State and Nation—Gen. J. Franklin Bell's help, and his opinion of the Corps—French and British ambassadors furnish credentials.

CHAPTER FIVE—THE CAMP AT CITY ISLAND 35

Need for a military camp—selection of site—description—dates assigned to batteries—routine of camp duty—Capt. Gage's report—Fourth Battery in camp when call to Aqueduct duty came—closing of camp.

CHAPTER SIX—THE LOST ORDERS 48

S. O. 198A, AGO 1917—Gen. Dyer consults Col. Delafield about men to help fill ranks of newly organized New York Guard, designed to take place of N.G.N.Y. called into Federal service—rumors of active service—assembly of Artillery Service Detachment at Armory Aug. 7—return of Fourth Battery from camp—call for volunteers—waiting at Armory for marching orders—officers of Prov. Batteries A and B—Entrainment Aug. 9—Peekskill—taking over posts along Aqueduct—replacements, and the work at Headquarters, 27 Cedar Street.

CHAPTER SEVEN—THE AQUEDUCT 58

Tour of duty of V. C. A. Aug. 7 to Sept. 17—667 men on pay-rolls—military survey of Aqueduct—location of Companies and Posts—A private's story—those who helped at Headquarters.

CHAPTER EIGHT—AS THE MEN SAW IT 72

A mess sergeant's narrative—excerpts from letters of enlisted men—"Recollections of a Sergeant"—"Song of the Aqueduct"—a sergeant's experience—"The Water Wagon"—a report (Sgt. W. W. Mack)—"the Minute Men of Today."

CHAPTER NINE—THE TRANSFER TO THE 9TH C. A. C. 90

Growth of the Artillery Service Detachment—statutory limitations—impracticability of remaining an anti-aircraft organization—transfer to New York Guard—G. O. 46, A. G. O. 1917—those who remained in the V. C. A.— official correspondence relating to the change—"A Toast."

Digitized by Google

PAGE

CHAPTER TEN—THE NINTH—COLONEL DELAFIELD IN COMMAND 100
Marching to the new Armory—Brooklyn and adjacent Queens men transfer to Brooklyn units of N. Y. G.—glorious history of the 9th Regiment—choice of officers—the new Ninth's first call to duty.

CHAPTER ELEVEN—THE SUPPLY COMPANY 107
Functions of a Supply Company—personnel—activities—paper-work—the Band—the Machine-Gun Company—personnel—the "9th Coast News."

CHAPTER TWELVE (I)—OFFICERS ABROAD 113
Maj. Stoddard, Capt. Wilder and Lieut. Ward sail Aug. 29, 1917, for Bordeaux—Maj. Stoddard's narrative—Capt. Wilder's experience at the Artillery School at Arnouville—he is gassed—Lieut. Ward's services at Paris, etc.—he stays abroad and is frequently promoted and decorated—Maj. Stoddard and Capt. Wilder return to U. S.—the latter brevetted Major.

CHAPTER TWELVE (II)—THE ANTI-AIRCRAFT REPORT 132
Transmitted through A. G., S. N. Y. to A. G., U. S. A.—synopsis of report.

CHAPTER THIRTEEN—THE WORK OF THE REGIMENT 140
Varied activities—fire-fighting company—use of Armory by visiting troops, etc.—bayonet practice—Maj. Stoddard rejoins Regiment, commanding 2nd Battalion—1st Battalion as guard of honor to visiting Serbian Commission—2nd Battalion gives exhibition of riot drill and street formation at Madison Square Garden—formation of Woman's Auxiliary—Mrs. John Ross Delafield presents colors to Regiment.

CHAPTER FOURTEEN—IN TIME OF NEED 152
Regiment furnishes speakers and battalion parades with music for Third Liberty Loan Drive—officers act as aides in Woman's Service Flag parade—the first State inspection—armory guard maintained—sudden call to meet the Anzacs—review by Gov. Whitman—funeral of Mayor Mitchel—drilling "Y" Secretaries—rifle practice—training school for officers at Camp Whitman—Maj. Hodges returns from Aqueduct duty and resumes command of 3rd Battalion—Col. Delafield relinquishes command to enter Federal service.

CHAPTER FIFTEEN—COLONEL BURLEIGH TAKES COMMAND 177
Col. Delafield appointed Major, O. D., U. S. A., and ordered to Disbursing Bureau—his appreciation of Col. Burleigh—other promotions—the Fourth Liberty Loan and the Regiment's part in it—the 1st Battalion on Russian Day—retirement of Adjutant Davidson—review by Gen. Dyer—Machine-Gun Company surprises audience—review by Gen. Appleton—Inter-Company match on Armory rifle range—review by Gen. Scott.

CHAPTER SIXTEEN—FIELD DAYS AND RIFLE WORK 190
Field days at Van Cortlandt Park—constant practice on Armory rifle range—record of Regiment at Peekskill Range 1918—Lt. Col. Delafield given supervision of rifle practice Sept., 1918—preliminary instruction course—organizing rifle team for outdoor matches at Caldwell—records made in matches at Peekskill and Caldwell, 1919—observations by an officer of the Ninth stationed at Caldwell.

CHAPTER SEVENTEEN—THE OLD NINTH RETURNS 215
Parade of welcome to returning "old Ninth"—review—dinner to returning veterans at Armory—Regiment takes part in tactical problem June 19, 1919—reports of Majors Hoes, Gage and Keyes—Col. Burleigh relinquishes command Oct. 2, 1919.

CHAPTER EIGHTEEN—LATER ACTIVITIES OF THE NINTH 227
Col. John J. Byrne takes command—problems of replacing time-expired men—"red" propaganda—recruiting campaign—vocational training—re-conversion of Regiment into Coast Artillery—improvements to Armory—Federalization.

CHAPTER NINETEEN—HOW THE NON-MANHATTAN UNITS OF THE V. C. A. AND 9TH C. A. C. CAME INTO BEING 233

Digitized by Google

APPENDIX

PAGE

List of Officers and Men, Artillery Service Detachment, Veteran Corps of Artillery, S. N. Y. 241

List of Officers and Men, 9th C. A. C., N. Y. G. 277

Military Records of Officers of the V. C. A. and 9th C. A. C. 327

Financial Reports, Special Funds, V. C. A. and 9th C. A. C. 395

List of Contributors to Special Fund 399

Extract of Minutes of the Council of Administration, V. C. A. on Disposition of Special Fund, etc. 403

Official Correspondence Concerning Organization of Artillery Service Detachment, V. C. A., and the Foreign Mission 406

Special Orders 198, A. G. O., 1917—etc. 414

Digitized by Google

LIST OF ILLUSTRATIONS

	PAGE
Colonel John Ross Delafield	Frontispiece
Seventy-First Regiment Armory	viii
First Battalion, 9th C. A. C. in Hollow Square	9
V. C. A. Guard of Honor, in City Hall	22
V. C. A., Color Guard, in City Hall	23
Reception to the Prince of Udine	33
Colonel Delafield at City Island	34
Laying out the Camp	36
The Camp from Pelham Bay	36
Tents	37
Mess Hall	39
Guard House	39
The Krag Rifle	39
Airing Tents	39
Setting-up Exercises	44
"At the Double"	47
Machine-Gun Company, 9th. C. A. C.	57
Captain Thebaud, Ordnance Officer	65
Typical Post on the Aqueduct	67
Headquarters Company	67
Sentinels Challenging	68
Inspecting a Culvert	69
Lieutenant Taft's Headquarters	70
Capt. Praeger, Lieut. Sayers, Sgt. Hamilton	71
Company A Street, Peekskill	74
Peekskill—Back from Chow	74
Peekskill, Aug. 9—Erecting Tents	76
Captain Perry's Headquarters—Elmsford	76
Kensico Dam—Headquarters, Co. B	78
Company B—Street and Cook-shack	78
An Inspection Trip	89
The Foreign Mission	114
Scenes in France	118
Scenes in France	120
The Devastated Area	124
Anti-Aircraft Material	126
American Officers at School, Arnouville	128
The Ubiquitous Barbed Wire	128
The Armory, 125 West 14th Street	145
Second Battalion at Riot Drill	145
The Ninth in a Liberty Loan Parade	152

Digitized by Google

PAGE
John Purroy Mitchel 158
The Funeral of John Purroy Mitchel 159
Governor Charles S. Whitman 160
Y. M. C. A. Secretaries in Central Park 163
Lieut. Col. Burleigh and Staff with "Y" Secretaries 165
General Mann and Staff 166
Dinner to Major Stoddard at the Brevoort 173
A Lewis Machine-Gun at a County Fair 174
Lt. Col. Burleigh and Officers at Camp Whitman 175
Col. Delafield and Officers at Camp Whitman 175
Colonel George W. Burleigh 176
Colonel Burleigh and his Staff 193
During a Rest-period 194
Equitation School, Camp Whitman 195
Band of the 9th C. A. C., N. Y. G., at Princeton 195
Lieutenant Colonel Edward C. Delafield 200
Brigadier-General George R. Dyer 205
New York Day at Caldwell, N. J. 208
Post 8, Co. A., North of Tuckahoe Road 214
2nd Lieutenant Alexander R. Thompson, Historian 225
Colonel John J. Byrne 226
Captain Theodore T. Lane, (Dec'd.) 232
Third Battery, V. C. A., at Borough Hall, St. George 234
Along the Aqueduct 322
Captains Howland Pell and Theodore T. Lane 323
At Headquarters of Company B 323
Major-General John F. O'Ryan 324
Governor Alfred E. Smith 325
Adjutant General Stotesbury 326
Adjutant General Sherrill 326
Adjutant General Berry 326
Asst. Adjutant General Westcott 326
Officers' Portraits (opposite their Military Records) . . . . . 328 to 390

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

FOREWORD

By Colonel George W. Burleigh, New York National Guard, formerly Colonel commanding the Ninth Coast Artillery Corps, New York Guard

THE opportunity which has come to me to write the foreword to this most interesting history is not only a pleasure but a distinct honor, which is deeply appreciated. It does not often fall to a man's lot to have an opportunity for both praise and thanksgiving, an opportunity to praise his comrades united for a patriotic service to State and Nation, and an opportunity for thanksgiving because it was given to him to be one of them.

John Ross Delafield recruited, and by his splendid enthusiasm, called into being twelve provisional batteries of the Veteran Corps of Artillery, State of New York, a selected body of men who were instilled with a fervent patriotism and an ardent desire for service. I doubt if there was ever a finer body of men gathered together, or one more carefully selected, consolidated into a regiment and trained for their very especial duty, than these men of the Veteran Corps of Artillery, S. N. Y., and the Ninth Coast Artillery Corps of the New York Guard. It was my good fortune to inherit this command from Colonel Delafield and to "carry on" with it. As I think of the results obtained, acknowledged not only by our own associates, but by all those who knew the Ninth, I am more and more thrilled by the remarkable team work of the organization. Every officer and man was eager to do his best and to contribute his effort to the making of the regiment. Its morale, its

Digitized by Google

esprit de corps, its discipline and efficiency were due to team work. I do not believe there existed anywhere a better coordinated, more willing and enthusiastic, more studious and earnest, and more sympathetic group than that which composed the Ninth Coast Artillery Corps, the history of which for more than two years of the World War is contained within the following pages.

The history, no doubt, has its shortcomings. Many members of the organization may criticize it; but for many more it will hold pleasure and interest because of its reminder of those more personal incidents which stir the heart. Each one of us has some personal memories of the many episodes and facts only just touched upon here.

The historian has done well, and every one of us should be grateful to Lieutenant Alexander R. Thompson, New York Guard, Retired, that genial, hardworking and effective Sergeant of the early days, the historian of the organization.

The emergency called for unusual methods. When, as the twelve provisional batteries of the Veteran Corps of Artillery, State of New York, we were anxious to qualify as Anti-Aircraft Artillery, it became necessary to apply to the Federal authorities for equipment and opportunity for instruction. With the consent of the State military authorities, we were permitted to operate outside the military channel and communicate direct with Washington. This enabled us to act quickly and get results.

It gives us great pleasure to take this opportunity to thank our friends who interested themselves in the undertaking, especially those able officers of the Army, Navy and Marine Corps who contributed so willingly of their advice and assistance, even while their own time was so filled with arduous duties in preparation for war. The greatest credit is due Major General Leonard Wood for his foresight in giving encouragement and approval to the whole plan. His successor commanding the Department of the East, Major General J. Franklin Bell, continued this support for the Corps, frequently gave his advice and attention to the details of the Organization and its military problems, and obtained for it

Digitized by Google

from the War College the documents relating to anti-aircraft artillery which were of the greatest value.

One of those who stood ready at all times was Captain Noble E. Irwin, United States Navy, later commanding the U. S. S. *Oklahoma,* then chief of aviation of the Navy. One of the many things he did was to furnish the writer with a report on aviation and anti-aircraft defense on the very day of its official delivery into his hands by Captain, now Rear-Admiral Joseph L. Jayne, U. S. N., who had just arrived from the Naval Air Station at Pensacola, Florida, of which he had charge. Of course, all information furnished us by anybody was supplied with the full approval and consent of the Secretaries of War and of the Navy, and generally upon recommendation of the Chief of Staff of the Army or Chief of Naval Operations for the Navy and was held confidential. Admiral William S. Benson, then Chief of Naval Operations of the Navy, was also most willing to approve and to help. He even consented to the loan by the Navy Department of some one pounders for instruction and drill. But the necessity for arming scout boats, merchant marine and various other craft was found to demand anything that could fire a shot, so that the offer made to us had to be withdrawn.

Rear-Admiral Nathaniel R. Usher, U. S. N., then Commandant of the New York Navy Yard, aided in many ways, especially in giving us an opportunity to advise with him and to study the new anti-aircraft guns of the Navy, and Captain John D. McDonald, then commanding the U. S. S. *Arizona,* now Rear-Admiral and Commandant of the New York Navy Yard, placed the anti-aircraft guns just installed on the *Arizona* at our disposal and detailed gunners to demonstrate and instruct us in their use. Rear-Admiral Charles J. Badger, President of the General Board of the Navy, stood by with kindly advice and directions as to both personnel and materiel and evidenced a very sympathetic interest. Rear-Admiral Ralph Earle, U. S. N., Chief of Ordnance of the Navy, advised and helped in every way possible. While the material results we were able to accomplish seemed small, it was in great part due to

Digitized by Google

the lack of preparedness on the part of the United States Government and to the necessity for their using everything that could be used for the hurried defense of Government vessels, plants and properties. There was very little left for an organization such as ours. Nevertheless these officers, as well as those officers of the Army hereafter mentioned, were very helpful in their advice and encouragement and moral support, even if it were impossible for them to do more.

We wish to thank Major-General George Barnett, then Commandant of the Marine Corps, and the members of his Staff for advice and aid in connection with machine gun practise, especially as to the Lewis gun which the Marine Corps had adopted. We hold in grateful remembrance gallant Major Edward B. Cole, U. S. Marine Corps who permitted us to copy the machine gun drill and instructions which he had prepared after two years of special study and training. Major Cole took the first Machine Gun Battalion abroad. It was equipped with Lewis machine guns mounted upon the Marine Corps Cygnet hand truck. Their equipment was similar to that which we had purchased for ourselves, except that their Lewis guns were of U. S. calibre while ours were British .303. Cole was killed during a machine gun attack while trying to save his men from the disastrous effects of a hand grenade which the Huns had hurled among them. He picked the grenade up to throw it back, and it exploded just before leaving his hand. We must not forget Major John J. Dooley, U. S. M. C., head of the machine gun school of the United States Marine Corps at Utica, New York. He furnished us with opportunities for instruction, several of our officers and men attended his school, and Major Dooley kept us up to date on machine gun data, furnishing us with instruction books and "dope" sheets. Lieutenant-Colonel William C. Harllee, U. S. M. C. also was generous in the opportunities given for rifle practice on the Navy Ranges, and while he was stationed at Caldwell, New Jersey, we operated very closely with him. Several of our officers were detailed on active duty at

Digitized by Google

the range to learn the game and become proficient in rifle and pistol practise and its instruction, and in range operation.

The War Department and the United States Army cooperated with us in a very remarkable degree in ways which, as I contemplate them now, seem almost beyond belief, especially when we think how busy every officer was at that time, doing the work of many, and straining every effort to get the country prepared. One of the earliest to help us, beside those specifically mentioned in the history, was Brigadier-General William A. Mann, then Chief of the Militia Bureau. We needed rifles badly. We had been in close consultation with Major-General Hugh L. Scott, U. S. A., then Chief of the General Staff of the Army, and with Major-General William Crozier, Chief of the Bureau of Ordnance, as to the possibility of obtaining rifles. General Mann was coming to New York to address the National Guard Officers' Convention in the 71st Regiment Armory. General Scott telegraphed me to meet him with Colonel Delafield, and we had a long conference, the result of which was the organization of the 1790 Rifle Club almost over night. This enabled us ultimately to purchase the Krag rifles with which we were armed. Colonel, now Brigadier-General Edwin B. Babbitt, then Assistant to General Crozier, consulted with us, and I suspect that it was through his good offices and that of Major, now Colonel John H. Rice, that the Chief of Ordnance allowed us to have some blue prints of guns and mounts. Permission was given to order a 3-inch anti-aircraft gun mount from the Bethlehem Steel Company to be made along with the Government order. General Scott, as Chief of the General Staff, was probably the deciding factor that enabled us to send the Commission of three officers overseas and helped very materially to straighten out some diplomatic problems which had arisen after the three men had sailed. Brigadier-General Henry P. McCain, then Adjutant-General of the Army, facilitated this mission in every way possible.

But our friends were not entirely within the Military. The Hon. Frank L. Polk, and the Hon. William Phillips, of the State Depart-

Digitized by Google

ment, were of tremendous help in sending the mission over and in expediting passports and papers. This military mission of three Militia officers sent abroad under the auspices of the War Department, expedited by the State Department, and facilitated by the British and French Embassies is, to my mind, one of the startling and surprising accomplishments of the War. On arrival abroad, they cooperated at once with the officers of the United States Army who had arrived there only a very short time before and assisted in the establishment of the great Anti-aircraft School at Arnouville. In this connection we wish to express our appreciation of the courtesy shown and the assistance rendered by Captains G. F. Humbert and Glenn P. Anderson of the U. S. Coast Artillery who did everything in their power to forward the work of the Commission. Grateful acknowledgment is also due to Commandant Pachezey and his officers. One of the Commission was probably the first officer in American uniform to be gassed. They brought back with them for the use of the War Department many confidential reports and circulars of information issued by the British and French Governments which the United States did not then have, and they finally made a detailed report to the War Department which was not only approved and accepted, but became a part of the instruction at the Army Artillery School at Fort Monroe. While these men went abroad as members of the Veteran Corps of Artillery, State of New York, they were, shortly after their arrival, transferred by cable to the Ninth Coast Artillery Corps, New York Guard, and operated as such. I have heard from many sources how nearly impossible it would have been for this mission to accomplish what it did had it not been for the diplomacy and resourcefulness of Lieutenant Cabot Ward, who was later Lieutenant-Colonel, United States Army and a member of the General Staff of the American Expeditionary Force. He has just been officially rated as one of three hundred officers of the United States Army qualified to serve on the General Staff without further schooling. Cabot Ward is still in Paris, and is Vice-President of the Paris Post of the American Legion. I men-

Digitized by Google

tion him specifically because of the wonderfully fine work he has performed.

We also received great assistance from the British Ambassador, Sir Cecil Arthur Spring-Rice, and his Naval Attaché, Capt. G. Gaunt, R. N., both of whom took an active interest in what we hoped to accomplish, and forwarded special messages respecting the Mission by post and cable to England.

Last and by no means least, we shall be ever grateful to the Ambassador of France, Mr. Jules J. Jusserand, Dean of the Diplomatic Corps and beloved by American and Frenchman everywhere, for it was he who facilitated by personal cable messages the entry of our military mission into France, and his recommendations furthered its work materially. Well do I remember the day I took Cabot Ward to see him just previous to the Commission's departure, and how quickly His Excellency saw the value of our mission, gave it his approval, and promised every assistance which he afterwards most generously fulfilled. The Lieutenant and the Ambassador had an extended conversation in French in which they no doubt covered much ground of advantage to the mission which helped wonderfully when the Lieutenant arrived in France.

If I have failed to mention anybody, I hope he will not take it amiss and will accept the thanks and appreciation of the officers and men of the Ninth Coast Artillery Corps, New York Guard, even as we express it to those we have mentioned by name.

This history has been published by the Memorial and Property Committee of the Ninth Coast Artillery Corps composed of Colonel George W. Burleigh, Chairman, Lieutenant-Colonel Edward C. Delafield, Lieutenant-Colonel Howard Thayer Kingsbury and Captain Louis Hays Dos Passos.

The material for this history was gathered and compiled by Lieutenant Alexander R. Thompson, who wrote a large part of the manuscript and who compiled the lists of donors to the Special Fund; of the officers and men of the Provisional Batteries, V. C. A., and of the Ninth Coast Artillery Corps. Parts of the manuscript were contributed by Lieutenant Colonels Edward C. Delafield,

Digitized by Google

Francis Russell Stoddard, Jr.; Major Robert H. Wilder; Captains Frank E. Davidson, Barrett Putnam Smith, Louis Watjen and J. G. Phelps Stokes; Sergeant James H. Pinckney and Private George H. Ford. Our thanks are due to them and to the many officers and men who helped the historian.

To this Committee certain moneys and property were transferred by unanimous resolution of the Officers' Association of the Ninth Coast Defense Command in the presence and with the approval of Colonel John J. Byrne, now commanding that Regiment, who succeeded the writer and who had commanded the old Ninth for many years previous to its going forth into the World War and was its War Commander in the United States service. The property referred to was part of that transferred to the Officers' Association of the Ninth Coast Artillery Corps by Colonel John Ross Delafield, referred to herein, and the money was part of that received from the State through its purchase of some of the property, the balance of the money having been left in the Treasury of the Officers' Association of the Ninth for its use. A copy of the resolution of transfer is published in the appendix of the history, so that the records of the organization may be complete.

I must again express what I have so often said before, that we appreciated deeply the kindly interest, the willing help and the friendly advice of so many of the old National Guardsmen of the State who evinced a real interest in the regiment and in our progress.

I am afraid I have taken more space for this foreword than was allotted or expected by the editor or the historian, but I hope the sincerity of my purpose and the merits of the subject will at least condone it. In closing, I wish on behalf of every member of the Ninth to thank every other member for his loyalty to one another and to the organization. This formed the real basis of the team work, without which the Ninth Coast Artillery Corps of the New York Guard could not have been the great and efficient regiment it was.

Digitized by Google

FIRST BATTALION, 9TH C. A. C., IN HOLLOW SQUARE.

Digitized by Google

INTRODUCTION

BY THE HISTORIAN

WE have been asked by comrades and associates to write and compile this book of the Minute Men of '17, and have undertaken the task with enthusiasm, for we are convinced that the work done in defense of the State and the Nation by the officers and men of the Ninth Coast Artillery, N. Y. G., and the Field, Staff and Provisional Batteries of the Veteran Corps of Artillery should be known. This will be a story of practical patriotism. We will show how earnest men, exempt from military duty, moved by love of country, developed a small ancient company "of four sections of eight or ten men each" into a large well-drilled corps of three full battalions, armed and equipped without expense to the government; how in an emergency, they showed themselves to be capable and efficient; how they were transferred to our grand historic regiment the Ninth New York; how they worked and made play of work. If we do our work right the story will prove to those who come after us that a duty well done is a joy forever. But before we begin our history we want to impress some things on the minds of the readers.

One of these is the robust patriotism of the people of New York; they did their duty splendidly, enthusiastically, all sorts and conditions of men and women, yet those in authority knew of hidden and sinister powers of darkness and treason ready and anxious to strike a blow against our country. The presence, not only in the City, but all over the State, of the armed and uniformed units of the New York Guard was a strong force for the preservation of law and order and a strong deterrent to the lawless and the enemies in our midst. Give due credit then to the officers and men who made sacrifices of time and money, who submitted cheerfully to privations and inconvenience in their service in the military forces of the State, for to them you owe your freedom from riots and manifestations of disloyalty in the critical days of 1917-1918.

Digitized by Google

CHAPTER ONE

THE CALL TO ARMS

THE Veteran Corps of Artillery is an ancient unit in the military forces of the State of New York. It is one of the most interesting groups of its kind in the country, and has a long record of service. It was first organized by officers and soldiers who had served in the War of the Revolution, who joined together after the war to serve in the defense of New York City, and during the War of 1812 it saw service in the forts in New York harbor.

Many years afterwards the Corps was consolidated with the Society of the War of 1812, which had been founded in 1826 by officers who had served in that war. In 1892 the Society was incorporated under Chapter 267 of the laws of 1875 of the State of New York with the corporate name of "The Society of the War of 1812." At this time its rules were again changed, admitting descendants of original members and men who served in 1812. Various acts of the legislature in relation to it were passed after this incorporation. At the beginning of the World War, it was generally known as the Veteran Corps of Artillery constituting the Military Society of the War of 1812.

There were over two hundred hereditary members of the Society and Corps descended from members of the Corps or from men who had served in the War of 1812. There were also a number of limited members, termed "Associates." These were descended from Revolutionary officers or soldiers, and were members of the Artillery Service Detachment only. The hereditary members could join the Detachment without further enlistment. The active military part of the Corps and Society was the Artillery Service Detachment, which was uniformed and drilled. We cannot give a more graphic and accurate account of the development of the Detachment and its condition in December, 1916, than that contained in

Digitized by Google

the following letter of Major Bryce Metcalf, at this writing Vice-Commandant of the Corps:

"New York, October 3, 1917.

Mr. George W. Burleigh,
52 Wall Street,
New York, N. Y.
My dear Burleigh:

Replying to your inquiry in regard to my service in the Veteran Corps of Artillery, would say that I became active in the organization in the fall of 1899. At that time, we had drills twice a month and the attendance was quite slim, generally around from twelve to fourteen. From then until the fall of 1916, there was a gradual growth, slow but sure; and at the latter time mentioned, we had gotten up to the point where we had drills every week and I was Senior Line Lieutenant, in fact, next in command to Charlie Warren, who was our instructor, and we were then drilling as a Gatling Gun Battery with four sections of from eight to ten men in each section.

At that time, owing to my health, I asked for a leave of absence which was granted, returning to active duty in May of this year, when I found the Corps greatly enlarged, and was assigned to the First Battery, retaining my old rank.

Sincerely yours,
(Signed) Bryce Metcalf."

There were in all, ten commissioned officers, seventeen non-coms and twenty-four privates, designated as Cannoneers. They had four old Gatling guns, .50 calibre. Both the Society and Detachment were fine bodies of men; the latter furnished an unusually large number of officers to the Nation and the State during the war.

The Adjutant-General of the State was the Inspector-General. The Colonel-Commandant was the late Brevet Major-General Asa Bird Gardiner, who had been an officer in the Civil War, a distinguished Judge-Advocate in the Regular Army and a learned professor in the United States Military Academy, but who at this time was precluded from performing active duty by reason of his advanced age, he then being in his seventy-eighth year.

The immediate command of the Detachment, by action of the Council of Administration, was vested in the Vice-Commandant, Lieutenant-Colonel John Ross Delafield, who had the sole power of issuing Detachment orders, and who was responsible for the training

Digitized by Google

of the officers and men. The general charge and management of the affairs of the corporation were in the Council of Administration, a body of sixteen members of the Society, four of whom were elected each year. The Commandant was ex-officio the presiding officer of the Council. The Adjutant was its Secretary. The officers of the Detachment were elected by the Council, and after passing an examination before the Board of Officers, were commissioned by the Governor.

With the outbreak of the World War the men of the Veteran Corps were faced with the problem which troubled many Americans unable, through age or other reasons, to fling themselves at once into active service. The men of the Corps felt that not only their personal inclinations but the traditions of the organization demanded of them that they serve their country in some definite military capacity. As one of them has put it, "We in whose veins ran the blood of the soldiers who served under Washington and Scott could not sit comfortably at home with the portraits of those grim old warriors watching us from the walls." Having decided that the Corps must take part in the War as a unit and in some effective way, what could be more appropriate than to follow the traditions of the past and to organize in some specific manner for the defense of New York City?

After careful study of the problem it became evident that there were but two ways in which New York, thousands of miles from the scene of the conflict, could be threatened, from within by riots and violence on the part of disloyal residents or from without by enemy aircraft. Any other possible contingency had already been cared for by the Army and Navy. One or both of these dangers were obviously the field for the activities of the Veteran Corps.

The chance that serious damage could be inflicted by the enemy was not great. But on the other hand it was quite possible that Germany might send one or more bombing planes across the Atlantic, a by no means impossible feat. And even though the damage were slight, the effect on the morale of the American people would have

Digitized by Google

been very serious indeed. It must not be forgotten that those who sympathized with Germany were busy night and day in fostering a sentiment to keep our men on this side of the water to defend our shores. Indeed it was known in the War Department that Germany actually had elaborate plans for the bombing of our coast cities. While it would have been impossible to have flown across the Atlantic, bombed the city and returned, they had a plan which would have been vastly more effective. A huge submarine designed to carry a number of bombing planes was actually under construction in Germany. It was planned that this vessel would lie off the coast, and send the aeroplanes to bomb the city. The planes would then return to the submarine at a predetermined point. Even one attack would have hindered the Army enormously in its attempt to get as many men as possible to the scene of action in record time. The men of the Corps felt that here was a duty and a service which was needed and which they might be able to perform.

Edward C. Delafield, James C. McGuire, Herman F. Stone, George W. Burleigh, William L. Sayers, Thatcher T. P. Luquer and John Ross Delafield were actively engaged in investigating the possibility of the Detachment's being turned into anti-aircraft artillery. Edward C. Delafield and Herman F. Stone visited the forts at Sandy Hook, and, having proper credentials, were given every facility to investigate the work done there in anti-aircraft defense. John Ross Delafield, Thatcher T. P. Luquer and William L. Sayers with Mr. Burleigh visited the Navy Yard. They saw Admiral Usher and were turned over to officers of the battleship *Arizona,* who gave them much valuable information as to the new Navy anti-aircraft defense, showing them the guns and their operation.

As plans were formulated, they were submitted to the military authorities at Albany, at Governors Island and at Washington. For instance, on December 29, 1916, the plans for the reorganization of the Corps were submitted by Colonel Delafield to General Leonard Wood, then stationed on Governors Island in command of the Department of the East. General Wood gave valuable advice and counsel, and was especially appreciative of the plan to

Digitized by Google

furnish equipment. But for his encouragement and approval the creation and organization of this Corps would never have been undertaken, and the accomplishments this book is written to record would never have taken place. The following letter serves to indicate only in a formal way the support received from him and his successor commanding the Eastern Department.

HEADQUARTERS, EASTERN DEPARTMENT,
Governors Island, N. Y.

February 8, 1917.

My dear Colonel:

Referring to our recent correspondence, I have considered the matter of your organizing the Veteran Corps of Artillery for anti-aircraft gun service, and indorse the same as a means for increasing greatly the present usefulness of the Corps.

Wishing you success in your patriotic efforts, I am,

Yours very sincerely,

LEONARD WOOD.

Colonel John Ross Delafield,
Veteran Corps of Artillery,
New York City.

Mr. Burleigh laid these plans before General Hugh L. Scott, Chief of the General Staff of the Army, and before Admiral Benson, Chief of Operations of the Navy. After consultation with the authorities, the Council of Administration decided that the Detachment should be recruited and trained for anti-aircraft defense. This was strictly in accordance with the traditions of the Corps, for in 1812 the Veteran Corps of Artillery had been in active service in the forts in the harbor.

The Corps had a fine body of men, deeply imbued with patriotism, men of high character, and of good position in the social, business and professional world, very largely men beyond the military age, or who, by reason of slight physical defects, or on account of dependent families or business responsibilities, were unable to serve in the more active forces.

Training for anti-aircraft work was to begin with infantry drill as a foundation for discipline. It was felt that this training would also prove useful when the Corps extended its activities to other

Digitized by Google

fields, especially the defense of the city against violence, insurrection and mob rule.

The following orders had been issued, placing John Ross Delafield in command, and under his direction the work proceeded.

HEADQUARTERS, VETERAN CORPS OF ARTILLERY

of the

STATE OF NEW YORK

1790-1916

Armory
Park Avenue and 34th Street
Orders New York, December 9, 1916,
No. 4

1. Announcement is made of the due appointment, pursuant to law, of John Ross Delafield of the Veteran Corps of Artillery, S. N. Y. to be Vice-Commandant of the same with the rank of Lieutenant-Colonel in the Military forces of the State, to fill a statutory vacancy.

* * * III. Lieutenant-Colonel John Ross Delafield, Veteran Corps of Artillery, S. N. Y., in addition to his other duties, will assume charge of the Artillery Service Detachment of this Corps, with special reference to its efficiency and preparedness for such military duty as it may by law, in an emergency, be required to perform. * * *

V. All orders for local purposes of the Artillery Service Detachment, as a military unit, will be numerically designated "Detachment Orders" and issued by the ranking officer in charge of the Detachment. * * *

Asa Bird Gardiner,
Commandant.

Official:
Chandler Smith,
First Lieutenant, Paymaster.

Digitized by Google

Chapter Two

FILLING THE RANKS

HAVING determined to develop the Detachment into anti-aircraft artillery, the first problem to solve was that of recruiting. Could enough men be found qualified for such work without in any way interfering with the recruiting for the National Guard and the Army and Navy? The traditional duty of defense of the City appealed to the members. They knew that the original Corps was composed of men who from age or their services in the War of the Revolution were exempt from military duty, so they proposed to follow in the footsteps of their ancestors, and from men fit for this duty, but disqualified for service in the Army and Navy, to build up a force of earnest, trained, well-equipped, loyal Americans to be used in the defense of their home city.

The first efforts in recruiting were among members of patriotic hereditary societies. Mr. Robert Olyphant, president of the Sons of the Revolution, and Mr. Louis Annin Ames, president of the Sons of the American Revolution, and Miss Julia Chester Wells of the Daughters of the Cincinnati, and others gave valuable help, but it was soon found that there must be a more extended field. A careful examination of the statutes affecting the Society and Corps revealed the following in Chapter 328, Laws of 1904:

> "The said Council may also, from time to time, as it may deem desirable, engage and employ such persons as may be authorized or required for the business or efficiency of said organization who shall, while thus attached thereto, be subject to the regulations and laws governing the same. * * *"

At the customary meeting of the Society and Corps held on February 22, 1917, the Council of Administration was duly authorized by resolution to make enlistments under this law of men of good moral character, not qualified for hereditary membership, who

Digitized by Google

were in sound health, but who were not liable, from age, physical condition or other reason, for more active duty in the Army or Navy.

On March 27, by authority of the Council of Administration, the Detachment was divided into batteries. Before that time it had consisted of two platoons of two sections each; now for the first time in its history it was "a Corps of Artillery of Artillery Companies." ([N] v. Letter from Robert Harpur, Secretary, pp. 1-2, Roster & Objects, Artillery Service Detachment, etc., 1917.) The first company or battery units organized on this date were known as A and B, later as First and Second Batteries, and were officered as follows: A—Captain: Edward C. Delafield; First Lieutenant: Clarence H. Eagle; Second Lieutenant: Louis Hays Dos Passos. B—Captain: Francis Russell Stoddard, Jr.; First Lieutenant: Thatcher T. P. Luquer; Second Lieutenant: William L. Hodges.

For many years the Detachment, by the kindness of the Commanding Officers of the Seventy-First Infantry, N. G. N. Y. and of the First Signal Corps, was permitted the use of a room in the tower of the Armory at 33rd and 34th Streets and Park Avenue, and was allowed a limited use of the armory floor for drill purposes. The formation of the two provisional batteries on March 27 had a marked effect not only on the men themselves, their drill and spirit, but in the general feeling. They realized that they were entering on a period of active usefulness. Regular drills were held on Wednesday afternoons, and soon voluntary ones on Monday and Friday. The attendance at drills was most excellent, very frequently reaching the 100% mark. All this time the systematic work of stimulating recruiting was going on under the direction of the Vice-Commandant. The opening of the door to general recruiting, by the action of the Society and its Council of Administration, had solved the problem. It now only required hard, systematic work. Clubs, societies, associations were circularized; members of these various organizations who were interested in the Detachment arranged meetings which were addressed by the officers; a certain amount of publicity was given by the press, but the

Digitized by Google

great work was done by the men themselves in and among their friends and associates. The armory was open to the public and desirable men were urged to come in and watch the drill. They came, they watched and many enlisted.

It was to the keen observer, the thoughful citizen, a very inspiring sight—these companies of middle-aged, substantial, professional and business men being drilled by trained officers and non-coms. The bank president may have been a captain or he may have been a private in the awkward squad; that depended entirely on his military ability, skill and knowledge. All applications for enlistment required the endorsement of two officers or men in the detachment, and were then passed on by a membership committee, and finally, on its recommendation, acted upon by the Council of Administration.

In the application for enrollment in the Detachment, there was a promise to uniform, to perform the duties required by law, to obey the orders of the officers and to be subject to the regulations and laws, etc., statements of date, place of birth, business, with business and home address, and the endorsement of proposer and seconder. Every drill afternoon desirable men appeared, were greeted by a recruiting squad, and when one of them wanted to join he almost always found men there who were glad to endorse him and whose endorsements he was glad to have.

Great care was taken to select men of ability, good character and sound health. The painstaking and careful investigations of the officers and men on these recruiting and membership committees were shown by the high business and social standing, the personal ability and military morale of the rank and file of the Detachment, and when the test came, the acid test of duty and service, our officers and men made good.

In the work of the Detachment through the summer of 1917 one of the most impressive features was the work of men beyond military age. Mr. Francis G. Lloyd, Mr. Thomas R. Murray, Dr. John W. Brannan, Mr. Charles Bellows, Senator Howard R. Bayne and some others were over sixty. Mr. Murray had served

Digitized by Google

during the Civil War. These elderly men, with all the vim and fire of youth, did their duty and were an example and stimulus to the younger men. In all there were thirty-two men over sixty years of age in the Detachment.

The historian recalls with great pleasure that boiling hot summer's day when four elderly gentlemen in uniform stood before the Board of Officers, V. C. A., to take their examination for Sergeant—Corwine, Dater, Spencer, Thompson—their combined ages verging on two centuries and a half—yet they were as active and as earnest, as intense in loyalty and devotion to duty, as any other men, officers or privates.

The general scheme of anti-aircraft and other defense of New York City justified, and in certain aspects required, the organization of units in various parts of the City and its environs. Very early in the movement, hereditary members of the Society and Corps living on Staten Island urged the organization of a battery in that locality. Men living there became actively interested, and early in April the Third Battery was organized, and at the same time a movement was commenced for the enlistment of a battery in Brooklyn. This battery became the Fifth, and was very fortunate in having Louis J. Praeger, later Colonel commanding the Twenty-Third Regiment of Infantry New York Guard, a very able and experienced officer, as its Captain. The surplus of men in Brooklyn desiring enlistment, above the required strength, was formed into an additional battery known as the Eleventh. Meanwhile the Fourth and Sixth Batteries were organized in the Borough of Manhattan.

As there was no formal muster-in required by the special statutes affecting the Artillery Service Detachment or its regulations, it is impossible to give exact dates of the organization of each battery. The First and Second were organized March 27; the Third and Fourth in April; the Fifth, Sixth, and Seventh in May; the Eighth and Ninth early in July; the Tenth, Eleventh and Twelfth late in July.

Thus the small, select, rather ornamental unit of four sections,

Digitized by Google

in its antiquated full-dress uniform, had been developed into a large body of well-armed, well-trained citizen soldiery, who in the sombre, olive drab regulation service uniforms gave evidence of their readiness for action.

But it was not all plain sailing. There were many obstacles to be overcome, not the least of which arose from the inartistic, ineptly drawn special statutes which affected not only the Detachment but also the Society and Corps. Just as everything was going smoothly, recruiting active, new batteries being organized, new officers selected, examined and commissioned, efficient non-coms. chosen and warranted, like a streak of lightning from a clear sky came the inquiry from higher authority; "By what right do you do this?" Section 13, Chapter 350, Laws of 1907, provides: "and the officers or grades in said organization shall continue to be those recognized or provided by law when said Corps was instituted and no others." Our attention was pertinently called to the fact that the militia laws of 1786 limited the Artillery forces of the State to one regiment consisting of four companies, commanded by a Lieutenant-Colonel, with four Captains, four Captain-Lieutenants and four Lieutenants, and that this clause in the law of 1907 had been held by an eminent Judge-Advocate-General to limit us to just such an organization. If this ruling was sustained our entire scheme was blocked. From his home in the country our learned Commandant wrote a long, brilliant and exceedingly caustic brief. The Vice-Commandant and Major Stoddard drew up and transmitted a remarkably fine, learned and convincing argument. A private produced a printed list of the officers of the Corps of Artillery of the Regular Army formed in 1794, so annotated by an ancestor of his who was an officer in that Corps as to show clearly that in 1794 an American Corps of Artillery consisted of four battalions of four companies each, and was officered by a Lieutenant-Colonel, four Majors, sixteen Captains and thirty-two Lieutenants. The Corps was thus justified in its stand and the work proceeded.

Early in 1917 the legislature gave the Governor power to accept enlistments from the reserve militia. The Adjutant-General ruled

Digitized by Google

DETACHMENT OF V. C. A. IN FULL DRESS UNIFORM ACTING AS GUARD OF HONOR IN THE CITY HALL, N. Y., AT THE RECEPTION OF THE FRENCH WAR COMMISSION.

Digitized by Google

COLOR GUARD, V. C. A., ON DUTY IN THE CITY HALL, N. Y., AT THE RECEPTION OF THE FRENCH WAR COMMISSION.

Digitized by Google

that this applied to the enlistments in the Detachment, and formally approved the same. The claim had frequently been made that the Veteran Corps of Artillery was part of the Active Militia ([N] v. *World Almanac* 1916, p. 544—"the Corps with the National Guard form part of the Active Militia of the State.")

This question came before the courts during the summer of 1917 in a civil action. Both at Special Term and in the Appellate Division, the rule was laid down that it was not part of the Active Militia. These decisions and the opinions sustaining them are found in 100 Misc. Reports 622. 185 App. Div. Reports 477.

The Corps had not more than started on its career as an anti-aircraft unit and had no more than succeeded in recruiting its personnel to sufficient strength, than it was called upon for its first public duty under Colonel Delafield's command. The British and French War Commissions who, as every one will remember, arrived in this country in May, 1917, were to be received with suitable ceremonies by the City of New York. There was a great deal of curiosity and enthusiasm everywhere, and it was exceedingly important that an impressive military unit be stationed at the City Hall and elsewhere to show these visiting statesmen, not only that we welcomed them cordially, but that we did so with due pomp. What could be more appropriate than that the Veteran Corps, part of it arrayed in the full dress uniform of the period of 1812, should be one of the units selected for this honor. At the suggestion of Lieutenant Burleigh, who was secretary of the Committee of Citizens appointed by Mayor Mitchel to welcome the French and British War Commissions, the Detachment was asked to participate in the welcome and was formally invited to act as a guard of honor for the ceremonies at the City Hall in honor of the French Commission, at the head of which was Monsieur Viviani, a former Premier of France, and which had for one of its members the war hero, Marshal Joffre; and also in honor of the British Commission with Mr. Arthur J. Balfour at its head.

As all know who were present or who read of the event in the daily press, the occasion was one of great brilliance and fine feeling.

Digitized by Google

The City greeted these distinguished guests with the greatest enthusiasm. And to all appearances, every man in the great crowd gathered there was cheering the heroes of our brave Allies with his whole heart. After the ceremony the Detachment was marched back to the Armory and dismissed.

A few days later they participated in the reception of the British Commission. A large number of the officers of the Detachment attended the banquet given to the visiting statesmen and soldiers and were much encouraged by the favorable comment and friendly and appreciative criticism made by numerous members of the National Guard and Regular Army officers.

Shortly after these first public appearances, the Grand Marshal of the Memorial Day ceremonies extended a cordial invitation to participate in the Memorial Day Parade. The Corps was requested to furnish for the reviewing stand a guard of honor in full dress uniform, while the Detachment, in service uniform, was requested to act as immediate escort to the Posts of the Grand Army of the Republic. The *Army and Navy Journal* of June 2, 1917 said, "The Veteran Corps of Artillery on this occasion also deserves special mention for a new departure. It not only paraded a platoon as a guard of honor at the reviewing stand but it paraded twelve companies in olive drab uniform under Lieut. Col. J. R. Delafield, and it was equipped with a Lewis machine gun. This command is being officially trained for anti-aircraft work, and has been receiving large additions to its ranks, among whom are many well-known citizens."

Later on that day a detail was sent to Mount Victory, in the cemetery where lie buried many of the members who served during the Revolution and the War of 1812, where brief and appropriate ceremonies showed the respect of this generation for the old soldiers who had founded the Society and Corps.

Digitized by Google

Chapter Three

ARMS AND EQUIPMENT

As soon as recruiting had begun and it had been determined that the Detachment should be trained in anti-aircraft defense, two matters of great consequence came up for consideration—arms, and the money with which to buy them. The War Department at this time was in the process of organization for the great task of prosecuting the war on a scale for which it was not at that time equipped. Other matters of more immediate importance had to be attended to before the needs of the Veteran Corps could be met. It therefore devolved upon the officers to find means of securing arms and ammunition without obtaining them from either Washington or Albany.

It had been decided that before drilling as anti-aircraft troops it was necessary to drill as infantry. At that time it may be remembered anti-aircraft defense was entirely new in this country, but it was decided that infantry drill would train the men in the necessary team work and the rudiments of military life. It would then be easier to complete the training with special work in anti-aircraft drill and riot duty when the time came. For this work rifles were essential and for anti-aircraft drill at least one three-inch gun properly mounted; and also there must be an adequate supply of machine guns.

The War Department had an abundant supply of Krags, an excellent weapon for this use. The Government determined not to use them for the national armies but, unfortunately, laws had been passed by the Congress controlling the disposition of these, which made it unlawful to issue them to a militia command like ours. To be sure they could be sold to a Turnverein or Liederkranz formed into a rifle Club, but not to a unit in the Reserve Militia anxious to serve. That problem was quickly solved, and the 1790 Rifle Club was duly and legally organized, and all proper and legitimate steps were taken to procure for this Rifle Club an abundant supply of Krags and ball cartridges. In all, over six hundred

Digitized by Google

rifles were obtained. Meanwhile, by patient watching on the part of some of our officers, whose relations with manufacturers were intimate, there came a time when twenty-four Lewis machine guns were available. They were chambered for British ammunition, but our officers reasoned with entire correctness that the pro-anything, anti-American insurrectionist and incipient rioter, dreaded death with that sort of ammunition just as much as if it had been of the United States regulation.

These guns were immediately purchased together with 50,000 rounds of ammunition. Their presence in the City of New York during the war, in the hands of well-drilled, well-trained, loyal Americans, was a great deterrent against lawlessness.

The heavier artillery must be furnished by the Government when the actual defense was turned over to the Corps, but for the purpose of training, permission was given by the War Department for the manufacture of a dummy mount for a regulation 3-inch anti-aircraft gun, and a contract was made with the Bethlehem Steel Company for the construction of this.

Now, all this required money. As the necessity for funds in respectable amounts arose, measures were immediately taken to raise whatever was needed. A committee composed of Major James C. McGuire and Captain (later Colonel) Thatcher T. P. Luquer was appointed, who made careful investigation into the probable cost of material. It was estimated that it would require one hundred thousand dollars. *See Appendix, p.* 395.

A few members got together and subscribed a thousand dollars each, and then a committee to raise further funds was appointed. Mr. (later Captain United States Army) Guy Van Amringe and Mr. William E. Harmon were in charge of this work. One notable contribution was made through Mrs. William C. Beecher of Brooklyn of $750 for a machine-gun to be used in that Borough. This gun was subsequently given, at Mrs. Beecher's request, to the Machine-Gun Company of the 23rd Infantry, N. Y. G. Mrs. John Markle and Miss Julia Pierrepont each contributed funds for one machine gun. After many general efforts had been made, at Mr.

Digitized by Google

Harmon's suggestion, a systematic canvass of the officers and men of the various batteries was commenced. Each man was called upon to furnish ten names of possible contributors. The returns were all made to McLain-Hadden-Simpers Co., who had general charge of the work. A large bulletin was erected in the Armory, and the returns of squads, batteries and battalions were constantly posted. In all $23,635.00 was raised. This fund was expended partly in the purchase of arms and ammunition, partly for the expenses of training, partly to furnish necessary supplies to our men while on active service guarding the water supply, and partly for the necessary expenses of raising the fund. There were no payments from it of compensation or pay to officers or men.

All this expenditure for so necessary and useful a purpose would have been impossible had not a group of patriotic citizens come forward and contributed generously to the purchase of supplies. In spite of all the calls made by patriotic and philanthropic societies upon the resources of those who had the welfare of their country at heart, they added another burden to their many responsibilities and contributed toward the purchase of the equipment.

On October 8, 1917, the Provisional Batteries with Field and Staff were transferred by order of the Commander-in-Chief to the Ninth Coast Artillery Corps, New York Guard. By order of the General in command of the First Brigade, Colonel Delafield was directed to assemble his men and to transfer them and all their equipment and property as soon as possible to the armory of the former Ninth Coast Defense Command at 125 West 14th Street, New York City, and there to hold such property subject to the order of the Commanding General of the First Brigade.*

Subsequently the council of Administration and the Board of Officers of the Veteran Corps of Artillery constituting the Society of the War of 1812, released all their right, title and interest, if any, in and to the special fund we have described in this chapter and in and to the property and equipment purchased thereby, by executing the release set forth in full in the appendix.

*See letter of General Dyer to Colonel Burleigh, quoted in full in the appendix.

Digitized by Google

Chapter Four

THE COMMISSION FOR STUDY ABROAD

WE have seen in a previous chapter that the Detachment had decided to undertake anti-aircraft defense of the City. Immediately after the decision was made, the officers, especially the Vice-Commandant, began to study the problem. They were met at once by the initial and apparently insurmountable obstacle of an almost total lack of information. Beyond the very general, always indefinite and frequently erroneous matter contained in the newspaper and magazine articles, and some preliminary study by the Navy and War Departments, there was no knowledge of the subject in this country. What could be done to find out the best methods of anti-aircraft defense?

It was finally decided that the only way to get this information and to lay out an adequate plan was to send a commission abroad to study the plan of the air defenses of London and of Paris where such defense had been developed, and where enemy aircraft were being turned back. It was hoped that there where warfare was in progress, necessary plans and information could be gathered which when changed to suit the geographical situation in New York would serve as a guide to the Veteran Corps.

The sending of these officers abroad was the result of long, patient and skillful work on the part of our officers, especially of Lieutenant-Colonel John Ross Delafield and Lieutenant George W. Burleigh. Lieutenant James C. McGuire, Sergeant Wm. L. Sayers, and others, who with the industry and thoroughness characteristic of the real New Yorker, tackled the problem. Upon a comparison and analysis of their various efforts and investigations, the conclusion was inevitable, that the only practical solution was the sending of a board of competent officers abroad to investigate the anti-aircraft defense in London and Paris, and at the front. From its inception this idea had the hearty approval and the

Digitized by Google

very active cooperation of the commander of the Department of the East.

It was an unique and hitherto unparalleled incident in the military history of the United States. These officers were sent by a unit in the reserve militia, with the approval not only of the Mayor of the City, the Governor and Adjutant-General of the State, but also with the warm commendation of such officers of the Regular Army as General J. Franklin Bell, commanding the Department of the East, General Kuhn, president of the War College, General Scott, Chief of the General Staff, with full credentials from the War and State Departments and from the Governor and Mayor and with strong recommendations to the American Generals in command in France and England. We cannot lay too much emphasis on General Bell's participation in this matter. The British and French ambassadors sent special messages to their respective countries regarding the sailing of the Mission and its objects and our own State Department cooperated in every way.

They were sent to study one of the new problems in the science of warfare—the correct solution of which was essential to the well-being of the coast cities of the United States.

The Corps was a unit in the Reserve Militia, ([N] v. Andrews vs. Gardiner. 185 App. Div. 477) recognized, if at all, in only a permissive way by the United States ([N] Section 63, National Defense Act). To obtain proper facilities for our officers abroad required powerful recommendations and full credentials from the War and State Departments. Every official in Washington was swamped with work. An innumerable number of commissioners were seeking credentials, all the way from those of great usefulness to those of great foolishness, and Lieutenant George W. Burleigh, then Adjutant, 1st Battalion of the Detachment, began a long series of consultations and negotiations which were ultimately successful. The officers in command at Governors Island, General Leonard Wood and General J. Franklin Bell and their staffs were helpful. Without the aid of General Bell, the plan might have failed. His great experience and wisdom were always at the serv-

Digitized by Google

ice of the Corps. Greatly interested in the plan, he rendered most valuable assistance, so that in a certain fair sense of the words the sending of these officers abroad was under his direction. On July 12th, 1917, Colonel Delafield was in General Bell's office when the General's telephone rang. The Colonel said, "Shall I leave the room, General?"

The General turned and said to him, "Colonel Delafield, I wish you to understand that many people come here over trifling matters and I will not see them; that I have given my aides special instructions to send you in when you come; that when my own officers are in the room with me, I go ahead with my business without regard to them; that I am treating you as I would one of my own officers. * * * Please remember, if any thing should happen, the papers relating to your matter are in my private file." General Bell had full knowledge of the aspirations and plans of the Corps. His opinion of the personnel of the Detachment is worth preserving.

"General Wood left behind him for me, strong commendation of Colonel Delafield, of his patriotism, enthusiasm, zeal and ability, * * * In his conversations with me, it has become plainly manifest that he is not only a man of rather exceptional zeal and ability, but that he has made a close study of the requirements of anti-aircraft defense. * * *

"Few, if any of the men composing the Veteran Corps of Artillery of the State of New York are of draft age. Many of them are even beyond the maximum age for military service, but are physically perfectly competent to do their share of this service. They are all of a high type of citizenship. Most of them are college graduates, and many have had ample previous military training and experience. All are highly patriotic, and their reliability in carrying to a successful conclusion any patriotic service they undertake is beyond question. They are not after 'loaves' or 'fishes' or compensation of any kind. Most of them are men of ample means. There would be a sufficient number of them to perform the service without any great or undue amount of hardship. Their pride and zeal is very exceptional." (From letter to General Kuhn of June 23rd, 1917.)

"I am acquainted with the character of the personnel belonging to this Corps. It is of the highest order of citizenship and patriotism. Nearly all its members are highly respected men of affairs, and standing in the community. A very great majority of them are above the maximum draft age, and some, though well preserved, are above 45 years of age.

Digitized by Google

"Their high order of education and intelligence renders them especially well qualified to perform the service they seek solely through patriotism." (From endorsement on letter to General Kuhn, President War College, July 12th, 1917.)

The War Department and the Navy Department furnished their confidential information; but by far the most useful documents were obtained by Major General Bell from the Army War College, furnished for the private inspection and study of the officers especially assigned to this work. After being studied by the Lieutenant Colonel these documents were thoroughly gone over by Captain Wilder, who made a close examination of all the mathematical and mechanical details shown, and so far familiarized himself with the problems before him that his subsequent work abroad was approached with a good background of information.

Slowly, but always surely, the matter progressed. Many officers in high command had to be convinced. They were convinced. Many obstacles had to be overcome. They were overcome. From bureau to bureau, from General to General, always going higher, until Major General Hugh L. Scott, Chief of the General Staff, and the Secretary of War gave their consent.

Detachment Order }
No. 19 }

New York, August 25, 1917

III. Major Francis Russell Stoddard, Jr., Captain Robert H. Wilder, and First Lieutenant Cabot Ward are appointed a board to study and report upon the anti-aircraft defenses of London, Paris and elsewhere, and are directed to go abroad for that purpose.

By Order

JOHN ROSS DELAFIELD,
Lieutenant-Colonel commanding
Artillery Service Detachment.

Official:
Chandler Smith,
Captain-Adjutant.

With full and elaborate credentials, with letters from the Adjutant-General and Governor of New York, from Monsieur Jusserand, the French Ambassador, from Sir Arthur Spring-Rice, the

Digitized by Google

British Ambassador, from the Mayor of New York to the Chief Magistrates of London and Paris, our officers sailed on their important mission. Major Stoddard, in his book "War Time France," tells a very interesting story of their experiences. The story of the commission will be told in later chapters. Very few people realize that the Artillery Service Detachment and the Ninth Coast Artillery N. Y. G. had the only officers of a State militia regiment who went abroad and were at the front. Major Stoddard and Captain Wilder were officers of the Artillery Service Detachment, V. C. A., until transferred while abroad to the Ninth, in which they continued their service.

THE ROYAL ITALIAN WAR COMMISSION.
THE PRINCE OF UDINE.

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

Chapter Five

THE CAMP AT CITY ISLAND

EARLY in the spring, as recruiting showed that a large number of batteries would soon be equipped, the question of a summer training camp was discussed. Both officers and men felt that life in a military camp would be invaluable in creating morale and efficiency. If arrangements could be made for a camp within commuting distance, many men would take advantage of the training who could not spare time for a prolonged absence from their business or professional work. Much thought was given to the task of investigating sites. We had many men in the Detachment who by training and experience were competent to pass on questions of availability, sanitation, accessibility, and the like, so that the labor was not arduous. The site selected was on City Island, where a most eligible plot was offered to us through the efforts of Lieutenant William L. Sayers and Mr. H. Schieffelin Sayers.

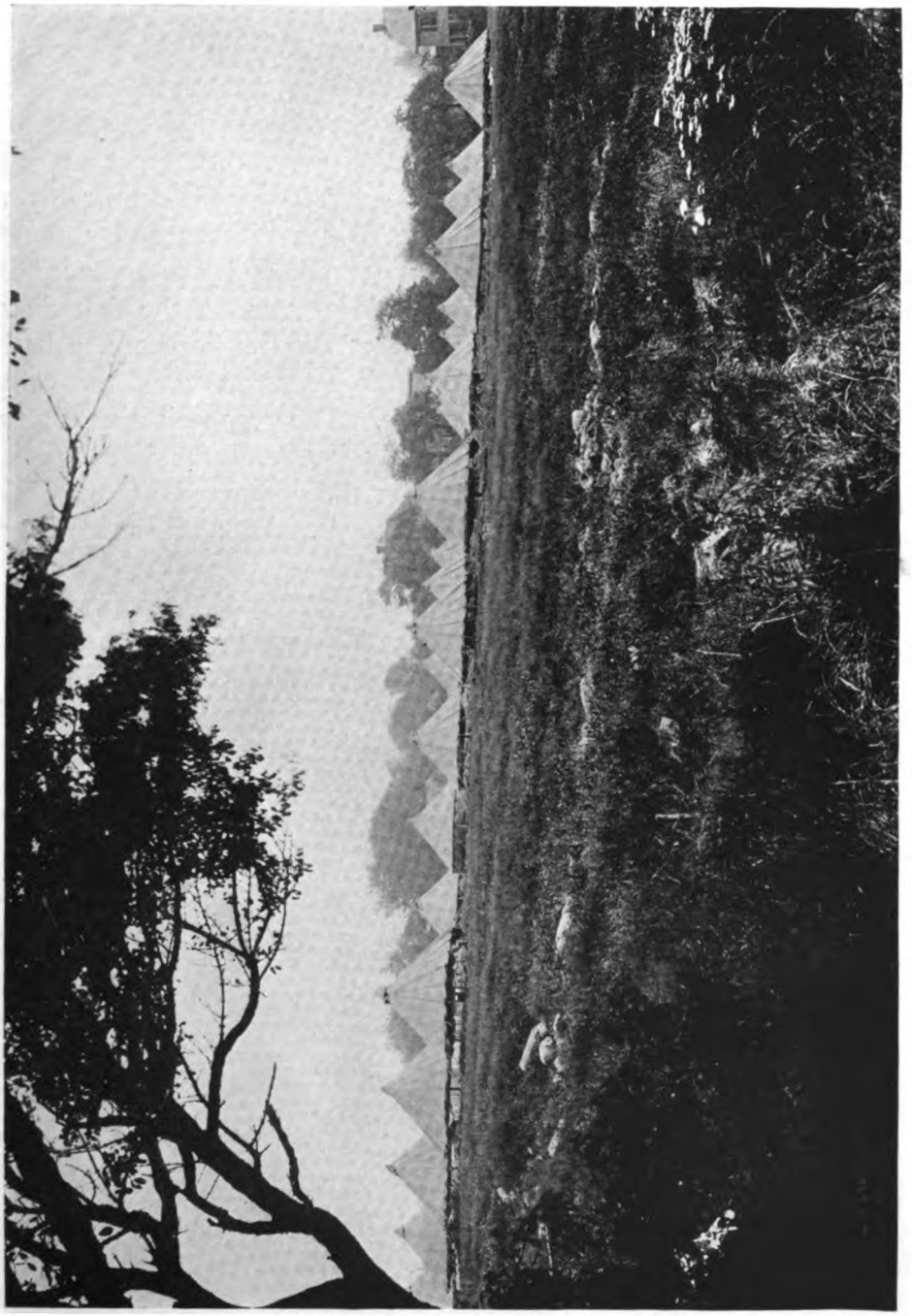
The camp site proper, that is, the ground actually occupied by the headquarters building, mess hall, tents and parade, covered several acres, sloping gradually from the main street of City Island down to the waters of Eastchester Bay, an arm of Long Island Sound. The ground was well adapted to the purposes of a camp, both as to accessibility and natural drainage. An old and somewhat pretentious mansion was on the place and afforded excellent quarters for the Adjutant's office, hospital, Surgeon's room, reception room, etc., and also for the Quartermaster's stores. This house stood near the waterside of the property and was reached by a public road leading down from the main street. The entrance to the camp was through the gateway and yard of the premises, and a convenient window enabled the men to report their goings and comings to the Sergeant in charge, and to receive and mail their letters, etc., without crowding into the office. Pipes had been laid through the camp and water was abundant.

Digitized by Google

LAYING OUT THE CAMP.

THE CAMP FROM PELHAM BAY.

Digitized by Google



Digitized by Google

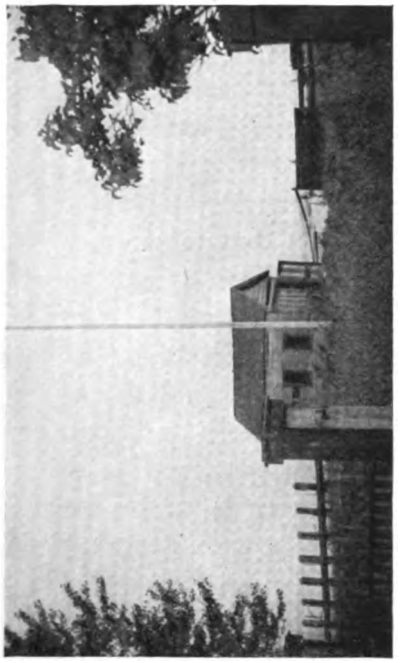
Directly across the road, opposite this mansion, was another piece of property also abutting on the water, on which stood a building which had formerly been used as a club-house. This building was assigned to the Supply Company and became the mess house of the camp, and one of the Supply Sergeants was placed in general charge. This club-house lent itself admirably to the purposes of a mess house. There was a kitchen and a range, though the latter was found to be too small, and was replaced by a larger one, a storeroom and two dining-rooms on the first floor; while the second floor provided an office for the Sergeant, a bath-room and several sleeping rooms. There was room in the camp for two full batteries and headquarters. The responsibility for the mess arrangements, furnishing cots, blankets and the like, was of course on the Supply Company, under the command of the Commissary, Captain Benjamin Rush Lummis. In addition to Captain Lummis, the Supply Company had Captain Norman Bentley Gardiner, Quartermaster, Quartermaster-Sergeant Mortimer Delano, Sergeants H. Schieffelin Sayers, William R. Corwine, Alexander H. Spencer (generally known affectionately as the "Grizzled Old Sergeant"), Corporal Duncan Candler and Private Thomas J. McCahill. Captain Gardiner, a few days after the Camp opened, had to take sick leave.

The camp was opened June 30, and the various batteries were assigned special dates as follows:

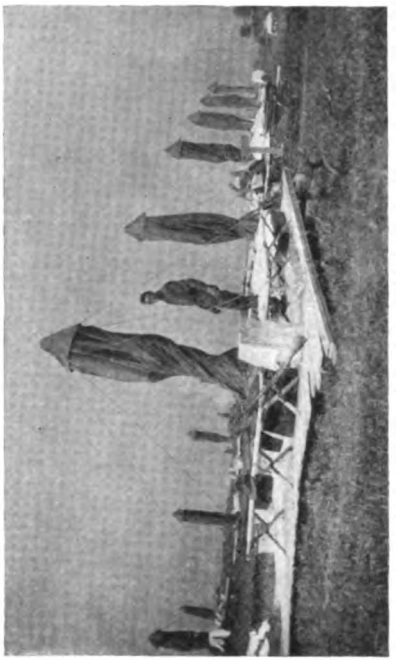
First—July 7-14.
Second—July 21-28.
Fourth—August 4-11.
Sixth—August 18-25.
Fifth and Eleventh—August 25-September 1.
Seventh—September 1-18.
Eighth—September 15-22.

The dates given the various batteries were not exclusive, in that men from other batteries were included. It was intended that all officers and men should use the camp whenever possible; but when

Digitized by Google

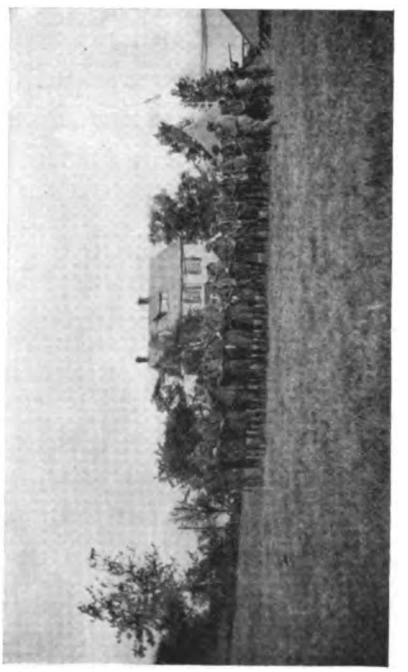


GUARD HOUSE.



AIRING TENTS.

MESS HALL.



THE KRAG RIFLE.

Digitized by Google

a battery was formally assigned to duty it was expected that every officer and man would be there all the time. A large number of officers and men were in the camp from time to time for longer or shorter periods. It was found to be a splendid experience, even for a man who had to go to town to business. He was up at reveille, had the setting-up exercises, in the afternoon after his return there was some drill—work enough so that when taps came he was ready to sleep and did sleep. All the time he was in camp he was in uniform and subject to military discipline.

The camp was useful also to batteries not assigned, for they were free to use it, and did for competitive or special drills. The arrangements for feeding the men were admirable and well managed. The men, as well as the officers, were charged at the rate of two dollars per day each, that is fifty cents each for breakfast and lunch and one dollar for dinner. A covered veranda extended around three sides of the building, on which the mess tables were set, except in bad weather. The men, on the whole, seemed satisfied and pleased with the commissary arrangements; indeed the Sergeant in charge was heard to remark that whatever might be the qualifications or disqualifications of the men in other respects, they were no slackers at meal-time.

The camp was under the command of Lieutenant-Colonel Delafield, and Lieutenant George W. Burleigh was Post-Adjutant. Of course in Colonel Delafield's absence the senior officer took command, so that this duty very frequently devolved on Major Stoddard who had made his summer residence close to the camp. The command of the troops was given to the C. O. of the battery present on duty.

Each day a detail of seven "mess men" was assigned to assist the regular hired kitchen men in serving the food between the kitchen and the tables for the ensuing three meals. In order to show what good work was done in the camp and to give an idea of the routine we quote in full the report of Captain (later Major) S. Edson Gage then commanding the Second Battery.

Digitized by Google

REPORT:

"I beg to make the following report of the work done at Camp, City Island, N. Y., July 21-28, by the Second Battery, augmented by such men from other batteries as were present at camp.

Previous to 12 M., July 21st, when the Second Battery took over the Camp from Captain Chester of the First Battery, the following had been done:—

The Battery had been ordered to attend Camp, July 21-28. In answer to letters a number of men had been excused by written order and duplicate order sent to First Sergeant. The Squads were then recast. A sketch map of the streets and tents was made and the tents numbered. The Sergeants and Squads were assigned to tents by printed list. It had previously been arranged with Captain Chester to move all men from other Batteries into the four tents nearest the Headquarters house. At 11:30 A. M. July 21, a Post and Bulletin Board was planted at First Sergeant's tent and on it was posted the papers showing—

Squads as rearranged
Map
Assignment to tents.

The men found their places without confusion. At 12 M., July 21, the following details were on duty:—

Dr. Brannan
A mess detail
Hopkins to assist Sergeant Spencer
Mallaby to assist Lieutenant Burleigh

The various calls were sounded from 6 A. M. to 10 P. M. except on the half-days of Saturday, July 21 and Saturday, July 28.

Attendance—

The morning reports showed on Saturday, July 21, 65, and on two days showed 79. On Saturday, July 28, it showed 60 men present, and at 8 A. M. of that day a panoramic photo was taken.

Roll Call—

Roll call was made at first assembly and to those present were added such men as reported later in each day.

Setting-up Exercises—

Setting-up exercises were executed on seven days.

Sick Call—

Dr. Brannan's report is made separately, and I concur in his recommendation for a standard ration if such can be furnished without extra cost.

Digitized by Google

Morning Drill—8 A. M.—

On Sunday was commenced extended order drill. The Battery was first put through the elementary drill and was then divided into two platoons under the Lieutenants, who carried the men through the forming of skirmish line from all formations.

On Monday the Battery was marched to Pelham Bay Park and extended order was carried out for about a mile with points and flankers and support, and after withdrawing the points and throwing in the supports, the Battery made a charge. The Battery was marched back to Camp. A few were sent back in autos.

On Tuesday the Battery was marched to Pelham Bay Park and instructed in taking advantage of cover, and then marched to Pelham Parkway and to the Golf Grounds, where the skirmish line was moved to the oblique and to the rear, and turned to right and left. The Battery was divided into three platoons. Two were sent to develop lines to cover and were then assembled in line of platoons past a bunker where they received a surprise attack. All were then marched back to Camp except Callingham who sprained a leg, and one or two affected by heat who were returned by auto. Estimated distance covered, 8 to 9 miles, time about 3 hours 40 minutes.

On Wednesday was commenced drill with Lewis Gun. The drill as formulated by Major Delafield and Captain Chester was first given to all present, and was then expanded to extended order by five gun squads, one being advanced while the remainder maintained fire. The Battery was then assembled and divided into two platoons under Lieutenant Campbell and Lieutenant Perry. Lieutenant Campbell guarded an ammunition base and was attacked by Lieutenant Perry. It proved to be an interesting problem. In the late afternoon at a supplemental drill, Major Stoddard gave the new Bayonet Drill and the men were put one at a time to attack the dummy figures. These dummies and the rack supporting them had been made on Tuesday and Wednesday.

On Thursday the men were given further drill with the bayonet—low point, long thrust, short thrust, jab, butt stroke 1-2-3; and the launch having been put in commission, it was given to Lieutenant Rogers who made a surprise attack from the water side. At 1:30 P. M. twenty-one men were carried in our launch to Great Neck dock where autos carried the detail to the range.

On Friday a problem of transportation was worked out. At 8 A. M. assembly was blown and after forming the Battery, they were marched up Pilot Street in Column of Squads. Without previous knowledge that they were to be carried, they were put into autos and delivered at a point North and East of City Island Station at 8:30 —distance of three miles. They were then taken into the fields and put into extended order by machine gun squads supported by infantry and moved at two miles per hour. Losing communication with their flankers they were assembled and the previous infantry support were sent out as gun squads. They moved through rough fields, pasture and thick woods, guiding by their shadows and came out in very good line on a cross

Digitized by Google

road. Here they were assembled and marched to Pelham Manor Station, and from there to Parkway. One man had fallen out. One man was here returned by auto.

The Battery was then marched to the autos which had been left with one guard. All were given the opportunity to ride to Camp, or permission to march. Lieutenant Burleigh and the three officers of Second Battery and private Post marched the three miles to Camp and were dismissed in good condition on the parade where assembled. At 1:30 about sixty men were put aboard four launches and taken to Fort Totten. Lieutenant Brown and a regular sergeant ordered up a gun crew of nine men to operate a three-inch gun. Lieutenant Brown gave a talk. Our men manned two guns and were instructed by regulars. The men were returned to Camp at 5:30.

On Saturday the Battery was given close order drill and a remarkable improvement was noted, although no close order work had been done in Camp, except such as was done in getting to or from some point.

Inspection of Quarters—

The Camp was inspected on each day at 1:30 P. M. except Saturday, July 28, and on this date orders were given to turn in everything in the tents except cots.

Police—

A police detail worked each day and were not excused from School or any drill.

Mess Detail—

A mess detail worked each day and were not excused from School or any drill.

Guard Duty—

Formal guard mount was made on Saturday, Sunday, Monday, Tuesday, Wednesday, and Thursday, advancing the different ranks as far as possible. On Friday an informal guard mount was made. Thirteen men were put on guard each night for twelve hours and the Camp was guarded at each mess and at such times as the Battery was absent.

School—

School call was sounded at 2:15 and continued 1½ to 2 hours. On one day the work on Lewis Gun continued until 4:45. The subjects covered were as follows:—

Talk on Camp Sanitation by Major Harlow Brooks, Medical Corps, N. Y. N. G. (later Colonel U. S. A., A. E. F.).

The Krag Rifle—

Its magazine, sights, cleaning rods, etc., bolt and mechanism, cut-off, safety, what causes jam, what causes miss-fire, finding the normal windage, testing sights for elevation, sighting tests, triangles. On each Thursday a detail is sent to Great Neck.

Digitized by Google

SETTING-UP EXERCISES.

Digitized by Google

Lewis Gun—

Range. Twenty-one went on Thursday of Camp. Its uses as a defensive weapon and as an offensive weapon. Practically every man took down and assembled the Lewis Gun, the time running from four minutes to forty-odd minutes.

Note.—A machine gun skirmish drill was developed. Problems in offense and defense with machine guns were worked out. The Second Battery is about to receive, as gifts from members, two auto mounts.

Military Surveying—

Map reading, explanation of contours, the pocket level and experiments in its use, standardization of pace, ranging, pacing survey and plotting same, the pocket compass, orientation of map, a N. & S. line was established.

Tent Work—

The Sibley Tent, to stake it out, to drive pegs, to erect, to take down, to fold, to carry, two tents were dropped, the guys removed from pins (pins not removed), pole moved from under tent and the tent set up again complete in two minutes.

Signal Work with Flags—

Very little was done in this.

Church Service—

On Sunday, July 22, at 11:30, a service was held, Private Rev. Charles E. Brugler officiating on the lawn of Headquarters House adjoining the shore.

Trumpeter—

Trumpeter Gordon was present Saturday 21 and Sunday 22 and was obliged to leave. A trumpeter was developed in the Battery and he was furnished with a trumpet.

Launch—

The launch was delivered late Tuesday evening, it having broken down on the way over. Corporal Story (1), Callingham and Corporal Murray (1) put it in working order and it was used for Battery work on Wednesday, Thursday and Friday. I am informed that after July 15 the law requires a license. We ran it with our own men. Before leaving I instructed Sergeants Spencer and Hopson to put riding light on her each night. I forgot to tell them to arrange for a man to run her.

Digitized by Google

Visitors—

Officers, non-Commissioned Officers and men from other Batteries were attached to Second Battery and put to work in the rank they hold in their own Batteries.

Ammunition—

In addition to the two hundred rounds which the Battery was authorized to purchase through Captain Thebaud, the Battery has bought through the 1790 Rifle Club one thousand rounds of Krag ammunition, and each Thursday a detail is sent to Great Neck Range and given practice at one hundred to two hundred and three hundred yards.

Forms and Reports—

Morning reports were handed in to Lieutenant Burleigh for eight days and on an abridged form recommended by him. Guard reports were also made on regulation forms.

Purchases—

There were bought and charged to V. C. A. ten lbs. of nails, some rope for the dummies and a pair of oars. I also took the responsibility to order the plumber to repair two leaks. Aside from this I authorized no work or purchases. Ten gallons gasolene, sacks for dummies and false faces, etc., were paid for from private funds.

Battery Fund—

Following your suggestion a Battery fund has been started. Lieutenant Rogers is Treasurer. I understood you to say that half the money collected from the men by V. C. A. was to be paid into the Battery funds. We shall be glad to receive this money.

Second Camp—

The men of the Battery requested that a second Camp be held and I have your permission to order the Battery into Camp at City Island for one week beginning September 15, 1917.

Captain Praeger—

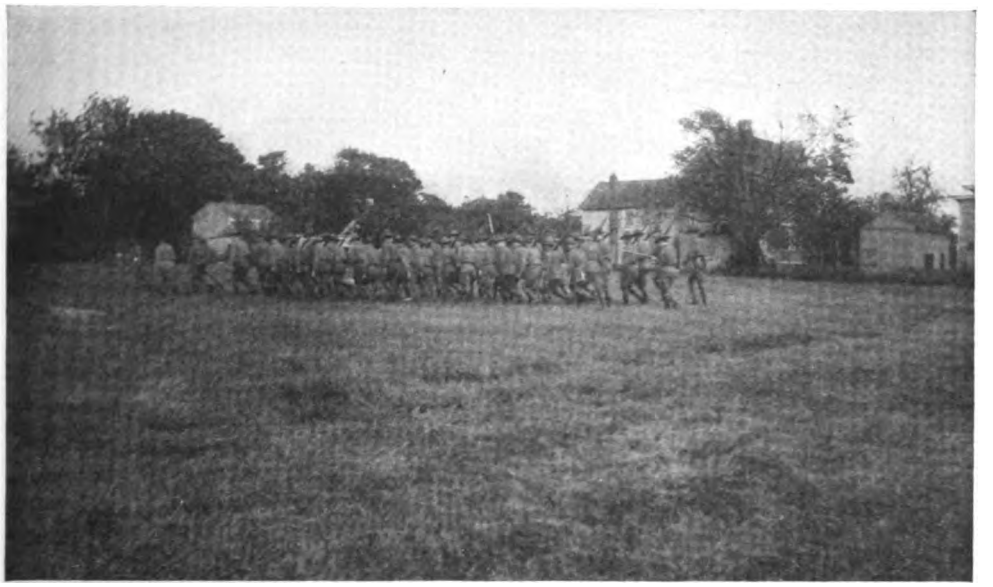
To carry out your instructions of July 26, 1917, I am sending a copy of this report to Captain Louis J. Praeger, c/o Messrs. Wendell, Fay & Co., 19th Street and Fourth Avenue, New York City."

On August 7, the Fourth Battery, under the command of Lieutenant John Moore Perry, was on active duty in the camp. Offi-

Digitized by Google

cers and men were greatly delighted at the receipt of orders to report at once at the Armory for duty with the First Provisional Regiment, N. Y. G., in guarding the Aqueduct. The men proceeded to the Armory, and the rifles and personal effects were very kindly transported by motor trucks furnished by the Mayor's Defense Committee and by automobiles of the Women's Motor Corps of America, commanded by Captain (now Colonel) Helen Bastedo. The Grizzled Old Sergeant writes the historian: "These automobiles were driven by lady motorcorpists of superior presence, each more attractive than the other."

The prolonged service in guarding the Aqueduct prevented the re-opening of the Camp, and the Supply Company closed the Camp, storing the tents and other material in the H. Q. house. The Captain Commissary writes: "I am very sorry that the Camp could not have been actively open for another month or six weeks, as by that time I think the receipts would have paid all the expenses and costs." The Detachment was indebted to Major Herman F. Stone, Quartermaster's Department United States Army, for the tents used in the Camp.



"AT THE DOUBLE."

Digitized by Google

CHAPTER SIX

THE LOST ORDERS

THE orders which sent two provisional batteries of the Corps to the important work of guarding New York City's water supply follow:

"STATE OF NEW YORK
THE ADJUTANT-GENERAL'S OFFICE
ALBANY

August 6, 1917.

SPECIAL ORDERS
No. 198 A

I. Two provisional batteries of the Veteran Corps of Artillery of the State of New York to consist of three battery officers and one hundred men each are hereby placed on active duty under the terms of Special Orders No. 198, this office, August 6, 1917 and will constitute a part of the military force called out in aid of the civil authorities of the City of New York under that order, which military force is to be organized as a provisional regiment and said batteries will form two of the twelve units authorized for said regiment.

II. The Commanding Officer Veteran Corps of Artillery will designate the officers and men to compose said provisional batteries and the commanding officers of said batteries so designated will at once report to Colonel John B. Rose, 1st Infantry, New York Guard, for instructions.

By command of the Governor:

LOUIS W. STOTESBURY
The Adjutant-General.

Official:
Edward J. Westcott
Major, Assistant to the Adjutant-General

C. O. Veteran Corps of Artillery."

It may puzzle the reader that a Corps organized for anti-aircraft defense and riot duty in the city should have been detailed to the Aqueduct, but it was a matter of military necessity. Troops were needed for this work, and the Corps had the men and equipment ready and waiting.

About the middle of July, General Dyer, commanding the new

Digitized by Google

military force called the New York Guard, which was to take the place of the National Guard, then in the service of the United States, had been in consultation with Colonel Delafield in relation to the serious problem of furnishing adequate guards for New York City's water supply. The National Guard units doing this duty would soon be ordered away. The new organization, the New York Guard, being recruited, was hardly strong enough. He asked Colonel Delafield if the Detachment would take over the guarding of a section of the Aqueduct, presumably the lower sector including the great Kensico Dam, for about sixty days. Colonel Delafield promptly offered the services of his command, and this action was cordially approved by the Council of Administration. At this time, General Dyer told the Colonel that he thought it wise for the Corps to go on and complete the batteries. This guard duty was, in a way, foreign to the plan of anti-aircraft defense and riot duty, but it was strictly in accord with the tradition of the Corps—an excellent opportunity to serve the State, and would give splendid training to officers and men. The destruction of the Catskill Aqueduct, just finished, would have been a great catastrophe, bringing death and dire calamity to the City. This marvellous engineering achievement runs through some of the wildest parts of Putnam and Westchester Counties, and was built with no idea of its becoming an object of enemy attack, so of course was vulnerable in many places.

An Armory or camp is a breeding-place of rumors; at times the air seems to be surcharged with them, and such was the condition of this particular Armory on the afternoon of August 6th, the eve of the day of "The Lost Orders." The historian, then sergeant in the Headquarters Company, came to the Armory with papers for the Lieutenant-Colonel. Two batteries had been drilling. He was hardly inside the doors before he was bombarded with questions. "Did he have the orders?" "Had he seen them?" "Were we all ordered out?" "Did the Second Battalion go to the Barge Canal?" "Was it only the First and Second Batteries?" He did not know anything about it, and said so, and no one believed him. For once

Digitized by Google

the enlisted men were right. They were under orders, but they did not know it.

The next morning, after long and patient inquiry, it was found that orders had been issued. A sergeant was directed to proceed to the Arsenal, and try to get copies from Captain de Garmo. He proceeded with alacrity and celerity, but when he got there he found a long line waiting for Captain de Garmo who was listening to a tale of woe from a voluble lady. The sergeant slipped to the head of the line, and, as the lady paused for breath, attracted the Captain's attention by a very snappy salute, whispered his request for copies of the orders, received them, and was off as the lady continued her remarks to the kindly, patient officer.

The orders so obtained reached the Vice-Commandant a little after 12 o'clock. They required the Corps to have two hundred men at the Armory at 7 o'clock that night, ready for duty. They were green troops, but they knew it. They never had had a hurry call to duty, but they went at it. The Vice-Commandant was assisted by Major Hodges, Lieutenant Montgomery and the Headquarters Company. Fortunately, the Fourth Battery was in camp at City Island, under command of Lieutenant Perry. It was ordered to the Armory, where it arrived at 6:55 P. M., all present, except for six "medically unfit" privates who had been left at Camp to guard Corps property.

At the designated hour, over five hundred men had assembled, and all through the evening they came pouring in. As they arrived, they were lined up in provisional formations by Major Edward C. Delafield and his Adjutant, Lieutenant Burleigh, who had just returned from official duty in Washington. Meanwhile, many reported by telephone.

The men were formed in line of masses and briefly addressed by Colonel Delafield, who explained the emergency, the necessity of the duty, calling for volunteers. These were lined up under the direction of Major Hodges and Regimental-Adjutant Smith; first those who would go at once, then those who could go on the 15th or later dates.

Digitized by Google

It was an interesting and inspiring scene. There were many questions to be answered. The fine thing was the number of men who were ready to make sacrifices to perform this unlooked-for duty. The volunteers were formed in a battalion and were reviewed by Brevet Major-General Asa Bird Gardiner, the learned and venerable Commandant, who made a short address, describing his own experiences during the Civil War and the services of the ancestors of the Corps in the War of 1812. The vigor of his eloquence and the strength of his voice were remarkable when we remembered his age. Orders were received to dismiss the men, and have them assemble ready for duty the next morning. This was done, and on Wednesday they were at the Armory bright and early. One or two middle-aged privates were heard to mutter something about "ungodly hours," but they learned a lot about hours in a few days. Then came a long, long wait. The monotony of this inaction was relieved by the Hippodrome Chorus which were rehearsing at the Armory. Later, orders were received to dismiss the men, with directions to report early the next morning.

Colonel Delafield, from his experience in the open and his recent care of troops in the field—having been in command of the Training Camp—realized the prime importance of supplies and equipment for the comfort and efficiency of his men, and with Lieutenant Burleigh had been in consultation with the Supply Officers in the Arsenal. The State was to furnish blankets and ponchos; those were delivered at the Armory Wednesday afternoon. While there, he was advised by an experienced Staff Officer to go to the State Camp with his men or before their arrival, and to see Colonel Rose about the issue of proper rations, equipment, etc., to the men. It was most excellent advice, and very fortunately for the men and the success of the expedition, he did so.

On Thursday morning, August 9th, 1917, the two provisional Batteries assembled at the Armory under the command of Major Hodges, with Battalion-Adjutant, Lieutenant Frank E. Davidson, Sergeant-Major Lloyd R. Stark, and Lieutenant Jerome Kings-

Digitized by Google

bury, Assistant-Surgeon, Battalion Staff. The Officers of our two batteries were Battery A: Captain, S. Edson Gage, First Lieutenant, Theodore T. Lane, First Lieutenant, Raymond L. Taft; Battery B: Captain, Adam T. Shurick, First Lieutenant, John Moore Perry, Second Lieutenant, Electus T. Backus. The State had furnished blankets and ponchos; the men took their rifles. Each man was furnished with rations supplied by the Corps. This was a very fortunate precaution ordered by the Vice-Commandant. They found these rations very useful. The Battalion marched to the Grand Central Station, receiving great applause as it passed, and with the other New York City Detachments, all under the command of Major Hodges, entrained for Roa Hook.

Meanwhile, Colonel Delafield, with Lieutenant Burleigh, making an early start, went in a high-powered French car with an experienced French chauffeur, placed at their disposal by Mr. George T. Brokaw, a private in the Command, to the State Camp at Peekskill. On their arrival they found the Camp empty. There was no evidence of any provision having been made for the troops soon to arrive. The whole place looked deserted. After some hunting around, Major William L. Burnett, in charge of the State Camp and designated second in command of the First Provisional Regiment was found, but he was blissfully unconscious of the fact that a large part of his Regiment was to arrive in a very short time, and when asked if there was any officer of the Provisional Regiment in the Camp, he did not seem to understand. Apparently, he had made no preparation for the issuing of supplies and equipment to the men of his new command, and said that he could do nothing until he received orders. More lost orders! He only had a few men employed by the State Supply Department and they were exhausted, having worked until 2 A. M. putting away tents, cots, etc. Colonel Delafield tried in vain to get Colonel Rose, the Commanding Officer of the new Regiment, or his Adjutant, on the telephone. At Major Burnett's suggestion, Colonel Myers was reached at the Arsenal, who said that the number of men to mobilize at Peekskill had been reduced from eight hun-

Digitized by Google

dred to three hundred and twenty-five. Colonel Delafield asked him about supplies, and he stated that Major Burnett would furnish everything required, and not to worry about rations; that Captain de Garmo, as Supply-Officer, would report later and see to things. Finally, Colonel Delafield got in telephone connection with Adjutant-General Stotesbury at Albany, who at once solved the problem by directing Colonel Delafield to assume command of the Camp, with orders to see that everything necessary was done. Thereupon Colonel Delafield directed Major Burnett to move out tentage for three hundred and twenty-seven men, which he started to do. Again Colonel Delafield tried to reach Colonel Rose or his Adjutant by telephone, but could not do so. He then directed Major Burnett to hold the auto trucks to move the equipment the next day to the various posts and immediately procure rations from Peekskill. Shortly after 1 o'clock the men from New York City detrained at Roa Hook and marched to the camp under command of Major Hodges, four hundred and thirty-eight officers and men. Colonel Delafield placed Major Hodges in command of troops in the camp, and Major Burnett was so informed, and instructed to receive orders from him as to tents, supplies, etc. Colonel Delafield was then relieved of command by the Adjutant-General, and was given permission to return to New York City.

Colonel Delafield's forethought in providing emergency rations saved the men great privation. During the afternoon, the tents were issued and put up, and late in the evening the cots were issued. It was rumored that Major Hodges drew a cot admirably suited to a ten-year-old boy, but it was part of the game, and the Major acted as if he enjoyed it as much as the men did.

The next day, by train, by truck, by trolley, the men went to their assigned posts on the Aqueduct. They were mobilized at the Armory on Tuesday night. They assembled again Wednesday morning, and after a long delay, had been dismissed. They assembled again at the Armory on Thursday morning, and proceeded to the State Camp. They pitched their tents that hot afternoon, and took them down Friday morning, and then proceeded by

Digitized by Google

divers roundabout routes to their several posts which could have been much more easily reached from their Armory. When they arrived at their posts, they found that no provision had been made for them. Did they complain? They did not. They made the best of the situation. What they did not have, they bought. What they could not buy, they improvised. Corporal Tillinghast, in the Colonel's little Franklin, drove from City Island to the Aqueduct time and time again with cots, blankets and kitchen utensils. Captain Helen Bastedo's Women's Motor Corps did splendid service. What our men could not get, they did without. Being as General Bell described them "men of affairs and standing in the community," they probably wondered more or less, but they did their duty, and obeyed orders because they had enlisted to serve their country. The total cost to the special fund for absolutely necessary supplies, etc., for which no provision was made by the State in this guard duty, was $1,414.96.

Each week a new lot of men was sent up as replacements. At first the Detachment depended on volunteering, but later batteries were ordered out. The First, Second, Fourth, Sixth, Seventh and Eighth had done fine work; the Third, Fifth and Eleventh had arranged for future dates; the Ninth, Tenth and Twelfth were under-officered, new and untrained, but men were needed for immediate use, and they were ordered out. Then followed a very disappointing experience. The sergeant at Headquarters was kept at the telephone for long and weary hours, until his left arm was numb and his temper anything but numb, and always by his desk sat a man who had volunteered and who did not want to do duty, while another of the same ilk was talking over the telephone. He tells with glee how he caught one. The usual excuse—"awfully sorry,"—"wanted to go,"—"father served,"—"but it would ruin the business, cost him his job, injure the boss," etc., etc. The sergeant got the boss on the telephone, drew a lurid picture of what would happen to the boss and the business if the Germans blew up the Aqueduct, and the boss replied: "Of course he'll go. If he does not report on time, let *me* know."

Digitized by Google

The old sergeant has often wondered since, especially when a damp east wind brings a touch of that numbness in his left arm, if some of those men do not regret today their facile excuses.

There was another side to the story. There was Private..... He was away, but Mrs. Private had received the order and reached her husband by telegram—telephoned every day that he would be there, and wanted to know what he needed, and would that be all, only she never could understand why he did not need sheets.

This guard duty showed the quality of the Detachment. It was emergency service, entirely outside of and at variance with the original plan of procedure, but it was needed and the men were more than willing to make the sacrifices required. The failure to make proper provision for the care of the men had to be supplemented by the Detachment. It was not the fault of the Battalion and Company officers. They covered ground with half the number of men allotted to their predecessors, but they did it and did it to the complete satisfaction of their military superiors.

A field officer of the First Provisional told the historian that the work of the men was exceptionally fine. He said "each man seemed to feel that the safety of New York depended on him, on his fidelity and efficiency; so his work was well done."

Not the least of the services rendered by the Detachment in this guard duty were the improvements at the different little posts. Many of them, when the men took possession, were in a shocking, a positively dangerous condition hygienically. All these matters were quickly remedied, cook shacks and mess halls, improvised as they were out of odds and ends, were properly screened and ventilated; proper and well-located latrines were constructed at once. All camps and posts were thoroughly and properly policed. The work was well done throughout.

Strangely enough, the lost orders were never delivered. The following letter from Brigadier-General Louis W. Stotesbury shows the orders given Lieutenant-Colonel Delafield giving him the command of that part of the First Provisional Regiment at the State Camp on August 9th, 1917. It explains the situation in detail.

Digitized by Google

STOTESBURY & MINER
Counsellors at Law

55 Liberty Street
New York, March 2nd, 1921.

Col. John Ross Delafield,
27 Cedar Street,
New York, N. Y.

My dear Col. Delafield:

In your letter of Feb. 16th you asked me to write you in regard to the instructions given you on August 9th, 1917, when you reported at Peekskill with a detachment from the Veteran Corps Artillery for service in guarding the aqueduct which carried the water supply of New York City.

To briefly summarize the situation, various National Guard organizations had been called out for this service, and as they were later drafted into the Federal Service, they were continued on this duty under Federal authority, until we were notified that they were to be withdrawn and taken from the State to the Southern training camp, and that the State would have to assume responsibility for guarding its public works and utilities.

It was to take over this duty that we organized the Provisional Brigade, consisting of two provisional regiments, made up of detachments from various depot units of the National Guard organizations, and other units specially organized for the purpose. Col. John B. Rose was in command of the First Provisional Regiment of which your detachment was to form a part.

The detachments from the 7th Regiment, the 12th Regiment, the 69th Regiment and the Veteran Corps Artillery were to mobilize at Peekskill on August 9th, where Col. Rose was to establish headquarters and receive them.

Upon your arrival at Peekskill, Col. Rose had not arrived, and Major Burnett, of the Adjutant-General's Department, and a detachment from the Quartermaster Corps were in charge of the supplies.

You called me up from the camp, stating that the detachments from the 7th, 12th, 69th, and V. C. A. had arrved; that you were the Senior Officer present, and that there were approximately 179 officers and men of the V. C. A. at the camp. You stated that Col. Rose was not there, and that you had not been able to get in touch with him. I then directed you to take command of the camp and to see that everything necessary was done. I also told you that I would communicate with Col. Myers at the Arsenal and direct him to get in touch with Major Burnett, so that you would have all possible cooperation.

Later on, during the same day, I would say in the neighborhood of three o'clock in the afternoon, you again called me up at Albany. You reported that the men had had mess, that you wished to return to the city, and asked if you might turn the command over to Major Hodges of the Veteran Corps Artillery, he being the Senior

Digitized by Google

Line Officer present. I told you that Major Hodges, being the ranking officer, might be put in command of the camp and that you might leave, turning over your orders to Major Hodges, and that I would receive you the next morning in Albany.

My recollection is that you did arrive in Albany the following morning, and that the subject of our telephone conversations of the previous day were there confirmed, but I think no written orders were issued referring to the matter, as the situation seemed to be fully covered by the original orders for mobilization.

Yours very truly,

(Signed) LOUIS W. STOTESBURY

S—BF formerly, The Adjutant-General State of New York.

MACHINE GUN COMPANY, 9TH C. A. C.

Digitized by Google

CHAPTER SEVEN

THE AQUEDUCT

THAT section of the line of the Aqueduct patrolled by the men from the Veteran Corps of Artillery (part of the First Battalion, First Provisional Regiment, New York Guard) extended from the effluent north of the Kensico Dam to Hillview Reservoir, just above the New York City line. The orders issued required two companies of three officers and one hundred men each. The line covered was about fifteen miles long. This was a long line to be held by two hundred men (they relieved about twice that number). The suddenness of the call made necessary replacements from time to time, owing to the business and professional needs of the officers and men; and they served as they could for periods varying from one to forty-two days. Major Hodges and Captain Lane served for a year or more. The term of duty for the contingent began on August 7th, and the last contingent was relieved on September 17th. The pay-rolls of the First Prov. Regiment show that 667 officers and men of the Field, Staff and Provisional Batteries, V. C. A., participated in this duty. The map in front of book shows the location of the various posts and headquarters.

The whole line of the Aqueduct is replete with points especially susceptible to attack by an enemy equipped with explosives. These had all to be guarded day and night; and it was on or near these that the majority of fixed posts were located. Some of the country is rough-wooded—full of secluded glens and nooks, which seemed especially designed to favor the work of the sniper or conspirator. It was a matter of definite knowledge at that time that the crippling or destruction of the Aqueduct was part of the German war plan; and their total failure to do any damage whatever is assuredly due to its having been well guarded.

One of the achievements of the V. C. A. contingent was the making of a military survey of the entire Aqueduct, from the Hillview

Digitized by Google

Reservoir, at the City Line, up the east side of the Hudson to Breakneck Tunnel, and the rest of the way on the west side to the effluent at the source, the Ashokan Reservoir in the Catskills. Until early in September Headquarters possessed no definite graphic knowledge of the military features of the terrain they were given to guard; these maps, on a scale of one foot to one mile, showed all the vulnerable points and other necessary detail which might enable the authorities to envisage the exigencies of the situation. The east side was surveyed and the maps drawn by Frederick G. Clapp and William L. Somerville; the west side by Henry D. Brandyce and Chas. B. Bradbury. The map printed in this book was made by Captain Brandyce, based on these surveys.

The Southern Sector, from the New York City Line to the White Plains-Tarrytown Road, was held by Company A, divided into twenty posts. Company B was administered as two platoons, the one, under Lieutenant Perry, with headquarters at Elmsford, extending its nine posts northward to the mouth of the Eastview Tunnel; the other with Company Headquarters at Kensico Dam, reaching from the Kensico South Siphon to the Upper Effluent (six outposts) and to the Dam itself (four Interior Guard posts). Because of the unusually large number of vulnerable points to be taken care of, and the special importance of that part of the Aqueduct city-wards of the Kensico Reservoir, the proper protection of these fifteen miles by less than two hundred soldiers was a matter of some difficulty.

Week after week the work went on. Men to whom the physical exertions were a real hardship, at least in the beginning, stuck to their duties throughout and showed the best of all virtues, cheerfulness and good humor. The experiences of one private told in the following pages is typical of them all. The private's story is told in his own words:

I joined the V. C. A. in April, 1917, and was assigned to the Fourth Company, then in process of formation. The first event of importance thereafter was the Joffre reception. Being a "rookie" with scarcely any drill, I did not expect to "show," but the day before the event a gun was thrust into my hands, a drill-sergeant hammered

Digitized by Google

me for ten minutes on "Present Arms" and I marched gaily forth to find myself, at the vital moment, a front rank private with nothing but air and two cops between me and the great man, offering the only movement of the manual I knew on the Altar of Patriotic duty.

Officers came and went in the Fourth Company, but we always had Lieutenant Perry and Top Sergeant Backus, both later promoted. By the time we set out for City Island in August we were fairly well drilled, and except for the limitations of age, and physical defects inherent thereto, rather efficient. The spirit of the men was splendid. Men of high position in the business and social world would obey with alacrity orders to fetch and carry, and with never a complaint or growl would stand and meekly listen to reprimand and criticism, often times unjustly administered, without reply or defense. I used to marvel at their restraint, but there was always one answer, one reason; that which put them into uniform, most of them for the first time, "to do their bit" and help "win the war." I often thought that they were doing a harder job and showing more self-sacrifice than young men of no experience or achievement who were marching off to their first adventure. It took some self-control for an executive head of a great business to drop his pen three times a week and rush up town to be bossed around for an hour and a half by a youthful, and sometimes not tactful, non-com. But they did it, and the rolls will show how faithfully they did it.

Behold us at City Island and under canvas. There we first did Sentry go in real fashion, with many adventures and amusing incidents. I well remember on Post No. 1 at 2 o'clock A. M. trying to make P. Tecumseh Sherman understand that he could not cross through the lines without my permission. I made him understand it, but not before I had awakened every officer in the headquarters and brought him to the window. Then the inspections, new to us and consequently necessarily severe and to be dreaded. It was a funny sight to see bankers and merchants, lawyers and engineers, crawling around their tents looking for burnt matches, butts and like treasures to be concealed from the lynx-eyed inspectors. We always believed the cusses carried these things with them and planted them so as to have an excuse to nail us. True or false, they generally did find something to complain of.

The second day of duty we had "Colors" for the first time. It was to be a fine event, for we had naval visitors who were, of course, present at the ceremony.

Unfortunately none of us had ever officiated before. The bugler was worried at the importance of the occasion and didn't bugle well; the man at the halyards got them mixed and the Colors danced down; the officers saluted and the company did not know what to do, so some saluted, some didn't, and most changed their minds and did and didn't several times. It took several hours, seemingly, to get the Colors down, and then Top Sergeant Hastorf summed up the case. Facing the company, with every possible expression of contempt in his voice and mien, he spoke: "Hams! ! Dismissed!" and we slunk off like guilty school boys.

Digitized by Google

One day, I think Tuesday, just after mess, when we were due for an hour's rest after a strenuous morning of work, we were rudely disturbed by the attempt of Sergeant Cazell to blow "Assembly." This was followed by the cries of various other non-coms bidding us hurry, all of which forced us from our repose and rushed us into formation. Perry, then Lieutenant and our commanding officer, stood before us, a telegram in his hand, which in a steady voice and with an eye flashing with martial ardor, he read aloud. It was an order to report in New York at once for active service, and we were to strike camp "instanter."

I think nothing showed more strikingly than the execution of this order the spirit of service actuating that bunch of business men, off for a week's holiday with soldiering on the side. Without a question or a moment's hesitation they went to packing and dismantling the Camp, and in an incredibly short time were ready to move. Vehicles had been provided, and by 7 o'clock the command was assembled at the 34th Street Armory.

Four or five of us, under Corporal Howard, had been left behind to bring down the arms and ammunition in a moving van, which did not put in an appearance. We finally commandeered a Fifth Avenue bus which appeared unexpectedly on the scene, loaded the stuff aboard, climbed in on top of it and "set sail," reaching 34th Street not far behind the rest of the Battery.

I shall never forget the scene presented as I entered the Armory drill floor. All was hustle and confusion; men in uniform and out of uniform were hurrying in every minute and mingling with the crowd. Orators were orating, some with an audience of three or four, and others to larger groups. No one seemed to know what it was all about, and the wildest speculation was rampant. I was jostled out of my trance by one of our non-coms and hustled over to a far corner where I found the Fourth Battery assembled, and there learned that a sudden call had been made on us for duty on the Aqueduct, and that the Fourth had volunteered to a man: "How about you?" asked the "Top." About 10 o'clock we were dismissed for the night, to report at some ungodly hour in the morning. After most touching farewells to my family, I reported and hung about the Armory all day, the only redeeming feature of that day being the rehearsal of the Hippodrome Chorus, which was enjoyable. Incidentally we, having more lunch than needed, fed the members of the chorus with the excess. My haughty pride revolted at being detailed to serve coffee to a few hundred chorus ladies, but I did it and got some fun out of it. That night we were again dismissed and assembled the next morning and formed into a provisional company under Captain Shurick, and Lieutenants Perry and Backus, and marched gaily to the G. C. D., where we entrained for Peekskill. On arriving at that place I managed to become the first casualty, by falling off the car steps with gun, blanket roll and other impedimenta. I was really rather badly shaken up, and have not, to this day, fully recovered from that fall. However, I was well looked after, and was very much im-

Digitized by Google

pressed by the watchful care my officers exercised in regard to me during the next few days. It gave me great confidence in them.

We camped at Peekskill—a hideous night—and on the morrow embarked for our posts. Being a "casualty" I was not allowed to go with the Company, but was put in a car with "Casualty 2," a chap, Higgins, who had a "touch of the sun." Private Lloyd was put aboard for general reasons, and with the Doctor made up our complement. We had a fine ride to Elmsford, stopping on the way to eat a very good lunch, which was doubly acceptable after the sandwich diet of the last two days. Elmsford was our destination, and we reached there ahead of the Company, but found Lieutenant Perry and one or two aides already there. A detachment of the Twenty-Third Regiment, which we were to relieve, was on duty. They were not hospitable, either men or officers, as far as I could judge. A temporary camp site was chosen, and those of us who had reported were put to work cutting out brush and marking the position of the tents to be erected. This work was scarcely completed when the Company arrived in trolleys. Immediately there was great excitement and confusion. The Top Sergeant Hastorf ran along from car to car reading the names of those who were assigned to Elmsford and those who were to go on. Everybody was asking, "Did he say Jones?" "Do you mean me?" "Isn't Robinson to stay here?" and the like unmilitary questions, to the Top's great disgust. I was read out for Elmsford and was glad of it, for I was too sore and tired to want to move. So I sat on the wall and enjoyed the rumpus. Details began unloading tents and equipage from a flat-car and piling them up beside me. Everybody was on the run, and everybody except the poor private shouting orders. Finally came "All aboard," and frantic scrambling for seats as the cars began to move. I suddenly became aware of a negro civilian standing in the middle of the road, a helpless look of indecision on his face, and he addressed me: "Boss, where do I go." I rushed at him and demanded who he was and where he was told to go. "I'se de cook," and then he added under his breath something about "dam." I grabbed him and hustled him to the last car and threw him aboard, priding myself on being 100% efficient. Then I limped back. God forgive me for that error of judgment which left an army to starve in a wilderness. Two cooks had started; one had deserted, namely the one who was to go to the Kensico Dam; the other was the lost soul I had put on the car. The "damn" I heard was the other kind, and I had unwittingly left my companions foodless. Tents up, we were marshalled into cars and taken to White Plains for dinner.

Returning, we staggered to bed, a pretty well worn-out bunch, but not to sleep. Oh, no. Contantly new men reported, and every time they did we were moved up to make "room for another," until I landed half in half out the canvas, a rock for a pillow and a tent peg in the small of my back. The others said they had no sleep because I snored! ! Snored! ! I was delirious with pain and anguish.

Next morning we were lined up and told that if we wanted food we could go into

Digitized by Google

White Plains and get it at seventy-five cents per head; that the State allowed us only forty cents per dinner, and that our dinner the night before had cost two days' allowance; that if we wanted food we would have to pay for it, but that we would be allowed an hour to get it. Thankful for this, we made a rush for the next trolley and ate. The Y. M. C. A. also let us wash, *free*.

Lieutenant Perry evidently felt that the conditions were unjust, as on our return he called for volunteers to cook the dinner. Corporal Howard volunteered to cook and I to help him, and we were introduced to the kitchen. The stove was a hole in the ground, over which had been placed a piece of sheet iron, through which protruded a shaky piece of stovepipe. There were no cooking utensils and no food, and it was 10 o'clock. Howard foraged for food, and I found an old frying-pan ,a wash boiler and two pails. Our commissary had sent up some canned stuff, we stole potatoes, and served beans, boiled potatoes and coffee at 12 o'clock to about forty men. By this time I realized my crime in losing the cook, and I paid the penalty, stuck to the job for three days until a new cook could be kidnapped from New York. He arrived, took one look at the surroundings and started to bolt, but I clung to him, loved him and served him long enough to effect my own escape and retire to outpost duty.

I was assigned to post No. 9, and reached there after dark one black night, and was immediately posted by Sergeant Cazell for a two-hour trick, followed by another at 1 o'clock A. M. The excitement and unusual hours did not make for sleeping between tricks so that when finally relieved I sank immediately into a heavy sleep, not for long, as I was aroused at daylight by what I first thought to be mosquitoes, but which turned out to be flies, big ones. Looking up, the whole inside of the tent seemed to be covered with them. How our predecessors lived there I could never understand, but the first duty of the day was sanitation. We filled old and made new latrines; combed the bushes for fly food, and found hundreds of partially emptied food cans, and all uncleanness. One good hard day's work by all hands cleaned up and got rid of the flies. Our medical officer arrived, inspected, approved our work, and also brought us disinfectants. The men took great pride in the Post, and we labored like Swedes to make it and keep it tidy. The contractors had left all kinds of rubbish about, old cement bags and much tarred paper being included, which was half embedded in the earth and overgrown with underbrush. We got out what we could, and left the rest, to our sorrow. We also found broken stone and carted it in buckets to make pathways and otherwise adorn our surroundings, for all of which we received commendation from our officers, and felt we had a swell Post. But one day arrived an Inspecting Officer from the Adjutant-General's office, accompanied by our own Commander. Entirely ignoring the spotless condition of our tent and its vicinity, this demon proceeded to roam through the thickets, and announced that tar paper and bags were in there which should be removed and burned. We happened to be

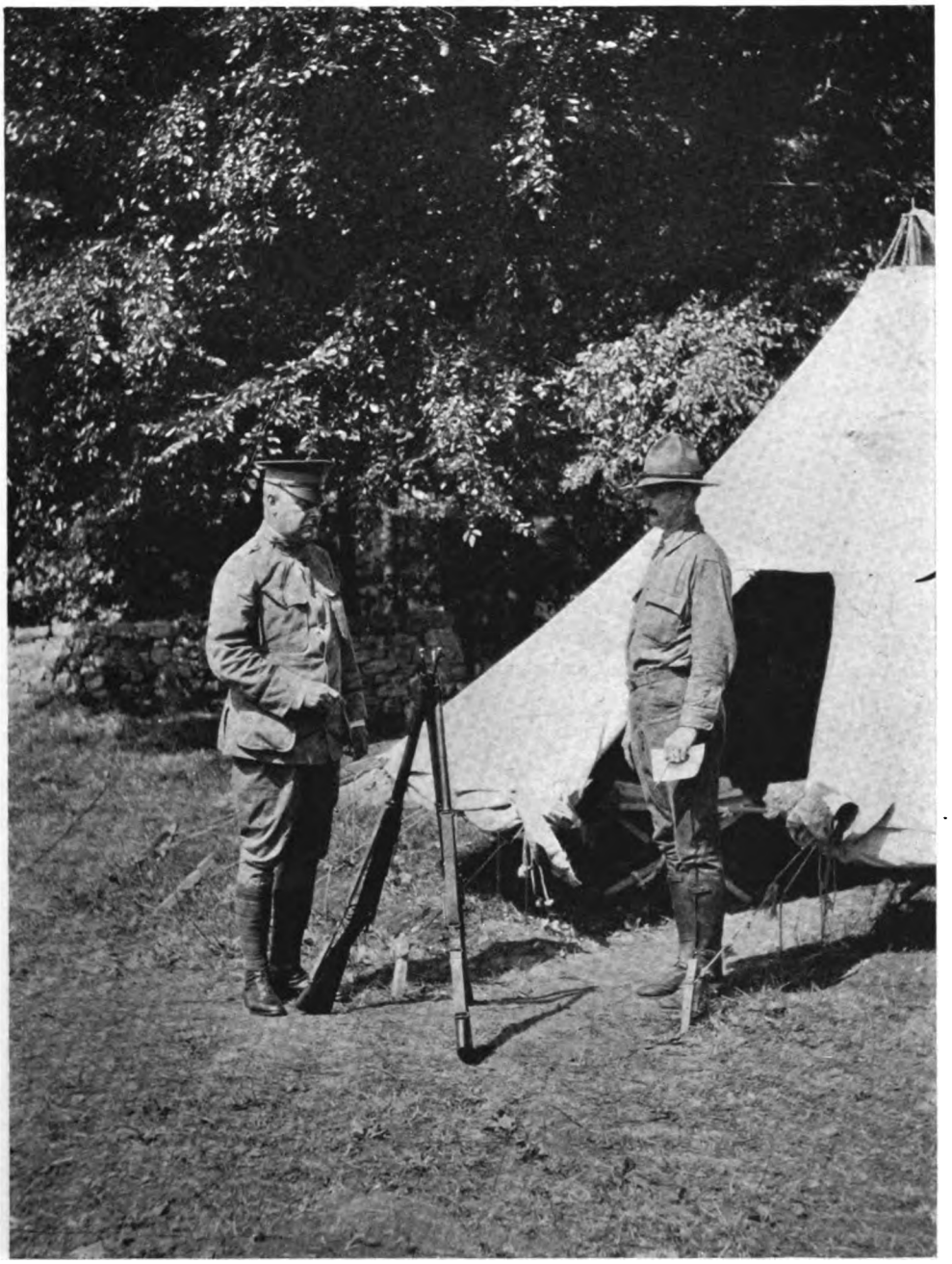
Digitized by Google

in charge of the Post, and Lieutenant Perry conveyed this information to me and ordered the condition rectified. We asked for axes, pickaxes, and ten men to help, but he only smiled his genial smile and retired. After we had sworn our mad off, we got out what tools we had and went to work, and by night had gathered three huge piles of tarred paper. After supper we lit them off, and brought to the scene everybody not otherwise engaged, from the Commanding-Officer down. He broke all speed laws in getting there. Also the White Plains Fire Department telephoned to see if their aid was needed. Our attention being called to the indecency of our conduct, we deeply regretted our thoughtlessness in allowing our zeal to please to overcome our discretion, and the admonition we received was tempered by the semblance of a comprehending smile which belied the Commanding-Officer's words. On the whole, we voted the incident a success.

Our Post was a fixed one, located in a deep hollow from which two pathways led through bushes and undergrowth to the plain beyond. At night it was a black hole, and a sentry hadn't a chance against any prowler who wished to stalk him. An ingenious private invented for our security what we termed our burglar alarm. It consisted of two lengths of wire each about sixty feet long, from which depended various bottles, tin cans and other noise-producing agencies. These, after nightfall, we stretched knee high on the two dangerous sides of our pit. If touched, they gave forth a vigorous alarm. No trespasser ever came near them, but we saw to it that every new officer did, often to his alarm and our repressed joy, especially when one of them got funny and came in the back way to see if we were alert. One of the officers came near being plugged at this game one night, but that was not on our Post. He decided that it was not a wise procedure.

At one period we were very short of men, and a number of boys, newly recruited by a New York City regiment, were sent to help us out. Four of these, entirely inexperienced, were sent to Post No. 9, and I, acting as Corporal, was left alone with them to hold the fort. They were all East Side Jews. Realizing my responsibility for their and my own welfare, I duly sent them, about 9 o'clock A. M. the first day to bathe. Our facilities for this purpose were crude, our only water supply being a spring located about 200 yards from the camp. We had dug a basin below the spring proper and laid down some boards. Standing on these, well soaped, a comrade would dip up and pour over one a few buckets of cold spring water, for which convenience we hunted baths in couples, and were thankful. Having explained the process, I sent off the four boys together, and in due time they returned ,heads wet and faces shining with soap. Ditto the next day and the next, and that afternoon as a reward for duty well and cheerfully done, I let two of them go for a stroll, and down the line they went, until they met Private Kent's bull dog who promptly gave battle and nipped one of them in the leg. In the midst of the excitement arrives the omnipresent C. O. Perry, who, desiring to see the extent of the injury, ordered the urchin stripped. One look was enough. "Sergeant take these men to White Plains and give

Digitized by Google



CAPTAIN THEBAUD, ORDNANCE OFFICER.

Digitized by Google

them a hot bath." Then he came out to see me. They had Tom Sawyered me, but it didn't go with the boss. "You should have seen them wash." Yes, sir," very meekly and dispiritedly. Such is authority. Joy be, at the end of a week, I got a day off, handed over my command and departed. I returned to duty the following afternoon to find that terrible things had happened. One of the Jew boys had gotten curious as to what the rest of us had in our luggage, and in pawing over the Sergeant's grip had found his Automatic. "He did not know it was loaded," and promptly notified the world of his crime by discharging it. The bullet whizzed by his sleeping comrade, out of the tent and past the head of the Sergeant. What became of it subsequently did not develop, but what to do with the boy did. We sat in judgment, decided not to report it, scared him to death, gave him double duty and extra duty and police duty enough to break his back, all of which he did cheerfully, and I am sure will never forget. In addition, his pal licked him.

Our Transportation Department was always weak, and at one time, the flivver quit entirely. Always ready at a pinch, one of our poorer members phoned for his third best car and chauffeur. It was a peach. Nice blue carpet, flower holder and all the fixin's. I remember the carpet, for on my last trip in it I carried nine sloppy cans of K.O. and I know how that carpet looked. The chauffeur was a dandy—very high class. How he condescended, I don't quite know. At any rate, one day a sergeant came up to our Post laughing as if he would split. "Funniest thing I ever saw," he gasped. "Just came by Post..... There was..... (the car owner) down in the road cleaning his mess kit with dust, while the French chauffeur sat on the bank smoking cigarettes and watching him." Nothing better shows the spirit of the men, I think, than this incident.

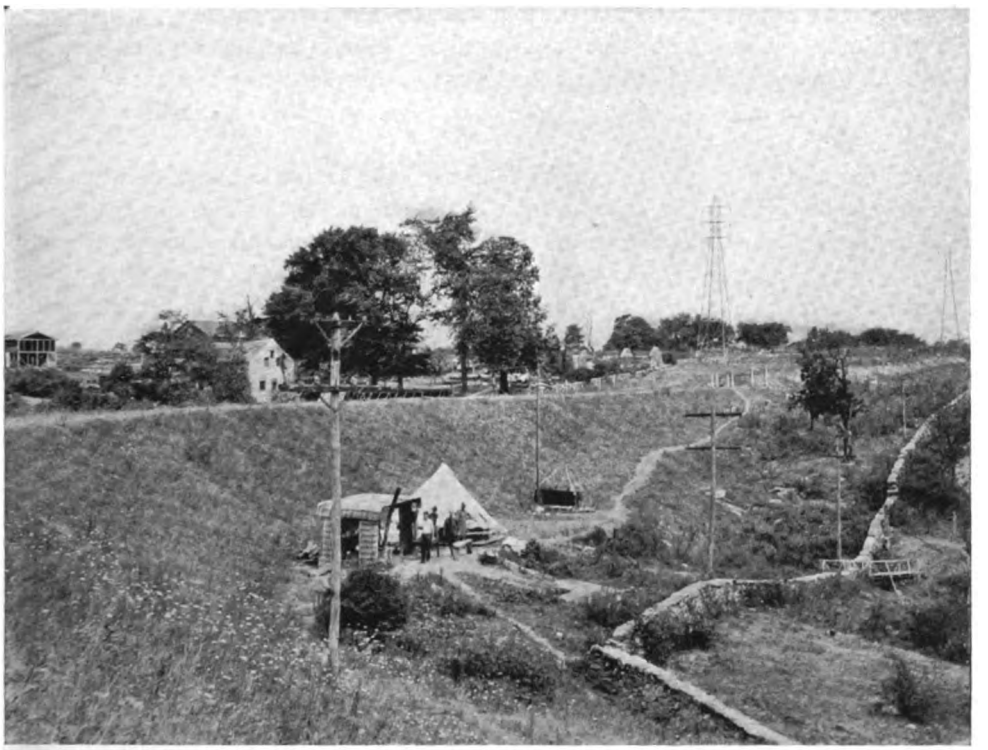
Such incidents as these heighten the Aqueduct existence, but it must not be supposed that there was no seamy side to the experience. On the contrary, hardships aplenty were met and endured without murmuring. The Posts were generally undermanned, the hours of duty long. More than one man had occasion to put in twelve to eighteen hours of duty at a stretch without relief, eating his meals as best he could on Post. But the hardships were never much talked of and now are forgotten, and the only memories that remain are the pleasant ones.

No better set of men ever came together anywhere than the Fourth Battery V. C. A., and the impulse that brought them together sprang from so great a cause that it blotted out any smallness, selfishness or personal ambition that might have existed among them, the result being a radiant cheerfulness under what would be to them, ordinarily, discomforts to be dreaded, a sense of responsibility which precluded shirking, and a spirit of helpfulness and comradeship which smothered incipient disagreements at their start.

Nor can we fail to testify to the great part played by our officers in maintaining this spirit by their consideration and sympathy for the men. They got results and good results by a strict discipline which was always tempered by kindliness and sympathy.

The men did varying turns of duty as their home and business cares permitted,

Digitized by Google



TYPICAL POST ON THE AQUEDUCT.

HEADQUARTERS COMPANY.

Left to Right: Miss Lucas, Corp. Tillinghast, Miss Le Boutillier, Miss Rogers, Sgt. Thompson.

Digitized by Google

from a week's stay up to those who completed the whole occupation. No man who did that duty but was better for it physically, mentally and morally; and, as has been said, it made many of the older men years younger, for they thought they were dead, but found through the experience that they were alive and still able to be useful to their country.

Nor was their example without its influence on younger men, who, when they saw their employers leave their desks, don the "Khaki" and shoulder a rifle, grasped the meaning of it all and hied themselves to the recruiting officer to offer themselves to their Country for her protection and safety.

All in all, the mighty spirit of America was never better shown forth than by the sometimes-derided "has beens" of the Fourth Battery V. C. A., who proved to all who saw or knew of them that patriotism still flames in the hearts of men with silver-thatched heads, and that their brave hearts, actuated by a sense of civic duty, can overcome physical disability that is more apparent than real.

There were a number of officers and men not on the payrolls of the First Provisional Regiment who rendered very valuable ser-

Digitized by Google

vices to that command. Colonel Delafield was placed in command of the State camp at Peekskill and of that part of the First Provisional Regiment which was mobilized there on August 9, 1917, Lieutenant (later Colonel) Burleigh acted as his Adjutant. The Colonel frequently inspected the posts manned by men from his command and did much to alleviate their privations. As trustee of the Special Fund he furnished supplies and equipment to the First Provisional Regiment. How much he did can be estimated by the amount disbursed from the Special Fund of which he was trustee. Over fourteen hundred dollars was expended in supplementing the supplies furnished by the State, covering the entire period during which our provisional batteries were on duty in the First Provisional Regiment. These services and the services of those who

INSPECTING A CULVERT.

Digitized by Google

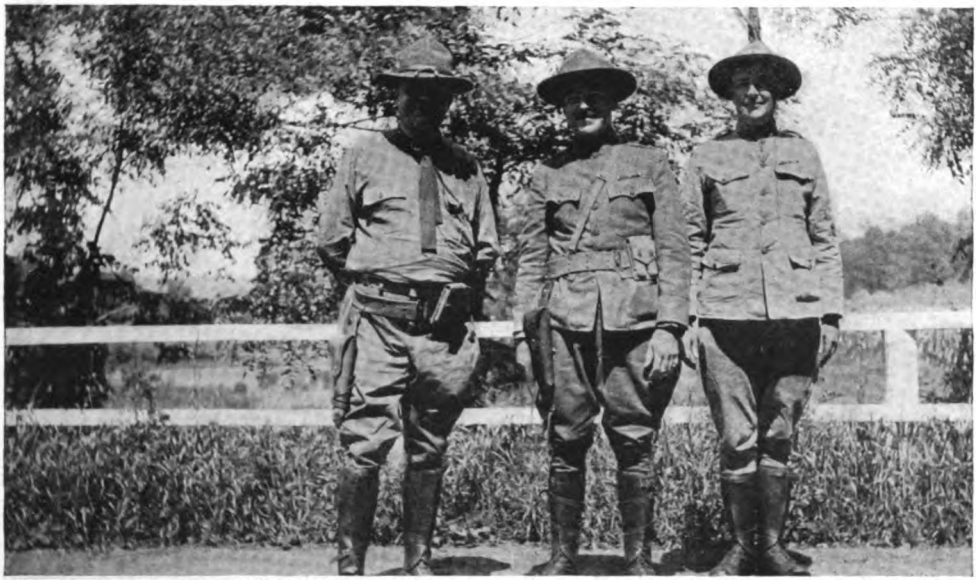
LIEUTENANT TAFT'S HEADQUARTERS.

helped Colonel Delafield by his direction were rendered as part of the military forces of the State called out pursuant to the Governor's order and were rendered without pay. Lieutenant Burleigh made weekly inspections at first for Colonel Delafield but later longer and more extended ones for the Adjutant-General as a member of his staff. Major Edward C. Delafield rendered services in making inspections, forwarding troops, seeing to it that officers and men of his battalion did their full share of the work. Captain Thebaud, our Ordnance Officer, was indefatigable in his care and inspection of the rifles. Captain Chandler Smith, Adjutant, frequently superintended the transportation of men going on duty. Captain Lummis, Commissary, furnished rations for the first contingent and arranged the transportation of the baggage of officers and men. The sergeant of the Headquarters Company worked early and late

Digitized by Google

in supplying casual replacements and in keeping records. Corporal Tillinghast of the same company detailed as chauffeur was always useful. Many officers and men spoke highly of his services. During the entire period Private J. G. Phelps Stokes (later Captain-Adjutant, 9th C. D. C.) was active in confidential work for the Government of the United States relating to national security and defense, and incidentally for the State of New York, part of it conducing largely to the safeguarding of the Aqueduct.

Dr. Charles Alexander Clinton, later Surgeon-Major, Ninth C. A. C. N. Y. G., was serving as a private in the Fourth Battery V. C. A. and, with the other Fourth Battery men, was in Company B, First Provisional Regiment, when he was appointed Assistant-Surgeon and detailed to Regimental Headquarters. He had charge of the Sanitation of all the camps of the Aqueduct. He was greatly beloved and respected by both officers and men.



CAPTAIN LOUIS J. PRAEGER, LIEUTENANT WILLIAM L. SAYERS, SERGEANT SCHUYLER HAMILTON.

Digitized by Google

CHAPTER EIGHT

AS THE MEN SAW IT

THE guarding of the Aqueduct was a remarkable piece of work, particularly when it is borne in mind that it was necessary to fit in the services of men who could give their time in varying lengths. It often happened that men would come for alternate weeks, or even every other or third Saturday. The amount of organization and supervision necessary to keep an adequate force properly distributed under such conditions may well be imagined, but the difficult problem was met and solved and the Aqueduct suffered no damage from prowling enemy sympathizers. To the men who volunteered for this service the arrangement meant hardship for some, but permitted others to serve their country when otherwise it would have been impossible. To many this experience on the Aqueduct is one of the most interesting memories of their lives. Full of comradeship and humor as well as arduous duties, those days will never be forgotten. From the letters written home and the stories told to their friends we may get an idea of the spirit in which the work was carried on. The following is a story told by a mess sergeant in his own words.

"The history of the services of the V. C. A. men on the Aqueduct is primarily a 'personal issue.' At that time, being without a comprehensive system of organization of the service of Supply and Commissary, the work could not have been carried on without the individual who had either usurped or acquired authority, and acted on his own initiative. Not only was it necessary to act in accord with Headquarters, but also in spite of Headquarters, and unless the C. O. at a particular post intended to do all the patrolling and guarding himself, or through his immediate meagre supply of emergency sergeants, he had to do his own recruiting. In this respect, and I am writing regarding Elmsford in particular, Sergeant A. R. Thompson at Colonel Delafield's office worked untiringly, and it is fitting here to pay a tribute to his strenuous efforts in those days of August and September, 1917 to back up the 'marooned' post commander.

"I well remember, acting as Supply and Mess Sergeant, and on one occasion, First

Digitized by Google

Sergeant and Sergeant-of-the-Guard as well, and getting on thereby without friction with myself, telephoning Sergeant Thompson that the fate of New York and the success of prohibition depended upon his securing 'more men,' or I should say 'other men,' and awaiting their arrival on his promise until after ten o'clock, so that the '12 hour on' guard could get their breakfast (10 P. M.) and be ready for Captain Shurick's midnight ride—on the subject of riding, Paul Revere had nothing on this vigilant Captain—I saw him recently (1919) and he informed me he was just catching up on sleep.

In justice to the V. C. A. men, their individual records of endurance should be recorded. Private J. T. L. Doughty, Acting Corporal, Private D. Percy Morgan, Corporal S. A. Crummey, Acting Sergeant; Private W. Irving Kent, Acting Corporal; Private H. A. L. Sand, Private C. A. Sherman, Acting Corporal, at Elmsford worked harder and more hours per day for the Empire State than ever before or since.

Corporal William Fisher Howard (later First Lieutenant, Fourth Company, Ninth C. A. C.,) and Private George H. Ford cooked more food on Friday, August 10th, Saturday, August 11th, and Sunday, August 12th, than they have since eaten.

J. A. Dimond and Gomer H. Rees, aided by Mess Sergeant J. H. Pinckney, Jr., and personally conducted by one chauffeur in the employ of Corporal Charles A. Sherman, and by the said Sherman's limousine car, distributed as much bacon, oatmeal and coffee three times per day as Herbert Hoover did in four years.

It would be well to state here that Sherman gave his car away on his return to civilization. Upholstery and paint do not stand up well under the management of a 'Busy Bee Lunch Room Outfit.'

One of the sights of the camp—enjoyed more by visitors than all else—was to see Sherman's chauffeur smoking in the comfortable body of that car and Sherman washing his dishes by his tent side.

Sergeant T. O'Conor Sloane, Jr.,—later Captain, Ninth C. D. C.,—never slept, as Sergeant of the Guard and First Sergeant at Elmsford Post Headquarters he couldn't. For days at a time he did not have his clothes off nor let his pipe go out.

Perry—good old Jack Perry—met the enemy and every other emergency—no man ever accomplished so much with so little assistance. To make one man do the work of two was his daily task; to make one man do the work of four was his evening recreation. He toiled untiringly, holding the few men he had on their posts days after their time had expired, and in spite of their urgent business calls, by his good fellowship and personality. The whole secret of the V. C. A.'s success in this splendid undertaking often hung on just such 'personal equations.'

Paul Tillinghast—later Captain, Ninth C. D. C.—earned his spurs as the 'supply train' connecting the camp of City Island, the cot and blanket, and the man, by his midnight drives—and the quiet lanes of Westchester were turned into humming highroads by Paul in the Colonel's Franklin car.

Digitized by Google

CO. A STREET, PEEKSKILL, AUG. 9.

PEEKSKILL—BACK FROM CHOW.

Digitized by Google

Here also, Major Helen Bastedo with her Motor Corps girls, laid the foundation of experience that later proved of such great value.

Guarding was but an incident those days; the main duties were cleaning up the post. Perry and Sloane court-martialled the pump in the Elmsford house, and gave it thirty days at hard labor.

Dimond, Ford, and Pinckney whitewashed and screened in the mess shack when they weren't dividing up the 'loaves and fishes' among the hungry horde. Ellard—later Captain Ninth C. A. C.—succeeded Pinckney as mess sergeant, and acquiring a colored cook, a retainer of Captain Lummis—so fed the men that instead of wanting to go home, they found excuses to stay on.

It was a grand and glorious party, more so in retrospection, with no regrets save that each had so little time to give to his State and so little sleep to give to himself.

The attendance record of the Fourth Battery compiled for the State Paymaster's record shows: It contributed 60 men serving a total of 807 days, an average of 13½ days per man.

The nearest Company to the Fourth in comparative service stands the Sixth Company, with 42 men serving an average of 9.2 days per man, and the First Company, with 30 men serving an average of 8 6-10 days per man."

The following are a few of the many expressions of appreciation written by the men while on duty at the Aqueduct, and contributed by their friends and relatives.

"The period, August 15th to 22nd, I spent at Ardsley guarding the Aqueduct, a welcome change from the humdrum of city life, and to show you that I was not inactive, I may say that I was detailed cook and did my regular guard duty, being only relieved if I happened to be on guard when it was necessary for me to attend to the cuisine of my post. The good time I had with the boys induced me to go up again for a week from August 29th to September 5th, when I was acting corporal in charge of Post No. 4, and when, notwithstanding added responsibilities, I believe I did practically my full quota of guard duty.

The broken rest that I experienced for the first night or two soon resolved itself into sounder sleep between times, and I am sure that any of the lads who care to spend alternate weeks doing guard duty as I did, will not alone have a bully time, but will have the satisfaction of knowing they have done their duty to the State, and in further return, will have been benefited by the change and life in the open."
—(Letter of Jack Ball, Sixth Battery.)

"My favorite watch hours when I first went up were from 2 to 6 in the morning. I do not see how one can go through that watch, night after night, from the darkest hour to day break, learning to distinguish foreign sounds from those of the every-day

Digitized by Google

PEEKSKILL, AUG. 9—ERECTING TENTS.

CAPTAIN PERRY'S HEADQUARTERS, ELMSFORD.

Digitized by Google

world about him, studying out the mirages of changing shadows, learning to tell the time from the stars, without experiencing a spiritual elevation which must leave its mark on his life."—(Frederick K. Trask, Banker, Sixth Battery.)

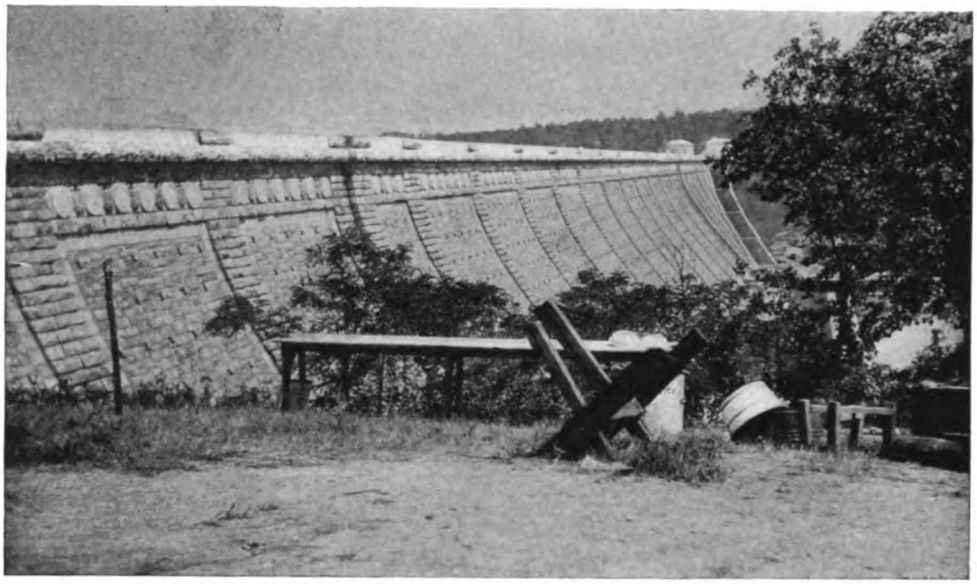
"I have pleasant recollections of several members of the V. C. A., Dr. Ayer and those immediately associated with him on Post 11, and also how green I was. I recall that Lieutenant-Colonel Delafield seemed to be about eight feet tall, and when I was called upon on several occasions to salute him, I had a bad case of stage fright. I also recall that last day spent in New York in the Seventy-First Regiment Armory, where a theatrical company was being trained. There was considerable difficulty in finding various members of the Company, as for a time they seemed to be more interested in the feminine members of the theatrical company than in the I. D. R."—(Letter of Private H. G. Lambert, Ninth Battery, later First Lieutenant Fifty-Second Pioneer Infantry, A. E. F.)

FROM RECOLLECTIONS OF A SERGEANT

One afternoon in the spring I was walking east on 14th Street opposite Union Square. There was a throng of people going my way. As I came opposite the imitation battleship in the Park I heard the sound of the National Anthem. I saw that they were making Colors and of course I stood facing the music at salute. The record crowd seemed to vanish. but when the last notes had sounded I knew the reason. They had followed my example till the street was blocked and police came up to see why. They were not a fine looking crowd, were not well dressed, but the men had their hats off and tears ran down more than one woman's face. They didn't look it, but they were Americans.

I served over eight months in New York City as a Sergeant. It was a wonderful experience. Of course a trim, well-set-up young non-com. was persona gratissima with the girls, but if you wanted anything done give the job to a grizzled old red-faced, gray-mustached Sergeant. When he went in a department store he was no longer mere man beneath the notice of haughty sales ladies. No indeed, he was "it," and from floor walker to cash girl every one wanted to help. Nor was it only in civil life that the Sergeant received the honors due his rank. Often it was his duty to make inquiries and give information to the Headquarters at Governors Island. The Majors and the Lieutenant-Colonels were

Digitized by Google



KENSICO DAM—HEADQUARTERS, COMPANY B.

COMPANY B—STREET AND COOK-SHACK.

Digitized by Google

as crisp and punctilious in giving the Sergeant his title as if he had been a Major-General.

Howard G. Lambert of the Ninth Battery V. C. A., the writer of the following verses, after the Aqueduct duty was over, entered the service of the United States, received his training at Plattsburg, was made a First Lieutenant, served in the A. E. F., 52nd Pioneer Infantry, and is now Captain in the O. R. C.

SONG OF THE AQUEDUCT

(Dedicated to those members of the Veteran Corps of Artillery, S. N. Y., who served in Aqueduct Posts Ten and Eleven, out of Valhalla).

Post Eleven on a foggy night,
Nothing much but the moon in sight;
And the fitful gleam from the lantern red,
Reflected from bayonet point o'erhead.
The crowning song of the evening breeze
Stirring amongst the tops of the trees,
And the far-flung call across the dell—
'Post Ten—And all is well.'

Memory will linger on those days,
When the fog of the years upon us plays,
And oft in the night as we lie abed
We will see again the camp fire red
And hear again as in dream we fare
The sharp cut challenge—'Halt! Who's There?'
We'll remember the cook shack and the tent
Well filled with many a grievous rent.
And the syphon house that's standing white
Against the blackness of the night.
And whether we serve the cause at home,
Or across the seas in France we roam,
We will all remember the fog banks gray
And old Post Eleven, V. C. A.

—*H. G. Lambert,* BATTERY 9.

The following is the story of one sergeant's experience. It is typical of many.

Digitized by Google

"Having been instructed in the Armory to assist Sergeant Hyde, on arriving at Peekskill, I assumed the work of feeding our men; found on investigation there was nothing in the mess hall. We messed on the cold lunch we had brought with us and cold water.

Filled then with energy, we marched back to the Company ground, and put up eighteen tents in two hours. We then washed at the street pump and prepared for mess. On investigating the condition of the kitchen, we found nothing available for use, no tea or coffee even. We, however, messed on our second box of cold lunch and water. I heard no protests.

The orders then were to prepare to receive cots and mess kits at 7 o'clock P. M. Accordingly Sergeant Hastorf marched the men from Camp to the storehouses situated about a half mile from our tents. We found ahead of us several companies of other New York City regiments. We waited in the rapidly growing twilight until 8:30, and then I asked permission of Sergeant Hastorf to ascertain why the equipment was not being distributed and to find out where it was and who had it in charge.

I walked back to the camp, and found that all the officers were in conference. I waited until a figure emerged from the group, and on approaching, found him to be a major. He stated on my inquiring that he would look into the matter of supplying equipment. There were no lanterns, so I borrowed one from a police detail, and with that the Major and I proceeded to the storehouse office. He went inside. I ran over to our company, about five hundred yards away, and suggested to First Sergeant Hastorf that he be prepared to form the Company and follow my lantern wherever it went.

In ten minutes or so, an employee of the Supply Department came out of the office and I followed him (the Major had disappeared). We went to a storehouse, opened the door, and proceeded to fill two lanterns with oil. This we did from a small tin can, using a dipper and spilling the larger part on the floor and doorstep. (It occurs to me that electric lights could be installed.)

Taking the two lanterns, and being joined by a second employee, we proceeded down a wood, closely followed by our company in column of twos. We reached a large barn, unlocked the door, and by the aid of the two lanterns, distributed cots and mess kits to our company. I then went down to the roadway, and suggested to the Sergeant in charge of the two companies there waiting to follow me and receive their equipment. I sent a messenger to Company A, Captain Gage's company, to come down and get their things, as the companies of the 7th and 12th Regiments had followed my suggestions and fallen in line and marched down the road to the Supply house. Company A did not get their equipment until nearly eleven o'clock.

Believing that I had notified all the waiting companies where they could get

Digitized by Google

their supplies, I started back to our camp. Hearing the sound of voices in the neighborhood of the wagon park, I proceeded to investigate, and found there a company of a New York City Regiment. They said they were waiting for their cots. I told them how to get them. (Conclude that they would still have been waiting had they not attracted my attention.)

On going back to Camp, I discovered that Lieutenant Backus, Lieutenant Perry, Major Hodges and Dr. Beebe wanted my lantern which seemed to be the only one (but one) in camp. The next morning early, I repaired to the mess hall. The food had not arrived. I climbed into a Packard car, and suggested to the driver that we go down the road to find the wagon with the supplies. Sergeant Hyde said it was on the way. We discovered a truck containing a portion of our food about a mile from camp and followed it home. Co. B. was the first fed that morning and the first fed that noon. Major Hodges called for volunteers to drive a truck to the station. Never drove a truck before, but found it could be done with a little patience. Found a good strong man to help me, as the brakes would not hold and the hill was quite steep. Got two loads of baggage to the station.

Was directed by Lieutenant Backus to load a truck with Co. B. baggage and escort it to Elmsford, twenty-three miles or so. Did it by 5.30 and reported to Major Hodges there. It was a very nice ride, but tiresome. Proprietor of a hotel in Tarrytown insisted on giving us a good dinner at his expense; Mr. Parks of the Florence Inn. Arrived at Elmsford about 5:30. Found Major Hodges and others by the roadside. Unloaded the portion of baggage, belonging to men assigned there. The 23rd Regiment still occupied the Headquarters house and mess house and stable. Lieutenant Perry, on learning that I had had my dinner, directed me to take charge of twenty-seven men who had just arrived with Captain Chandler Smith, while he took the portion of the original command to White Plains for dinner. (Think Private Crummey of the Fourth Battery loaned Sergeant Ferguson $15 to pay the bill at the hotel; see voucher delivered to Captain Lummis August 15th by me at Elmsford.) As the above twenty-seven men had with them two boxes each of lunch, Lieutenant Perry ordered me to see that they had mess.

Next morning, we of the original command proceeded to White Plains for breakfast (Sergeant Ferguson paying for all as per voucher in package delivered to Captain Lummis at Elmsford August 15th). While in White Plains as mess-sergeant with Sergeant Ferguson, we purchased an old cook stove, wire netting and whitewash for the old mess shack; pots, pans, lanterns, kerosene oil, axes, soap, dish towels, plates, knives, forks, spoons, broom, nails, fly paper, etc., as we had no equipment of this kind whatsoever. These goods were delivered Saturday. Corporal Howard and Private Ford volunteered to cook for the command. After cooking, we put the food in Private Disbrow's Cadillac and distributed it over nine outposts.

Digitized by Google

It might be mentioned that the men arriving Friday night had no equipment, and we in consequence shared our blankets with them, and none of us had enough, and the men generally were cold at night. However, we feel fine and enjoy the experience. From Tuesday A. M. 8.14 to Wednesday evening 8.15, through absence of other sergeants, I acted as top sergeant, mess-sergeant, supply-sergeant and sergeant-of-the-guard. Monday night, I patrolled post No. 7. from 2 to 5 A. M., and have not had my clothes off since Friday, August 10th. Lieutenant H. P. Williams called Monday or Tuesday. He was the first officer from Headquarters on supplies we had seen. He took some notes of what we needed. Captain Bates of the Quartermaster's Department called Tuesday night. He stated we could requisition supplies from Peekskill, such as canned goods, etc. Glad to know it. but we have no requisition blanks. Captain Bates thought we were handling the matter very satisfactorily, considering that we were assuming all the responsibility of feeding our men and were thrown entirely on our own resources. We never had sufficient cots, blankets, nor lanterns. Were it not for Corporal Tillinghast of Colonel Delafield's office proceeding to City Island and obtaining two tents, about fifteen cots and lanterns, our men could not have been sheltered, nor our outposts provided with lanterns. (N This equipment was purchased by the special fund hereinbefore described.) I assumed the authority to telephone Tillinghast to get these supplies, and desire to record the great services he rendered the command by bringing us these badly needed supplies on Saturday."

(From "Recollections of a Sergeant")

"I had just been instructed to wear my uniform every day while on duty in the Vice-Commandant's office, had been up to Mr. Harmon's office opposite the City Hall about the campaign for funds, and was walking back to the office. When I was in front of St. Paul's I saw an officer coming. He was a Regular, a Major General. I was scared to death. I saluted; he returned it, and as he did so, smiled and said: "Good morning, Private." Then I saw something: It was the soul of the Army. I belonged to him; he was mine; there was a solidarity, a real union, and often afterwards, if I felt a temptation towards slackness, the thought of that "Good morning, Private" gave me a brace.

We had spent two days at Headquarters at Pine's Bridge perfecting and sorting out records of the services of V. C. A. men in the First Provisional Regiment, N. Y. G., and had worked hard. There were the two stenographers in Colonel Delafield's office, in addition to the historian and Corporal Tillinghast. And here I want to record an appreciation of the services of those two American girls, Miss Louise Florence Lucas and Miss Constance Annie Rogers who were always cheerful, always ready, always loyal.

Digitized by Google

Their assistance was invaluable; their memories marvels of accuracy. They often worked late in the evening. The paper work could not have been done without their help. They certainly deserve well of the State. On this occasion they gave up their Saturday and Sunday rests to spend those days in the trying task of listing names, dates, etc.

We had finished at Headquarters Sunday afternoon, and visited the post on the Kensico Dam, had our pictures taken by Captain Thebaud, and were on our way to the City.

We came to a wonderful sight; a number of National Guard Regiments were camped in the Park, and there was a mass of people clustering about the enlisted men, for it was their last Sunday here. It certainly touched the heart and stirred the soul. Oh, the glorious, magnificent loyalty of that quiet multitude! And as the last rays of the setting sun, the almost level rays, penetrated the haze, it seemed as if it were a halo." (Ibid)

"This is Mrs. Private ..... I have just come from the country and find a note from my husband saying that he has gone on duty on the Aqueduct and that if I would ring you up, maybe you could tell me where he was stationed—oh! thank you so much, Sergeant; do you suppose if I went up in a car I could see him for a minute? I'm awfully proud of my husband, Sergeant; wasn't it fine of him to volunteer?"

A paper was published by the men while on the Aqueduct which gives many interesting and amusing episodes. The first issue read as follows:

August, 1917. H. M. Baukhage, Editor. 4th Battery V. C. A. Co. B 1st Prov. Reg.

THE WATER WAGON

The Unofficial Organ of Battery B., Elmsford Headquarters
MOTTO: "Water, water everywhere and nothing else to drink."

This is the first editorial shot to be fired by the enlisted men of the V. C. A. since the corps has become a part of the First Provisional Regiment. "The Water Wagon" has no great message to deliver. It has no editorial policy. It does not intend to employ military experts who will show Colonel Rose how to win the war. In short, to descend to quotation, "the spirit, sir, is one of mockery." We believe that the men of Company B should indulge in a little frivolity because they have earned it, they came, they saw, they conquered.

They came at the first blast of the whistle. When Captain Shurick sounded the dash and three dots he faced a body of men ready and willing to drop every single personal responsibility and to step forth to do their bit whatever it might be.

Digitized by Google

They saw. At Peekskill, in the mess hall with hundreds of other men in uniform, they met their commanding officer, they heard Colonel Rose's ringing words and they saw that they had a man's size job before them.

They conquered. At Elmsford and Kensico they came, hot, tired, and determined. They met the difficulties and inconveniences that such a radical change in their lives meant and they conquered them.

And their work was not in vain, for it is rumored that a message went up to Albany from a certain high officer, which, it is said, ran as follows: "If the rest of the regiment is half as good as the Veteran Corps of Artillery I shall be satisfied."

Owing to the paper shortage (some sixty million tons) the cot shortage (some six inches), and the shortage of leave (almost none left), "The Water Wagon" will appear Ford size this issue. If we get that appropriation through Congress the next number may be larger. If your Post isn't mentioned in this issue it's your own fault. Send items of interest, Care of "The Water Wagon," Post 8.

* * * *

The editorial policy of "The Water Wagon" doesn't permit us to mention names of privates or non-coms. However, if you think that something you have done ought to be brought to the attention of your superior officer, or if you are terribly anxious to get a couple of stripes on your sleeves; well, thanks, we do smoke. Drop in at Post 8 some time.

ASSEMBLY

The First Battery's loss is the Navy's gain. Congratulations Capt. Gage!

* * * *

Lieutenant Perry went home on leave, not because he wanted to be a living proof that his sentries were bad shots but because he wanted to give Lieutenant Smith a chance to show his metal. Don't worry, Lieutenant Smith, if they don't recognize you they'll shoot at you and that's pretty good assurance that they won't hit you.

* * * *

Rumor says that the Brooklyn Battery has volunteered as a unit and will have a hundred men on the job. Well, more power to them! for it means more sleep for us.

* * * *

Post 9 reports the completion of a burglar alarm which it is claimed will not only frighten away the trespasser, but works in such a manner as not to disturb the sentry's sleep. The acting corporal has taken out a patent on it. In order to further prevent being disturbed the Post has created the fable of a haunted house and spread it among the inhabitants.

* * * *

Digitized by Google

When asked if he had any general comments to make the Corporal stated "Well all I can say is that this is the best post in the section."

* * * *

One of the sentries at Number 8 challenged a suspicious figure the other night and as no answer was given took for granted it must be an enemy alien. The guard was called out and captured nothing less than a somewhat bedraggled feline. The cat was immediately called "Hindenburg," and if it doesn't die of trachoma or fall into the oatmeal it will be made camp mascot.

* * * *

Number 8 is known to the mess squad as the Tapeworm Post. We don't know why.

* * * *

At Number 7 they have constructed a park bench out of the old manhole cover. Fortunately it was placed near the road where the Sergeant of the Guard could find it conveniently when looking for the sentry.

* * * *

Number 7, it is stated, is known as the Chastity Post. It is in the heart of civilization and stands exceedingly high with the surrounding population. Investigation by a "Water Wagon" representative revealed the fact that the average age of the man on duty is 82½.

Number 6 is noted for its bath. Some genuis got permission to run a water meter and now announces the price as follows: Baths; privates, 25 cents; non-coms, 50 cents; officers, $1.00. "If cleanliness is next to Godliness" said the corporal, "the officers here must be an ungodly lot. So far we have not had a single dollar bath and very few 50 cent ones." "Visitors," he added, "are always welcome at Number 6.

* * * *

When one of the sentries at Number 1 got no answer to his challenge he didn't call out the guard. Upon investigation it was learned that he had challenged a jackass that had wandered up the road from White Plains. When his Corporal asked him why he didn't call out the guard when he got no answer he said, "Oh, I thought it was the Sergeant."

* * * *

TO THE ROOKY

Now when it comes your turn,
You have simply got to learn
Before you're very many hours older
That the thing that really counts
Is to put in every ounce
Of the stuff between the elbow and the shoulder.

Digitized by Google

You may feel it isn't right
When you've been on guard all night
And your blankets only seem to make you colder
That they rout you out at four
Make you grab your gun once more
With a cramp between your elbow and your shoulder.

But just take a tip from me
Whatever you may be
Butcher, lawyer, banker, clerk or officeholder,
When you've done your little bit
You'll be gol-darn proud of it
And those stripes between your elbow and your shoulder.

A DRAMA IN MILITARISM

Scene: V. C. A. Camp, Somewhere-on-the-Aqueduct.

Persons: A gentleman-private, a chauffeur.

The private is discovered cleaning up the mess kits after a hearty meal of beans, prunes and condensed coffee.

(Enter a chauffeur)

Chauffeur (to Private)—Beg pardon, sir, but Mrs. Blank asked me to remind you not to forget your medicine. And the steward of the club asks if he shall send up your perfectos as usual.

Private—Tell my wife that I've chucked out the medicine, and I'm smoking a pipe.

Chauffeur—Yes, sir.

Private—Don't call me "sir," I'm no officer.

Chauffeur—Yes, sir. Can I help you in any way, sir.

Private—Hell, no man, can't you see I'm busy cleaning up these dishes and I don't want to be bothered.

Chauffeur—(Flabbergasted) Your partner phoned this morning.

Private—Tell my partner I've got something else to do besides worry about business. Now beat it.

Chauffeur (Retiring)—Gee! This is the life.

Digitized by Google

A NIGHT'S DUTY ON THE AQUEDUCT. SERGEANT MACK'S REPORT TO CAPTAIN GAGE.

Headquarters, Upper Sector, Aqueduct Guard, First Prov. Regt., N. Y. G., Dobbs Ferry Road and Aqueduct, New York

August 18, 1917.

To Captain S. E. Gage, Commanding-Officer,

From Acting Sergeant W. W. Mack, in charge of Posts One and Two.

Subject: Events of the Night of August 17-18, 1917.

"At about midnight on August 17 Sergeant Hopson in charge of Posts Three, Four and Five, appeared at headquarters with Mr. Christianson of Hartsdale, president of the Hartsdale Home Defense League, and asked for an interview with Captain Gage. He told Captain Gage that there was a belief in Hartsdale that a conspiracy was on hand there to destroy the Aqueduct and that several persons had heard a mysterious and violent explosion last Sunday morning which they believe was the premature detonation of some hidden explosives designed for malicious purposes. Suspicion of the residents of Hartsdale has been directed against certain people and was centered upon a certain dwelling appearing deserted but which men were stated to have entered recently. The names of certain people under suspicion were mentioned. Mr. Christianson asked for military aid in searching these premises and he stated that he had two men of his Home Defense League on watch at this house.

Captain Gage, accompanied by First Sergeant Scott, Sergeant Hopson and a detail of men were taken in automobiles to Hartsdale and thoroughly examined the aforesaid premises without any result whatsoever except that of greatly easing the minds of the disturbed residents of that community. The expedition returned to Headquarters at about 1 A. M. August 18.

At 2 P. M., August 18, Sergeants Jones and Hollander being on duty at Post No. 1, an alarm was given by the firing of two shots in rapid succession in the vicinity of the large transverse culvert on Post No. 1. The alarm was given at Headquarters by Lieutenant Sillcocks and Captain Gage and members of the Guard turned out. Sergeant Jones leaving Sergeant Hollander on post came immediately to Headquarters, to state the reasons for the alarm. The statement made by Sergeants Jones and Hollander is substantially as follows: They went on post at midnight. After making several tours without noticing any unusual circumstances they sat down for a brief period of rest on the edge of the Aqueduct at the large transverse culvert, one man being on either side. The night was clear but the visibility at this point is occasionally low on account of local fog from a nearby frog pond. Sergeant Jones

Digitized by Google

called the attention of Sergeant Hollander to two dark objects near the entrance of the culvert which looked like men creeping forward. They watched for a moment or two and seeing a continued movement they challenged. The objects did not halt and accordingly by mutual agreement each man fired one shot at these objects which turned and hastily disappeared into the darkness. Both men are agreed that the circumstances were suspicious and unusual and they acted in accordance with orders on this sector.

Relief being due at 2 A. M., shortly after this occurrence, Privates Koop and White relieved Sergeants Jones and Hollander. This occurrence in connection with the circumstances at Hartsdale led Captain Gage to station himself with the relief, taking post on the top of the transverse culvert. Capain Gage having been up practically all night to this time, lay down in blanket and poncho to sleep, with instructions to be awakened upon the slightest suspicious circumstance. Sergeant Hollander also remained with the relief until the post was relieved at 4 A. M. by Acting Sergeant Mack. Privates Koop and White who patrolled the post vigorously and thoroughly reported no further suspicious circumstances. Catpain Gage remained on the post until 5:30 A. M. At that time the Aqueduct and Captain Gage were still there. Sergeant Mack at daybreak carefully examined the transverse culvert including the barbed wire and steel netting and reported that it was undisturbed. There were no indications of any trespass that could be observed. Captain Gage awoke about 5:30 and went to his tent.

At about 2:30 A. M., shortly after the beginning of the circumstances detailed above, Acting Sergeant Cruse in charge of Post No. 2 arrived at Headquarters and awakened the Sergeant of the Guard stating that Private Verdin was seriously ill, having severe chill accompanied by vomiting and other serious distress. He asked for medical attention. There was none at the Post. Lieutenant Sillcocks to whom the matter was referred in the absence of Captain Gage, as previously described, instructed Sergeant Richard, who happened to be at the Post with his automobile, to proceed with Sergeant Cruse to Post No. 2 and if necessary convey the sick man to a hospital in White Plains for immediate medical attention. Sergeant Scott of Headquarters, who is a personal friend of Private Verdin, also accompanied the expedition and rendered first aid. Private Verdin refused to leave the Post and Sergeants Scott and Richard returned to Headquarters about an hour later. Their report was not made to Headquarters until morning. At 6 A. M., August 18, Acting Sergeant Mack visited Post No. 2 and found Private Verdin entirely recovered and busily engaged in preparing breakfast for the detail assigned to that Post.

Outside of the circumstances detailed above, the night of August 17-18, 1917, was calm and uneventful."

Digitized by Google

THE MINUTE MEN OF TODAY

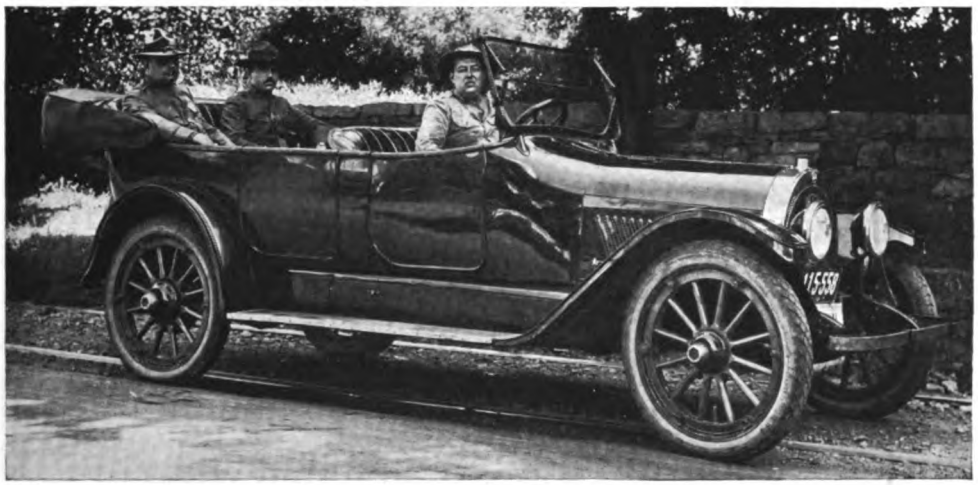
They mustered at eight in the morning,
  The men of the Veteran Corps,
And upheld the fame
Of their ancestors' name,
The brave Minute Men of yore.

The doctor relinquished his practise;
  The lawyer stopped short on his case;
The scribe dropped his pen;
The Stage gave its men;
  The artist stepped up into place.

The preacher came down from his pulpit;
  The broker came forth from his bank;
While each craft and mart,
Gave a generous part
  Of its best to the file and the rank.

And so they went into the service;
  The men of the V. C. of A.,
Upholding the Corps
As their sires did before—
  They're the Minute Men of Today.

(From "Versified Adventures of the V. C. A.")



AN INSPECTION TRIP.

Digitized by Google

CHAPTER NINE

THE TRANSFER TO THE NINTH COAST ARTILLERY CORPS

THE work had succeeded wonderfully. The small body of four sections of eight or ten men each, had grown to three battalions of four full batteries each. A provisional battery was forming in Yonkers, some of whose men had done duty on the Aqueduct. The officers of two companies in one of the large athletic clubs were talking seriously of joining; groups of men in various localities were considering the question of forming batteries or platoons. The commission of officers had gone abroad under the auspices of the War Department. On the other hand, there were some very serious handicaps. The Corps was an ancient organization, but in some ways its affairs were gravely complicated. The Veteran Corps of Artillery had consolidated with the Society of the War of 1812. They had been incorporated under the law of 1875 as a patriotic society; various acts had been passed by the legislature affecting the Society and Corps, acts inartistically drawn, ineptly expressed and of doubtful meaning. The Commandant was a man in his seventy-eighth year. Under the statutory regulations, the staff was permanent, elected for the term of a year, and the staff is the eyes, the ears, the hands of the C. O. There were no clear dividing lines between the functions and duties of the Council of Administration and the Board of Officers, or of the duties and authority of the C. O. of the Detachment. The State was forming a new militia in place of the National Guard, now in the United States Service. The Council of Administration had passed resolutions that the V. C. A. conform to the New York Guard, retaining it ancient privileges. General Bell had been relieved from duty at Governors Island and ordered to Camp Upton. Adjutant-General Stotesbury had resigned, and General Charles H. Sherrill appointed in his place. The Commander-in-Chief made two decisions affecting the Corps. First: that it be trans-

Digitized by Google

ferred to the New York Guard, entering it without any special customary or ancient privileges; Second: That it give up its scheme of anti-aircraft defense.

These decisions were a bitter disappointment. The men loved the old organization; the older men particularly had strong feelings of loyalty to it, for only by means of it had they been able to enter the active service they loved; only by means of it had they been able to wear the uniform of which they were so proud, but they were soldiers—they had offered to serve, promising to obey the orders of the Commander-in-Chief.

To give up the anti-aircraft defense work was also a bitter disappointment. It was a distinguished service; it was a chance to get under fire; it was a possible opportunity to shoot at our country's foes, but the members of the Corps were soldiers, these were orders. They swallowed their disappointment—set their teeth—and obeyed orders. As one of them has said, "Now that the war is over, sitting in our homes in front of the fire in the silence of the night, we can say to the grim old warriors who served under Washington and Scott, whose faces look down on us from the walls, 'We obeyed orders, Sir.'"

The following order attaching the Veteran Corps of Artillery State of New York, to Headquarters, First Brigade, New York Guard, and transferring the Provisional Batteries with Field and Battalion Staffs to the Ninth Coast Artillery Corps was drafted by the venerable Commandant of the Veteran Corps of Artillery, Brevet Major-General Asa Bird Gardiner, and by him submitted to the Adjutant-General of the State, who forwarded it to Brigadier-General George Rathbone Dyer, commanding the First Brigade, for his approval. It was approved by these officers and signed by the Governor, October 8, 1917, without change from its original form as drafted by the Commandant. After the order had been approved by the Governor, it was conveyed to Brigadier-General George R. Dyer over the telephone, who immediately ordered over the telephone "Lieutenant-Colonel John Ross Delafield, then Vice-Commandant, to assemble his men and transfer the

Digitized by Google

Twelve Provisional Batteries of the Veteran Corps of Artillery of the State of New York, with all their equipment and property, as soon as possible to the Armory of the former Ninth Coast Defense Command at 125 West 14th Street, New York City, and there to hold such property subject to the order of the Commanding-General of the First Brigade:"

"STATE OF NEW YORK,
THE ADJUTANT-GENERAL'S OFFICE
ALBANY

GENERAL ORDERS No. 46 — Albany, October 8, 1917.

I. The Veteran Corps of Artillery, S. N. Y., is hereby attached to headquarters, 1st Brigade, New York Guard.

II. The provisional batteries, with field and battalion staffs, attached to said Corps and organized for National emergency under confirmatory orders dated General Headquarters, Adjutant-General's Office, Albany, July 16, 1917, are hereby detached from said Corps, and will be consolidated into a regiment of not more than six hundred officers and men, which will be known as the 9th Coast Artillery Corps, New York Guard, and is hereby assigned to the Armory at 125 West 14th Street, New York City, lately occupied by the 9th Coast Defense Command, N. G., N. Y. Any enrolled man in any of these provisional batteries thus transferred who is a qualified enrolled member in the Veteran Corps of Artillery, S. N. Y., and who may so elect prior to November 1st, 1917, shall not be taken up on the muster roll of the said 9th Coast Artillery Corps but his name and residence will be promptly communicated to the Commandant of the Veteran Corps of Artillery, S. N. Y.

III. Lieutenant-Colonel John Ross Delafield, Veteran Corps of Artillery, S. N. Y., is hereby detached from the same and appointed Colonel of the 9th Coast Artillery Corps, hereby organized, and will consolidate and arrange the same into companies to meet the requirements of this order, and report to these headquarters any officers or men made supernumerary by so doing.

IV. Until further orders the 9th Coast Artillery Corps will perform duties as Infantry.

By Command of the Governor:

CHARLES H. SHERRILL,
The Adjutant-General.

Official:
(Seal) EDWARD J. WESTCOTT,
Major, Assistant to the Adjutant-General."

Digitized by Google

A few of the duly qualified members signified their desire not to be taken up on the rolls of the Ninth, and resumed their old time drills with the obsolete Gatlings and sabres under order No. 20 printed below.

The following officers remained with the Detachment:

Brevet Major-General Asa Bird Gardiner, Commandant,
Captain Chandler Smith, Adjutant,
Captain Benjamin Rush Lummis, Commissary,
Captain Norman Bentley Gardiner, Quartermaster,
Captain Edmund Banks Smith, Chaplain,
First Lieutenant Bryce Metcalf, Sixth Battery,
Second Lieutenant Electus T. Backus, Fourth Battery.

There were in all eleven hundred eighty-one officers and men in the Field, Staff and Provisional Batteries. Of these eight hundred and thirty-one served in the New York Guard—of whom two hundred and twelve became commissioned officers. There were also one hundred and sixty-seven who served in the Army and Navy, of whom ninety-two became commissioned officers. Many more served in the Red Cross and Young Men's Christian Association both at home and overseas and many others served the Federal Government in various civilian capacities. One hundred and thirty-seven served both in the New York Guard and the Federal services.

The story of the subsequent services rendered by the officers and men in other commands will be found in the following pages and in the histories of the Thirteenth, the Twenty-Third Regiments of the New York Guard, and the Army and Navy of the United States.

General Gardiner having asserted that, pursuant to order No. 46, which he drafted, members of the Veteran Corps of Artillery attached to Brigade Headquarters were to enjoy the alleged special rights and privileges which the Veteran Corps of Artillery had heretofore claimed to enjoy, the following telegram on October 9 was sent by the Adjutant-General to Brigadier-General George R.

Digitized by Google

Dyer to be called to the attention of General Gardiner, the Commandant of said Corps:

"STATE OF NEW YORK
THE ADJUTANT-GENERAL'S OFFICE
ALBANY

October 9, 1917.

General George R. Dyer,
66 Broadway, New York, N. Y.

Am just in receipt of a telegram reporting that none of the six hundred men of the Veteran Corps of Artillery who are entering the New York Guard as the Ninth Regiment has any desire to go in with any more rights than other members of the New York Guard. The order that you recommended in regard to the Veteran Corps of Artillery has been issued by this office and in regard to paragraph first thereof you will please call the attention of General Gardiner, Commandant, that his Corps is being attached to the headquarters of the First Brigade, New York Guard, on exactly the terms that every other member enters that guard, which means that they do so upon the express waiver of all and any special rights and privileges heretofore enjoyed, second that the officers commanding the body so attached to your headquarters will be commissioned with no higher rank than that appropriate to the number of men he brings in, and that all rules and regulations governing the officers and men of the New York Guard will apply to the officers and men of the Veteran Corps of Artillery, third, and that hereafter no military organization will be allowed headquarters in any New York Armory unless and until they join the New York Guard.

CHARLES H. SHERRILL,
The Adjutant-General."

The telegram referred to in the above was as follows:

"Brigadier-General Charles H. Sherrill,
The Adjutant-General,
Albany, N. Y.

I wish to acknowledge receipt of your telegram of this date. None of the six hundred men who would go into the New York Guard has any desire to go with any more rights than any other members of the Guard and I will bring your telegram strongly to their attention so that there can be no misunderstanding in this regard.

GEORGE W. BURLEIGH."

Digitized by Google

which was in reply to the following:

"STATE OF NEW YORK
THE ADJUTANT-GENERAL'S OFFICE
ALBANY

October 8, 1917.

"Captain George W. Burleigh,
52 Wall St.,
New York, N. Y.,

You will please make it clear to your associates in the Veteran Corps of Artillery that the six hundred men who come into the New York Guard as a result of negotiations now nearing conclusion with General Dyer will enter that Guard with no more special rights and privileges than any other member of the Guard. It is necessary to make this very clear because of misunderstandings in this regard which have been constantly arising during the last fortnight.

CHARLES H. SHERRILL,
The Adjutant-General."

These telegrams were despatched because of an order issued by Brevet Major-General Asa Bird Gardiner, Colonel-Commandant, on October 4, 1917, which was as follows:

"THE VETERAN CORPS OF ARTILLERY
of the
STATE OF NEW YORK
1790-1917
Commandant's Office

ARMORY
Park Avenue and 34th Street
Orders, No. 20 } New York City, October 4, 1917.

1. In consequence of the National Guard of this State having voluntarily entered the military service of the United States and been discharged from the Militia, General Orders No. 37 of August 3, 1917, and No. 40 of September 1, 1917, from General Headquarters, Albany, require the organization of a New York Guard under the general provisions of Section 120 Military Law, and that Depot Units of the Guard be established throughout the State, not to exceed 15,000 rank and file.

Pursuant, therefore, to orders from superior authority, the duties of anti-aircraft gun preparedness devolved on the Veteran Corps of Artillery, S. N. Y., by confirmatory orders from A. G. O. of July 16, 1917, are discontinued.

Digitized by Google

II. The Artillery Service Detachment of this Corps will resume its original Field Artillery Organization of date March 13, 1917, composed of those duly enrolled and qualified by statute for membership in the same under Chapter 91, Laws of 1895, or Chapter 513, Laws of 1913.

Any such member, however, who may desire to remain in a Provisional Battery by this order detached from the Service Detachment, will make the request to these Headquarters on or before November 1, 1917, and the transfer will then be regularly made.

In like manner, any enrolled member of a Provisional Battery not actually qualified for statutory Corps membership will, on his application, be forthwith transferred to the Service Department to complete his term of enlistment. The Provisional Battery Commanders will, respectively, without delay, send to Captain Benjamin Rush Lummis, Veteran Corps of Artillery, S. N. Y., at his office, 25 West 33rd Street, New York City, for the information of the Commandant, a list of the enrolled members in his Battery who elect to be transferred to the Coast Artillery Organization or to remain in the Artillery Service Detachment of this Historic Corps.

The Service Detachment will, as a Field Artillery Organization, resume machine gun drill, sabre and pistol practice and perform the prescribed number of drills.

III. The several Provisional Batteries in this Corps, excepting those enrolled rank and file above excepted, are hereby detached from The Veteran Corps of Artillery, S. N. Y., and will be consolidated into a regiment of not more than 600 officers and soldiers for the purpose, on receipt of orders from superior authority to that effect, to be designated the Ninth Coast Artillery Corps and assigned to the Armory, 125 West 14th Street, New York City, formerly occupied by the Ninth Coast Defense Command, N. G. N. Y.

IV. Lieutenant-Colonel John Ross Delafield is relieved of the command of The Artillery Service Detachment of The Veteran Corps of Artillery, S. N. Y., and detached from Corps Service, and hereby assigned to the charge and command of these several Provisional Batteries, and will consolidate and rearrange the same into a regiment so as to comply with forthcoming orders from the Adjutant-General's Office, and will act as Colonel commanding these Batteries until the pleasure of the Governor shall be known, and will report them to Brigadier-General George R. Dyer, commanding First Brigade District, subject to the foregoing exceptions as to duly enrolled members retained before November 1, 1917, in the Artillery Service Detachment of this Corps.

V. Majors Edward C. Delafield, Francis Russell Stoddard, Jr., and William L. Hodges and Captains Chandler Smith, Adjutant, and Howard Thayer Kingsbury, Paymaster, and the several Battalion staff officers, are hereby transferred and assigned to said Coast Artillery Organization and will report to Colonel Delafield for duty with the same.

Digitized by Google

VI. The Field Music of The Artillery Service Detachment and Band will continue on duty with the Veteran Corps of Artillery, S. N. Y.

VII. Captain Chandler Smith will at once, on receipt of this order, procure from the office of George W. Burleigh, 52 Wall Street, New York City, the records of this Corps, together with the card catalogues and all enlistment papers of the Corps, and send them to the office of Captain Benjamin Rush Lummis, Veteran Corps of Artillery, S. N. Y., 25 West 33rd Street, New York City, which will be, until further orders, the office to which communications for the commandant will be sent.

When Lieutenant-Colonel Delafield has consolidated and arranged his command, a list of the enlisted rank and file thereof hereby transferred will be sent to these Headquarters. The enlistment papers of such rank and file will then be turned over for permanent file in the records of said Coast Artillery Organization.

VIII. The Commandant cannot close this order without expressing deep regret at severance of official relations with the Provisionally engaged members of the Corps.

The manner in which duty has been performed, the high character of such membership and the harmony, courtesy and good feeling which has prevailed during duty at City Island Camp of Instruction, or on the active, important and exacting service guarding the City of New York's water supply, have brought highest encomiums from military men and from civilians who witnessed how the duty was performed.

The Commandant hopes that these gentlement will have as pleasant and profitable experience in a military sense in the Coast Artillery Corps service as in the Historic Corps of Field Artillery we all love, which still under all organizing Militia Acts of Congress from the first of May 8, 1792, to the latest of June 3, 1916, both inclusive, has been continued with the same organization as the Continental Corps of Artillery of the War of the Revolution and directly authorized by the same statutes to retain its accustomed and ancient privileges.

ASA BIRD GARDINER,
Colonel-Commandant,
Bvt. Major-General S. N. Y."

The above purporting to be an order reorganizing the Artillery Service Detachment without the authority of the Adjutant-General, led to the following letter from the Adjutant-General:

STATE OF NEW YORK

THE ADJUTANT-GENERAL'S OFFICE

ALBANY

Major-General Asa Bird Gardiner, October 11, 1917.
Suffern, N. Y.

My dear General:

I have read your Circular of October 4th, and feel constrained to call your attention to a few errors.

Digitized by Google

We are not organizing depot units, nor are we proceeding under Section 120 of the Military Law.

The last sentence of your order may be misleading, because no men from your organization are coming into the New York Guard except upon a special waiver of all 'accustomed and ancient privileges.' It would be highly improper and entirely un-American to have a privileged class in the New York Guard, and whoever comes into it must come into it on exactly the same terms as all the others.

Very Sincerely,

(Signed) CHARLES H. SHERRILL,

The Adjutant-General."

The reason the batteries in the V. C. A. were termed "provisional" was because they had not been mustered in in accordance with the direction of the Adjutant-General. The Headquarters Company had the lists ready and were waiting the decision of the Commandant on the forms to be used.

In order that there should be no misunderstanding, General Dyer sent Colonel Delafield the following letter, which ended the matter as far as the officers and men who were transferred to the Ninth were concerned.

"HEADQUARTERS 1st PROVISIONAL BRIGADE, N. Y. G.
Park Avenue and Thirty-Fourth Street

New York, October 15, 1917.

Colonel John Ross Delafield,
27 Cedar Street,
New York City.

Dear Colonel Delafield:

I am informed that Colonel Gardiner has issued orders to certain officers formerly of the Veteran Corps of Artillery in regard to their batteries. You will please advise all your officers that all the batteries of the Veteran Corps of Artillery are now members of the Ninth Coast Artillery Corps, New York Guard, under your command, as Colonel, by order of the Adjutant-General and they may disregard any orders they may have received or may hereafter receive from Colonel Gardiner, except those men who are qualified, enrolled members of the Veteran Corps of Artillery who may before November 1st elect to remain in the Veteran Corps of Artillery, which is by the same order attached to Headquarters 1st Brigade, N. Y. That the members so electing are attached on exactly the terms that every

Digitized by Google

other member enters the New York Guard, which means that they do so upon the express waiver of all and any special rights and privileges heretofore enjoyed. That the officers commanding such body so attached to Headquarters will be commissioned with no higher rank than that appropriate to the number of men he brings in, and that all rules and regulations governing the officers and men of the New York Guard will apply to the officers and men of the Veteran Corps of Artillery, and that hereafter no military organization will be allowed headquarters in any New York Armory unless and until they join the New York Guard.

Yours very truly,

(Signed) GEORGE R. DYER."

A TOAST

I give you the health of the Veteran Corps,
To the sturdy hearts of the days of yore,
Of the men that answered the Liberty Bell,
And those of the War of Eighteen Twelve,
I give you the Veteran Corps.

I give you the health of those to-day
Who serve in a humbler sort of way;
To those whose blood 'gainst their temples beat
At the sound of the drafted marching feet;
Who chafe at the years or the chains that bind
Them to their kin and holds behind
The men of the Veteran Corps.

I drain to the health of the men to-day
Who have done a bit and called it "play,"
Who have guarded the line by night and day,
And released a man for the actual fray,
I give you the Veteran Corps.

I snap the stem of my crystal glass,
To the lips of the "slacker" it shall not pass;
For he that couldn't find the time
To guard with them, with me shan't dine,
But stays without my tight-closed door
While I drink the health of the Veteran Corps.

—*James H. Pinckney.*

Digitized by Google

Chapter Ten

THE NINTH COAST—COLONEL DELAFIELD IN COMMAND

ON October 10, 1917, the Provisional Batteries assembled for the last time in the Seventy-First Regiment Armory. The First, Second, Fourth and Sixth Batteries were formed in a Provisional Battalion, and, under orders of the higher military authorities were marched with all the arms and equipment, rifles, machine guns and ammunition to the new Armory in 14th Street, leaving only the obsolete Gatling guns with which the Detachment drilled in the quiet days before the War. The legal ownership of the Krags and the ball and other cartridges for the same was vested still in the Rifle Club. Immediately began the work of reorganization. Although the members of the Corps bitterly regretted the decision of their superiors that the anti-aircraft work should be given up, they proceeded with all the energy and enthusiasm they possessed to perform the new tasks allotted.

Many men had volunteered on the understanding that their service was to be local, expecting that they would be assigned to anti-aircraft stations near their homes. The authorities had also decided that all drill work must be done in the Armory. This would work great hardship on the members of out-of-town Batteries. These had been drilling near their homes in Staten Island, Brooklyn, Flushing, Richmond Hill, Kew Gardens, Woodhaven, etc. These matters complicated the situation, made the work of reorganization exceedingly difficult, and greatly prolonged the labor. Those who, by reason of the changes alluded to, desired to leave the Regiment, received their honorable discharge. A large number of officers and men who lived in Brooklyn and Queens, and who wanted to remain in the Guard, were transferred from the Ninth to the Twenty-third Infantry, Thirteenth Coast Artillery and Squadron C. The Corps was indeed to part with such officers as Captain Praeger, who became Lieutenant-Colonel and later Col-

Digitized by Google

onel; Lieutenant William L. Sayers, who became Captain; Lieutenant Taft, who became Captain; and Sergeant Wilkes, Sergeant Wynkoop and Sergeant Hadden, as well as Fisher, MacDwyer, Wilde and others who became officers in the Twenty-third and Thirteenth. These had shown themselves to be efficient and capable, and had, in the hard, earnest work in the Detachment, won the esteem and regard of all.

A large number forming the Tenth and Twelfth Batteries went into the Thirteenth Coast Artillery. Few people realize what a school and preparation for the Guard the Artillery Service Detachment of the V. C. A. was while under the command of Colonel Delafield. The Artillery Service Detachment during the early months of the War gave a splendid training for officers and men who later distinguished themselves in the military forces of the State and Nation.

The building up of a new Regiment, the fusing of all the diverse elements, into a united well-coordinated body, full of *esprit de corps* is no easy task. It's a man's job. One element helped wonderfully, an unseen spiritual one. That was the incentive and stimulous of the great history of the Ninth Regiment. The oldest military unit in the State, one whose past is full of achievement, the men were inspired with a will to be worthy of its great name, and to make the Ninth of our time equal to the Ninth of other days.

That history is a long and glorious one, a brief account of it is here given.

By virtue of an order from John Jay, Governor of the State of New York, dated Albany, June 24, 1799, the preliminary organization of the Sixth New York Infantry took place. The Sixth was composed of companies of existing regiments which were transferred to it as follows: Four companies from the First, three companies from the Second, five companies from the Third, two companies from the Fourth Regiments. All these Regiments had been organized March 4, 1786. Three companies from the Fifth organized May 11, 1789, and the Independent Rifle Company organized August 28, 1799. The Sixth Regiment was permanently organized with Sixteen Companies May 8, 1800, under the command of Lieutenant-Colonel Jacob Morton. The name of this regiment was changed March 27, 1805, to Second

Digitized by Google

New York State Artillery, and to the Ninth Regiment New York State Artillery on June 13, 1812. Dating back through its component parts, the companies of the original First, Second, Third, and Fourth New York Regiments to 1786, the Ninth has had not only an interesting history, but has achieved a record for gallantry in action and efficiency in service second to no Regiment in the United States. It has served continuously since its organization. It was on active duty during the War of 1812 in the service of the United States. During the Civil War it formed part of the Army of the Potomac. During this service it was known as the Eighty-third New York Volunteer Infantry (Ninth New York State Militia). During this service it participated in twenty-eight battles and engagements. It served through the Spanish-American War, 1898. On July 15, 1917, it was ordered out of the State Service and was mustered into the service of the United States. During the World War the companies composing the Ninth were assigned to several different commands. Its men were present in practically every engagement from the Marne to the end of the Argonne offensive. When the Armistice was signed some were close to Sedan. See Adjutant-Generals report, 1916. Article by Major Charles A. Clinton, Ninth Coast News, September, 1918.

The Regiment has authority to place silver rings on the lances of its colors, engraved as follows:

"On the National Color—War against Great Britain, 1812-1815: N. Y. Harbor, June 22-Dec. 15, 1812 (North Battery): N. Y. Harbor, Sept. 2-Dec. 3, 1814 (West Battery).—War of the Rebellion, 1861-1865: Harper's Ferry, Va., July 4, 1861; Warrenton Junction, April 6, 1862; North Fork River, Va., April 18, 1862; Rappahannock River, Va., May 5, 1862, Cedar Mountain, Va., Aug. 9, 1862; Rappahannock River, Va., Aug. 22. 1862, Rappahannock Station, Va., Aug.23,1862, Thoroughfare Gap, Va., Aug. 28, 1862, Bull Run, Va., Aug. 30, 1862; Chantilly, Va., Sept. 1, 1862; South Mountain, Md., Sept. 14, 1862; Antietam, Md., Sept. 17, 1862; Fredericksburg, Va., Dec. 11-16, 1862; Pollock's Mill Creek, Va., April 29, 1863; Chancellorsville, Va., May 2-3, 1863; Gettysburg, Pa., July 1-4, 1863; Hagerstown, Md., July 12-13 1863. Liberty, Va., Nov. 21, 1863; Mine Run, Va., Nov. 26-Dec. 2, 1863, Wilderness, Va., May 5-7, 1864; Spottsylvania Court House, Va., May 1, 1864; Piney Branch Church, Va., May 8, 1864; Laurel Hill, Va., May 10, 1864; Spottsylvania, Va., May 13, 1864; North Anna, Va., May 22, 1864; Totopotomoy, Va., May 27-31 1864; Cold Harbor, Va., June 1-7, 1864. Spanish-American War, May 2-Nov. 15, 1898.

On the State Color—N. Y. Harbor, June 5-July 28, 1812; Sag Harbor, L. I., N. Y., May 1-Aug. 1, 1814; Brooklyn Heights, Aug. 15, 1814; Brooklyn Heights, Oct. 4, 1814; Abolition Riot, Jan. 11-12, 1835; Great Fire, Dec. 17, 1835; Police Riot, June 16-18, 1857; Dead Rabbit Riot, July 5-6, 1857; Orange Riot, July 12-13, 1871;

Digitized by Google

West Albany R. R. Men's Strike, July 24-28, 1877; Buffalo R. R. Men's Strike, Aug. 18-27, 1892; Brooklyn Trolley Men's Strike, Jan. 20-24, 1895; Albany Trolley Men's Strike, May 17-19, 1901."

The first and possibly the most important duty was the choice of the officers. George W. Burleigh, who had been Battalion-Adjutant in the V. C. A., and whose executive ability and skill in handling men had been shown in many instances, especially in helping to procure the Government's approval and support in sending our officers abroad, and who had just been appointed aid on the Staff of Brigadier-General Charles H. Sherrill, the new Adjutant-General, was the unanimous choice for Lieutenant-Colonel. The unanimity with which his appointment and its acceptance was urged was something quite unusual in military life. The historian has read letter after letter by officers who would be jumped by his promotion, strongly urging the appointment and then as strongly insisting on its acceptance. He had recently declined a commission as Captain of Infantry in the New York Guard to accept one for the same rank in the V. C. A.

Hardly less important was the choice of Adjutant. For a while Captain Lane of the Seventh Battery acted in that capacity, but the call for active service was too strong for him and he went into the First Provisional Regiment, N. Y. G. Since then Teddy Lane has gone. A devoted son, a true patriot, an efficient officer. We record here respect to his memory. These verses were written after his death.

"TAPS." (In Memoriam)

Captain Theodore Twyford Lane.

A hill of green, a firing squad
And above a weeping sky;
A heart of gold, in the still brown mould
And the long days marching by.

A hill of green, a firing squad
And the sharp word of command,
Guns that flare, in the silent air,
While his pals around him stand.

Digitized by Google

A hill of green, a firing squad
And a bugle's far, clear note,
Sounding taps, "Lights Out!" and there's
never a doubt
Of the catch that's in your throat.

A hill of green, a firing squad
And a little flag that waves
In the April air, on the low mound, where
It flutters among the graves.

A hill of green, a firing squad
And a hush in the wintry blast;
The buds of spring—the birds a-wing
And a soul at rest—at last.

F. D. S.

April 17, 1920.

(For photo of Capt. Lane, see p. 232.)

The choice of Adjutant then fell on Frank E. Davidson, Battalion-Adjutant in the V. C. A. It was a wise selection. An old National Guardsman, he made a splendid adjutant and did fine work in helping build up the Regiment.

Captain Howard Thayer Kingsbury, who had been Paymaster of the V. C. A. was given command of the Supply Company, and Walter Lispenard Suydam, sometime Brigade-Major of the Veteran Corps, came into active service as Second Lieutenant and Assistant Supply-Officer. In a very short time Captain Kingsbury was called to the very important position of Judge-Advocate and Suydam was promoted Captain and Supply-Officer.

The Rev. Dr. Howard Duffield, for so many years the pastor of the Old First Presbyterian Church, was made Chaplain. The historian remembers vividly the Washington's Birthday Service held in the Cathedral of St. John the Divine that winter. It was the most impressive religious service he has ever seen. The great church packed to the doors, an audience noteworthy for high character and intelligence, wonderful music, a most eloquent and patriotic sermon, but in it all nothing more impressive than the.

Digitized by Google

Chaplain of the Ninth, who in his uniform, with sonorous voice, defying the echo, read the marvellous message of the Prophet of old.

Dr. Charles Alexander Clinton was made surgeon. He had volunteered as a private in the V. C. A. in which he was an hereditary member. While doing a private's duty in the First Provisional he was promoted to be Assistant-Surgeon.

(At the close of the War of the Revolution, Alexander Thompson and Alexander Clinton were lieutenants in the Second Regiment of Artillery, Continental Line. On the same day in 1786 they were commissioned Captain-Lieutenants in Bauman's Regiment of New York Artillery. In 1917 their lineal descendants, Charles Alexander Clinton and Alexander R. Thompson, served together in the V. C. A. and in the Ninth, in the twentieth century, renewing the friendship begun by their ancestors in the eighteenth.)

Colonel Delafield accepted his appointment as Colonel, and brought to the arduous task of organization of our new Regiment the skill and ability which has since won him such a high position in the army of the United States.

The first appearance of the new regiment was a review given to Colonel John B. Rose, commanding the First Provisional Regiment, N. Y. G., in which so many of our men had served. After the review Colonel Rose was asked to address the officers and men of the Ninth, most of whom had served in the First Provisional. We give some extracts from Colonel Rose's eloquent speech which is reported quite fully in No. 7, Vol. 1, of the "Watch Dog," the official paper of the First provisional.

"I come to speak to the men of the Ninth Coast Artillery as one who is coming back home to talk with old friends. During the time of Service of the V. C. A. along the Aqueduct it was not my good fortune to meet the men of this splendid organization, but I want to say that I am not coming here to express in a perfunctory way my appreciation and that of the city of New York for the protection of the New York water supply which you men gave in the early days when the protection was most needed. I am coming here to say that it was the personality of the officers and men of your organization which established in the early days that splendid *esprit de corps* of the First Provisional Regiment which made possible what seemed to be an impossible task. On Friday morning we assembled in the Mess Hall at Peekskill. I made an appeal to you men. I told you we had the biggest job in the State of New York and one that was next to that of going across.

Digitized by Google

I asked you to enter into this work determined to build up an *esprit de corps* which would enable us to do the work before us; for, with such a task facing us accomplishment was impossible unless the men had the right spirit.

And I say to you, Colonel Delafield, the First Provisional Regiment owes largely to your organization the splendid *esprit de corps* it has built up.

It is very fitting that I should express my appreciation not only for what you did while in our organization, but afterwards. I congratulate you, Colonel Delafield, and I know that after the war this command will have brought credit not only upon its, but also upon your name and that of the City and State of New York, from which it comes."

The Ninth was but partly organized when there came a sudden call for duty. A Battalion was ordered out for active service. In an incredibly short time the First, Second, Fourth, and Sixth Companies, were under arms, nor was this all, four hundred rifles and four thousand rounds of ball cartridges were distributed among the other Regiments of the City who had none. It is said that when the truck containing its share of those rifles and cartridges drove into the Armory of a great historic Regiment, the officer in command exclaimed, "Thank God for the Ninth." Not only was the Battalion mobilized with celerity, but ample provision was made for the care of the men; blankets and cots procured, rations provided, and this all done under orders so quietly that no account of it appeared in the newspapers.

The Regiment had reason to be proud of itself. The men who had patiently and persistently drilled, the men who had swallowed their disappointment and who had worked to obtain subscriptions to the special fund and those who had contributed, were now amply justified. When those in authority saw the danger, they called on the Ninth. It was ready—yes, more than ready for duty. It was ready to help the others and it did.

Digitized by Google

Chapter Eleven

THE SUPPLY COMPANY

Some Special Regimental Activities

AT the time of the reorganization of the Ninth, the military regulations placed unusually great responsibility on the Supply Company. As a matter of fact every item of material used by the Regiment must be procured and issued by this Company. This small unit must account for everything received, must procure everything needed. It must furnish the Regiment with every article of its equipment, supplying food, ammunition, transportation, no matter for what kind of service the Regiment may be called upon. Not the least of its many duties is keeping many and always accurate accounts, including accounts showing each article issued to individuals connected with the Regiment. No mistakes are tolerated. The inventory must show where, how, when and by what authority the different articles have been received or disposed of and the stock of everything on hand. When the Regiment is on duty, away from its base, the Supply Company must have everything it may need from the shoe lace to the first aid packet.

The commanding officer of the Supply Company is a member of the Regimental Staff, who must at all times be ready to supply the Regiment with a complete Field equipment in case it is ordered on some urgent duty. He must furnish food for all Field Days, Rifle Practices, or for any duty that the Regiment may be called upon to perform. Numerous questions are always to be answered and problems solved, and it seems that any question or detail that does not actually belong to the duties of the other Regimental Departments must be solved and handled by the Supply Officer and his men.

The Supply Company of this Regiment, when first organized, had many obstacles to overcome, as there existed the almost utter lack of equipment of any kind or character; but by hard work the Regiment was equipped with the most necessary articles, and be-

Digitized by Google

fore many weeks had passed, and owing to the generosity of its friends and members, it became the most completely equipped Regiment within the State.

The Supply Officer is responsible for all property, whether Federal or State, and his responsibility covers all Quartermasters', Ordnance, Engineering and Signal property so issued. These items amount to a very considerable sum, and it is therefore apparent that more than the usual care must be taken on account of their value.

On Monday November 19, 1917, the Supply Company of the Ninth was mustered in: Captain Howard Thayer Kingsbury, Second Lieutenant Walter Lispenard Suydam, First Seargeant Raymond Newton Hyde, Sergeants Andrew Parker Nevin, Alexander Ramsay Thompson, and Walter Pierce Plummer.

This Company was typical of the Regiment: Kingsbury, a member of one of the great law firms of the city; Suydam, of Colonial ancestry, formerly Brigade Major V. C. A.; Hyde, prominent in artistic circles; Nevin, a lawyer of high standing who rendered distinguished service to the Government; Thompson, the fourth of his name to wear the uniform in time of war and a founder of the Sons of the Revolution; Plummer, an eminent engineer of great ability.

Each member of the Company carried the night and day address and telephone number of all so that notice to any resulted in the rapid assembling of the group; frequently used the call never failed. On December 15, 1917, Captain Kinsbury was promoted Major and appointed Judge Advocate, and on December 26, Lieutenant Suydam was appointed Captain. February 28, 1918, Sergeant Thompson was apointed Second Lieutenant, and after he was retired for age. Sergeant Plummer was appointed Second Lieutenant on May 20, 1918, Captain Suydam was retired for age and First Lieutenant Louis Dos Passos, Battalion Adjutant, was promoted Captain and given the command of the Company. Shortly after the muster in, J. Edward Weld and Charles A. Schubert were added to the Company.

Digitized by Google

Commencing with two somewhat worn flags and a few printed blanks, which were supposed to be a gift but for which a receipt was long after asked by the State, the Supply Company began its labors. Any duty not provided for became the duty of the Supply Company. The first demand was for wool clothing, canteens, cots and blankets, all to be obtained without money and without price. The men of the Regiment had most of them supplied themselves with cotton uniforms while in the V. C. A. Owing to the urgent need of the United States Army, the State of New York could only procure woolen uniforms after long delays. However, four hundred heavy overcoats were soon obtained and the "Supply" had something to issue.

Permits for gasoline and automobiles at the Armory were obtained, repairs requested from the Armory Board. Food provided for the night guard and for the men on duty at parades, drills and escort.

Joint arrangements with the Sanitary Detachment were made that cots might be ready in case of an urgent call from any part of the city. In coöperation with the Inspector of Small Arms Practice, the Supply Company had the duty of providing ammunition, also such articles as were needed by the Machine Gun Company and the Regimental Band; the latter a never-failing source of interest and hard work, the ability of its members to seek shoes was wonderful.

Very many different properties make up the needs of a Coast Artillery Regiment, and each must be receipted for when received and again when issued. The Ninth also had much property obtained by gift or purchase, and a separate record was kept.

To the ladies of the Canteen we owe a debt of gratitude for services and for an efficient coffee urn equipment. In addition to its special work, a Supply Company maintains the military discipline and drill, is armed and equipped, and parades with the Regiment.

A study of the various blanks and forms required by the Military Law was made, and though at times there was a lot of apparently

Digitized by Google

unnecessary red tape involved, the records of the Supply Company were thereafter kept in accordance with the State forms. The Ninth New York owes a great debt of gratitude to Lieutenant Plummer for his preeminent ability in starting the paper work of the Supply Company in exactly the right way, and for training the non-coms in the Company. As a result of his efficient labors the various inspection officers and officials of the Adjutant General's office have commended the manner in which the records of the Ninth have been kept.

Captain Dos Passos had been instrumental in the creation and preservation of our celebrated Band and he brought many of its responsibilities with him. In the Ninth the Band was always favored. The constant changing, loaning uniforms to the men of the Band and field musicians, and the volunteers in the various parades and reviews brought lots of additional work for the Supply Company. Many of the musical instruments were furnished by the State and were kept in the Post Property account.

The Krag Rifles used by the Regiment were the property of the 1790 Rifle Club and special accounts had to be kept for them. There was also a large amount of property charged to the Supply Officer as Federal Ordnance, including the major caliber guns, the mortar and their various appliances. The various electrical devices used in connection with these were carried as engineer property. In all, about three hundred articles were included in the accounts of the Supply Company. All transportation was arranged for by the Supply Company all the way from subway car fares to transporting baggage.

In 1918 a Dodge Automobile Truck was donated to the Supply Company. This was a great help and proved to be very useful. The four Ford Trucks owned by various companies of the Regiment were turned over to the Supply Company for operation and maintenance.

One event in the history of the Regiment always gives a feeling of satisfaction to the officers and men of the Supply Company. When the Old Ninth was welcomed on its return from the World

Digitized by Google

War the Supply Company furnished the dinner. Sixteen hundred men participated, and a complete and substantial dinner, prepared in the kitchen of the Armory, was served.

In the fall of 1919, when the Regiment was changed to the Ninth Coast Defense Command, the Supply Company was mustered out. At that time it consisted of the following officers and men: Captain Louis Hays Dos Passos, Second Lieutenant Walter P. Plummer, Regimental Supply Sergeant Raymond N. Hyde, Battalion Supply Sergeants, John T. L. Doughty, Joseph L. Mulligan, John D. Champlin, Jr., Battalion Supply Corporals J. Hart Welch, Fred H. Conklin, and Harry O. Donoghue.

This fine command maintained its high character to the end. Every man in it manifested fidelity, zeal, efficiency. Captain Suydam and Captain Dos Passos were both good disciplinarians, and were both greatly respected and admired by every one who served under them. The writer cannot close this article without referring to the long, faithful and efficient service of Sergeant Hyde, later Lieutenant in the Ninth, and of Sergeant Doughty, whose vigor and activity at the age of sixty-eight are so remarkable. It will always be a matter of pride and satisfaction that I served in this company.

Another war activity of the Regiment was the formation of the Machine Gun Company, which was mustered in on April 27, 1918. Captain Charnley L. Murray, of the Second Company, commanded this interesting and efficient unit, which owed its inception largely to his energy, skill and zeal. This well-armed and thoroughly drilled Company, on its many appearances in public, never failed to evoke much enthusiasm among the onlookers, and must indeed have been a thorn in the flesh of such as hoped to start any manifestations of disloyalty within the city.

The Company, as finally organized, paraded four sections of four guns each—Lewis guns, on Cygnet pneumatic-tired carts. The Lewis guns, purchased originally from the V. C. A. fund, were acquired from the British, and calibred .303; the Company had, however, a great quantity of Mark VII .303 ammunition therefor, and was at all times well prepared for any emergency.

Digitized by Google

At different times guns were sent by order of the Governor to various County fairs in charge of a non-com and a detail of enlisted men to show the people of the State what was being accomplished by New York's military forces. We believe that this was the first machine gun unit in the Guard to discover how to use blanks and so simulate actual machine gun fire.

The following officers served in the company: Captain Charnley L. Murray; 1st Lieutenants Bernard Callingham and William H. Young; 2nd Lieutenants Reginald C. Knickerbocker and Lester F. Scott. Lieut. Young later took the Field Artillery training course for officers at Camp Zachary Taylor, Ky.; Lieut. Knickerbocker later became Captain, 1st Field Artillery, and 1st M. G. Battalion, N. Y. G. When the Regiment was transferred into the 9th Coast Defense Command this fine Company was disbanded.

An enterprise of a different kind was the "9th Coast News." This was a paper published monthly by the Regiment. Its life began in August, 1918, and lasted till April of the following year. It was a bright, newsy illustrated sheet of eight quarto pages, and is today of no small historical value to veterans of the Regiment. The Historian is glad to seize this opportunity of certifying to its usefulness. Its columns have been helpful in many ways in the work of compiling and writing this book.

In addition to the genial humorous gossip of the times it contains much interesting matter; an article by Major Clinton entitled "The Old and the New Ninth" is a very valuable contribution to local military history. The illustrations were well selected and nicely printed. The Editorial Staff, as given in the first number, were: John Clyde Oswald, Publisher; Sergeant Raymond N. Hyde, Business Manager; Frank W. Nye, Advertising Manager; Sergeant J. G. Phelps Stokes, Secretary; Corporal Wm. B. Cass, Editor; Travis Hoke, Associate Editor; Gene Carr, Art Editor.

Whoever has kept his copies will derive great pleasure in occasionally looking them over and reviving the pleasant memories of the active days. Copies of the paper are in the invaluable collection of War Papers in the New York Public Library and at the New York Historical Society.

Digitized by Google

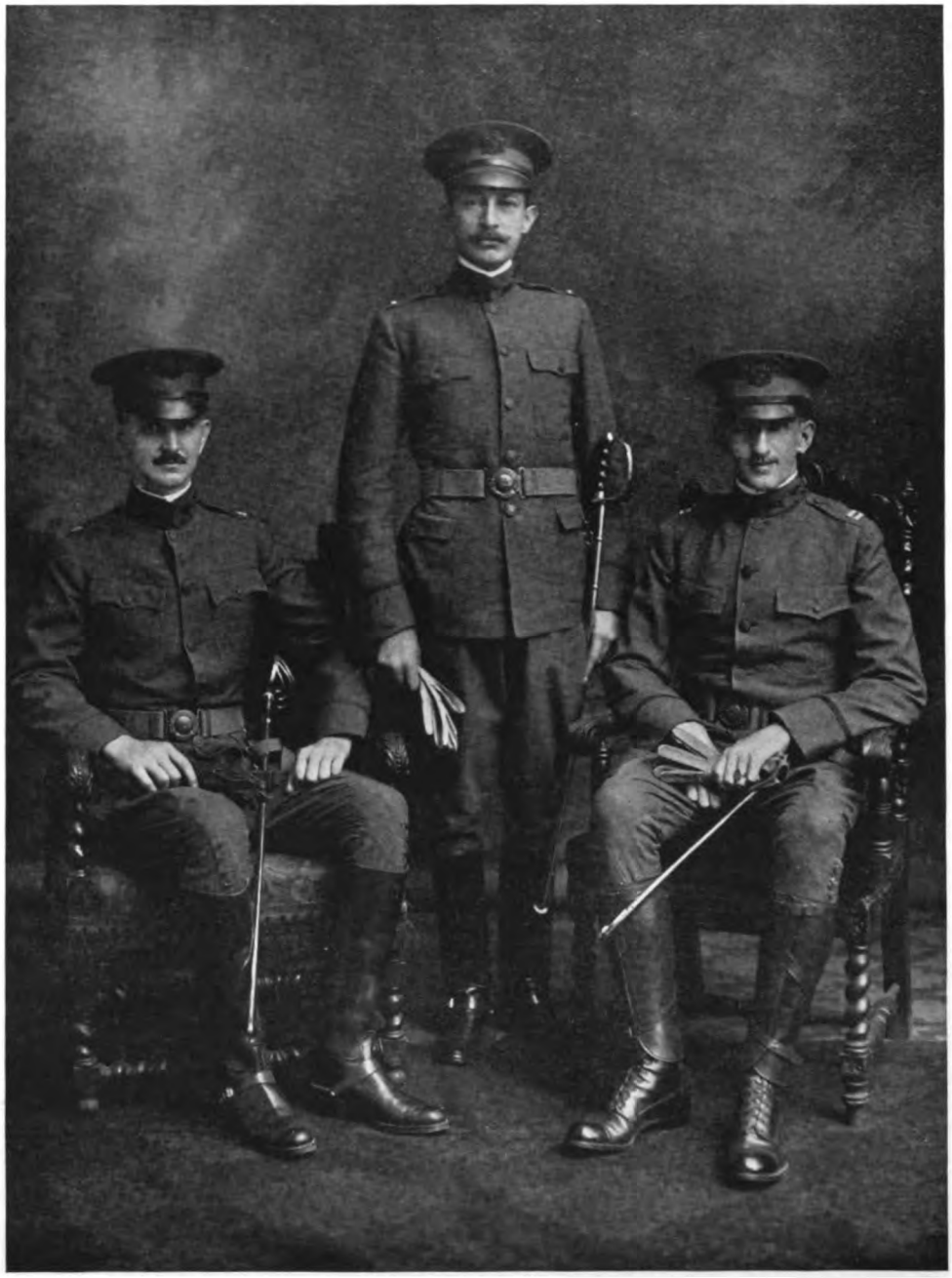
Chapter Twelve (I)

OFFICERS ABROAD

THE preliminary arrangements having been made and all papers being in due order the Commission set sail the night of August 29th, 1917. After a voyage through the submarine infested Atlantic, they landed in Bordeaux on September 9th. No attacks were made upon the *Chicago* in which the Commission sailed, a circumstance which was considered especially fortunate as the boat just preceding the *Chicago* and the one just following were torpedoed. From Bordeaux the Commission proceeded at once to Paris, taking up headquarters at the Hotel Lutetia, on the left bank of the Seine. They then reported to General Pershing at Chaumont, delivering to him in person the confidential dispatches from General Bell which had been intrusted to them. General Pershing directed Colonel Harbord, later General Harbord of Chateau Thierry fame, to afford the Commission every facility for the carrying out of the purpose for which they had been sent to France. So well were these instructions carried out that the members of the Commission were soon installed at the anti-aircraft artillery school at Arnouville not far from the great aviation field at LeBourget. Additional quarters were assigned in the old Chateau which was part of the school and the work of investigation and compilation began at once.

It was found that all three officers were not needed at the school, and because of the limited time allowed the Commission to collect the desired information, Major Stoddard directed that Captain Wilder remain at Arnouville to continue the work there, Lieutenant Ward to remain at the Lutetia and study the defenses of the French Capital while he proceeded to England to handle that branch of the work. Major Stoddard forthwith departed for London, where after calling upon Ambassador Page and meeting the proper British officials he engaged in an extensive investigation of the defenses of London and the British methods of fighting air-

Digitized by Google



THE FOREIGN MISSION.

Digitized by Google

craft. He was later joined by Lieutenant Ward. The following story is told in his own words.

The day after I arrived in London, the first raid occurred. At about 8 o'clock that evening, several bombs were dropped on London. The next day I endeavored to learn where they had landed, but I found it very difficult to obtain any information, for the reason that the military authorities suppressed all news concerning damage done by the raiders.

While calling on Brigadier-General William Lassiter, then in command of the American troops in England, I met an American who was applying for assistance at the American embassy because his house had been bombed. I asked him to take me to the scene of the damage, and this he did. He lived in a five story wooden frame house beyond St. Pancras Station, from which a section 40 x 40 x 40 had been taken as if cut by a knife. I also saw where a bomb had fallen in St. James Park and also where a bomb had landed by the entrance to a hotel near mine which killed several persons and wounded an American Lieutenant.

That same night, Tuesday, September 25, one of a fleet of raiders penetrated the London barrage and dropped his bombs on London. I watched the raid from the deserted streets. I could distinctly hear the German planes and could see the bursting shells, but the enemy was invisible. The next day, I went to a section of London on Old Kent Road near Old Grange Street where the police admitted me into their lines because of my uniform. I counted approximately 150 houses that ranged from being practically demolished to having some portion of their fronts blown in.

On Saturday, September 29, came one of the worst of the air raids on London. I watched it on the roof of my hotel until ordered down by the proprietor, after which I went out on the street. I could see many bursts of shells in many different directions, and could hear the drone of the engines of the German planes, but, as usual, could not distinguish them 14,000 feet in the air. The streets were deserted, not alone because of danger from falling bombs, but also because of danger from the fire of the defending anti-aircraft guns, since everything that went up must come down. I realized this when a shell fell in the street and half buried itself a short distance from where I was but fortunately did not explode; and later when some one ran from a protecting cornice and picked a shell fragment from the sidewalk nearby. I was told that many persons were necessarily killed by the fire of the home defense batteries.

On Sunday, September 30, I went to Shoeburyness where I was welcomed by Lieutenant-Colonel Mortimore, Commandant of the British Anti-Aircraft Artillery School. He introduced me to General Sclater-Booth who was in charge of all the Artillery Schools. That day I spent in study; that evening I went with Colonel Mortimore to the forts, as a raid was expected. I was inspecting a crack battery composed of young fellows who had been drummer boys and buglers in the British Armies in

Digitized by Google

France and who had been taken out of the fighting on account of their youth, when the familiar drone of the engines of the German raiders could be heard. Suddenly the guns turned and began firing a few feet over my head, and I quickly changed my position. Soon the other batteries joined in the attack. One after another the Germans passed overhead until fourteen of them had gone by. I could tell by the sound of their engines that the bursting shells had caused them to change their course in the sky. I could not see any of the planes, though one of the officers said that he had distinguished one for an instant as it passed between us and the moon. Soon the firing was taken up by the batteries nearer London, and those with whom I was stationed ceased firing. Then we waited to fire at the raiders when they should return from bombing London. Very soon the familiar drone was heard once more, and the same scene was repeated.

The next day I spent in study. That evening I was at dinner when the warnings of an approaching raid were received. Soon the firing began, and the windows of the building shook with each explosion. The officers off duty leisurely finished their dinners, and then I walked with Colonel Mortimore to the batteries that were firing at the raiders who were high in the air above the school buildings. The scene was a repetition of that of the night before. The shots seemed to be close, but no German was brought down.

The reader will note that during my first ten days in England there had been a total of six air raids on London, one attack elsewhere and one false alarm.

A Major Stanley was among those who entertained me at the officers club when I seemed lonely. I learned quite by accident that he was a son of the Earl of Derby. the head of one of the oldest families and one of the most noted peers of England.

On October 3rd, after a visit to the British testing grounds, I returned to London. That night, I located Ward who had just arrived. On the next day, I arranged to inspect the London defenses and called on Ambassador Page. The next day, I began my inspection by going to various gun and light stations in and about London.

I returned to London October 3. Ward meanwhile was making arrangements for my visiting the British front where anti-aircraft fighting could be studied at its best. At that time, the great offensive towards Cambrai was contemplated and the British did not wish to be bothered by the presence of any foreign officers. General Lassiter stated that he had tried in vain to get permission for several United States Major-Generals on a tour of inspection to visit the front. The lid was down tight and everything seemed hopeless, except to Ward. He obtained the permission which had been refused to the Major-Generals. Colonel James the officer in charge of issuing passes told Ward:

> 'If Major Stoddard wishes to go to the front, I will see that a pass will be issued. I advise, however, against his going, as a great offensive is about to begin, and I would not care to go to the front myself at this time

Digitized by Google

unless obliged to do so. My advice is to wait. As it is, the last American to whom I issued a pass to go to the front is still in the hospital.'

Ward brought this message to me and my answer was;

'I am not on a sight-seeing expedition, I am studying anti-aircraft and haste is necessary; if I can learn more about anti-aircraft at the front, I wish to obtain a pass.'

A pass was issued the same day that my answer was delivered at the British war office, and arrangements were made by telephone with Sir Douglas Haig's headquarters for me to be met by an army automobile at Boulogne the next day.

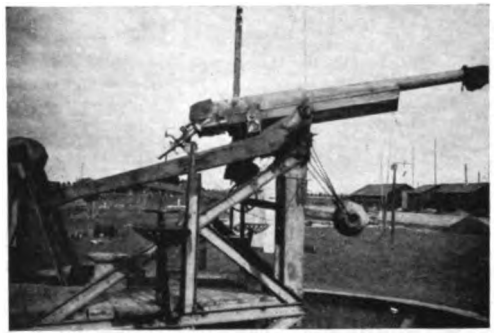
It was near midday when I arrived at Boulogne where I found a British army chauffeur and automobile awaiting me, and began my long automobile ride through northern France. During my ride, I learned for the first time that I was being taken to Albert on the Somme front.

At dusk, we passed the famous Albert cathedral with the statue of the Virgin still hanging by her feet from the steeple. The chauffeur left me at the Anti-Aircraft Artillery headquarters of the British Third Army, where I was welcomed by a Major Arnold and his fellow officers.

That night after dinner, Major Arnold took me in his automobile to Bapaume. The road between Albert and Bapaume is historic for the reason that it is the scene of the terrible fighting of 1916. Towns like Pozieres and Le Sars had disappeared entirely. Everywhere lay the rubbish of a battlefield. First one met dugouts, trenches and wire of the British, then came No Man's Land and beyond came the wire, trenches, dugouts of the Germans. A few hundred yards further, the same scene would be repeated, and British graves showed where the men lay who had given their lives to win that little stretch of ground. A short distance away on either side of the road were all that remained of Ovillers, Contalmaison, Thiepval, Courcellette, Martinpinch, Eaucourt l'abbaye, Butte de Warlencourt, Grevillers, Thilloy, whose names are famous in the history of the Somme battles.

The city of Bapaume, during the battles of 1916, had been well behind the German lines and as a result was untouched except by long distance shell fire. When the Germans retreated in the spring of 1917, they dynamited or arranged for the destruction of every building in the city. The ones left standing were caused to blow up with devilish ingenuity after the advent of the British. Some were arranged with time devices. Others blew up when a certain object was touched by British soldiers. Near Bapaume was a large castle which was probably used by the British as a headquarters. I could not learn its exact use for the reason that the British, like the other combatants, concealed their losses. The chateau was a land mark for miles around. One day a British soldier moved a statue in a pagoda-like outhouse, and all that was left of the castle was a large hole in the ground. That night I dined in a dugout

Digitized by Google



Digitized by Google

near where the chateau had been. As I emerged a bursting star shell lit up the sky long enough for me to see where the statue had been. The hole in the ground where the chateau had been could be easily seen in the darkness.

In the dugout one might almost have imagined himself in a London dining room, except for the sound of the guns which never stopped firing at the front. My hosts told me that there was much entertaining by officers at the front, in order to alleviate the frightful monotony of their existence. After a very excellent dinner, Major Arnold and I entered his automobile and our hosts entered theirs and we took a road which paralleled the German lines to where a theatrical show was to be given by the soldiers of a departing division. Soon we reached what seemed to be a large dugout in front of which officers were alighting noiselessly in the dark from other automobiles. Inside the whole scene was changed. At one end of a large room was a stage; in the front row on either side sat the nurses and behind them the officers in order of rank. Soon Lieutenant-General Sir Julian Byng, commander of the Third Army, arrived and the show began. All the time intermittent firing was taking place. No one paid any attention to shells which might be bursting somewhere in the neighborhood.

All of the actors and the orchestra were British Tommies. At the end of an excellent show, Major Arnold and I re-entered the automobile and retraced our course back to Albert. I saw a light which seemed to be in a field only a short distance away and asked Arnold what it was. He answered that it was a flare from the German trenches lighted so that any possible British night raiders might be discovered in No Man's Land.

The next morning, my old friend, Colonel Mortimore, commandant of the Anti-Aircraft School at Shoeburyness called on an inspection tour at the front. I was present when he and his aide, Colonel Wilkenson, talked with Major Arnold and his aides concerning possible improvement in the anti-aircraft service. In the late afternoon, Major Arnold and I went to Peronne. Once more I passed through the old battlefield of 1916. I passed in the distance Guillemont, Combles, and other names famous in the history of the Somme. Peronne had been dynamited like Bapaume and I dined with some officers in one of the few houses left standing. One of my hosts dryly remarked that no one knew when that house would blow up.

Early on the morning of October 12, Major Arnold and I started on an inspection of anti-aircraft batteries. There were two particularly that he wished to show me, one was in the first line, and the other in the second line. On the road to Bapaume, we passed many U. S. engineers who were helping the British-Indians salvage objects of military value from the battlefield. The engineers were operating a narrow gauge railroad which during rainy weather was one of the best means of transportation in the muddy Somme country. That morning, I counted nine tanks that lay as they had been abandoned at the time of the battle. Reaching Bapaume, we turned to the left taking the road to Arras which paralleled the German Lines. We passed the

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

ruins of Sapignies, Behagnies, Evillers, Boyeles, Mercatel, Beaurains, Achicourt to Arras where we lunched, after inspecting a battery near by. After lunch, we took the road towards Lens which led into the German lines. Soon we alighted and walked until we came to a position where No Man's Land and the trenches of both sides could be distinguished. Except for the intermittent firing that never stops at the front, one would not have thought that he was looking at one of the greatest battle scenes in the world, for this was the far-famed Vimy Ridge from which I was looking into the German lines. The ground was covered with the debris of a battlefield. I saw German shell cases, relics of when a German battery had held the Ridge. I also saw British bandoliers, cartridge clips, fuse caps and exploded German shells, relics of the present occupancy by the British.

It was broad daylight and a clear day, and since the German trenches could be seen by us, I wondered why we in the automobile could not be seen by those in the German trenches. I asked Arnold, "Cannot the Germans see us?" "Yes" was his answer. "Is it not dangerous going along like this within plain sight of the Germans?" I asked.

"No, the Germans have not been shelling automobiles on this road lately; they will not turn their guns on us unless we get stuck," he replied.

"But we might get stuck," I suggested.

"That might not make any difference," he answered. "We would then have two chances; in the first place, the Germans might not open fire after all; and in the second place, they might not hit us if they did."

Passing Arras which had been bombarded by the Germans shortly before, we turned off the Bapaume road at Baurains through Neuville Vitasse and beyond St. Martin Sur Cojeul where we alighted from the automobile and entered the trenches. After walking some distance, we reached a pair of camouflaged anti-aircraft guns concealed in a hollow on either side of which were dugouts in which the gun crews lived. The young Lieutenant in command gave us a cup of tea in his dugout which was well fitted with furniture captured from the Germans. This battery had been pushed up very close to the German lines, and its crew expected momentarily to be discovered and shelled. I looked through a peep hole towards the German trenches but could see nothing through the mist. As Major Arnold and I began to retrace our steps, it was raining; there was almost a foot of mud in the trenches, and it was so dark that we could hardly see where we were going. As we departed, the Lieutenant casually called out,

"Oh! By the way! If you don't take the first road to the right, you will be in the German lines!"

I am glad to say that Major Arnold and I found the first road to the right.

Early the next morning, October 13, 1917, the Major and I started out in his automobile taking the road through Beaucourt, Miramont, Achiet-le-petit, Bucquoy,

Digitized by Google

Ayette, to Boiry where we inspected a second line battery. As no German planes offered themselves as targets, the battery commander showed the skill of his battery by bursting a shell in the sky and then trying to hit the smoke with the succeeding shots. We later returned through Achiet-le-Grand, to Bapaume and thence back to Albert. That night, I motored to Amiens, and after bidding the Major farewell, I caught the late train for Paris.

In Paris I rejoined my companions, and one may well imagine that there was some swapping of experiences.

On October 15, Ward, Wilder and I inspected guns and searchlights at Neuilly, and also a large searchlight at Mont Valarien, all of which were a part of the Paris defences. Ward at once made preparations to obtain permission for us to visit the French front. It seems that General Pershing had issued orders that no more officers were to be permitted to go as observers with the French. Ward was ill and could not see General Pershing personally. He however timed matters so wonderfully that he requested permission of General Pershing over the telephone for us to visit the French front just at the time that a prominent General was asking General Pershing that our request be granted.

I had hoped that we would be sent to Verdun, but because of the necessity for haste, we were sent to Chemin-des-Dames. On October 18, Wilder and I took an early train to Chateau Thierry where the Americans later fought. Ward did not accompany us, as he had decided to remain abroad and he wished to spend the last days of our stay in preparing his portion of the report on the Paris defenses so that I might take it home with me. At Chateau Thierry, Wilder and I were met by a French Captain in an automobile which took us north past Fismes to the headquarters of Lt.-General Duchene, commander of the French Tenth Army. After reporting to the General, we lunched with General Lisé commanding the Artillery. Afterwards, Wilder and I in two automobiles went towards the front lines. Chemin-des-Dames was a ridge which ran through the centre of a plain; roughly the Germans held one side of the ridge and the French the other. As the road upon which we were travelling could be seen from the German lines, the French had raised long strips of sheeting about 10 feet high which prevented the Germans from seeing what was passing along the road. The French at that time were preparing for their drive towards Laon and the Germans knew that troops in large numbers were being constantly brought forward under cover of this sheeting. The Germans therefore tried to spray the roads with shrapnel. As my auto, which was ahead of Wilder's was proceeding, there came a crash and a shell burst in the air about 60 yards away to the right.

Wilder and I soon separated. He went to the first anti-aircraft sector and I went to the fourth, commanded by Captain Cuny. During the evening, I went with one of the officers to see the lights in No Man's Land. The French flares only lighted

Digitized by Google

for an instant; the German flares remained lighted a trifle longer. The night was clear and the flares of the combatants could be seen in either direction as far as eyesight could reach. Intermittent firing crackled and roared. Thereafter I went to battery headquarters which was the only building in that locality which had not been demolished by the German artillery. No one could explain why the building had been spared, except that it was in the rear of and concealed by some rocks and trees. The Germans had such an accurate range of everything in the locality that when about fifteen soldiers were drilling a few yards away from the headquarters, a shell was sent by the Germans accurately into the centre of the group. That night, I slept in the dining room of the headquarters. In the middle of the night, there came an alarm that the German airplanes were overhead, but I was so tired that I refused to get excited and went back to sleep. The next morning, I learned that the Germans had tried to gas us during the night.

Early the next morning, Captain Cuny took me forward into the trenches. He took me to an anti-aircraft gun, the crew of which was comfortably situated in an elaborate system of trenches and dugouts. I remarked concerning the excellence of the trenches.

"Yes," said the officer in charge, "the trenches are good, but we did not build them; they were built for a field battery which was here for some time until the Germans got the exact range and put it out of existence. The Germans, having the exact range do not believe that anyone would be crazy enough to come back, but here we are."

We passed along towards the Infantry trenches in front. On the sides of the trenches were dugouts, over the doors of which the soldiers had placed amusing names. In front I could see the backs of some of the Infantry in a front trench, while bullets from a German machine gun crackled over our heads. Retracing our steps, we walked into the open. We passed a place where an anti-aircraft gun had been demolished by shell fire two days before. We passed an ambulance driven by an American. I saw one man with his head in his hands and a dark pool of blood in front of him. He was on his way to a dressing station in the rear. No one seemed to pay any attention to men wounded but able to walk.

We crossed a bridge to a demolished building called the Ferme-de-la-Pêcherie. The Germans had been particularly active in trying to hit troops crossing the bridge which was literally covered with shell fragments and shrapnel balls. About were many graves. As we were walking along in the rear of the Infantry trenches, the sight was one long to be remembered. From our rear, the French batteries were firing over our heads at the Germans; the Germans in turn were firing over our heads at the French batteries. Sometimes a ragged black explosion about 60 feet high and 30 feet across would show where a large shell had landed among the Infantry trenches. Shells were bursting all around us. The nearest was a shrapnel which

Digitized by Google

PASS

LAISSER-PASSER

Major F. Stoddart (S.S. Army) to be hereby authorized to proceed to Third Army Area

via Boulogne

within the area occupied by the British Army, from the other occupied part (Alsace) Britannique,

and to return to Paris

via Amiens

This pass is available only from 9th October 1917 to 18th October 1917

Lieut.-General, Adjutant-General, British Armies in France.

Digitized by Google

exploded 30 yards away, and we could feel the displaced air and hear the shrapnel balls whiz past.

The sky was filled with French aeroplanes which were observing and photographing the German trenches in preparation for the Infantry attack which was soon to take place. The German batteries were firing at the French with high explosive which produces a black smoke. The French planes were firing at the few German planes that dared to go up in the air with shrapnel, which produces a white smoke. Sometimes I could tell the nationality of the plane, which appeared like a speck in the sky, by the color of the shell bursts. The French anti-aircraft gunners were so well trained that they could distinguish the nationality and make of a plane which appeared to be a small speck in the distance.

In the late afternoon, an officer called for me in an automobile and I left Captain Cuny's battery to join Wilder in the first sector. On the way, I saw a plane flying low over No Man's Land past Captain Cuny's battery which I had just left. The battery fired two shots, both of which burst directly over the plane, which landed apparently disabled in among the German trenches. When I reached Wilder, I learned for the first time that he had been gassed the night before. Late that night, we went to Chateau Thierry and took a train for Paris.

While Major Stoddard was in England Captain Wilder remained at the artillery school at Arnouville. Arnouville was on the way to the front out from the Gare du Nord, the nearest station being Villiers-le-Bel-Gonnesse.

Arnouville is a small village in the agricultural country on a sunny hillside above a quiet stream. On the banks of this stream was a magnificent estate surrounding a beautiful chateau, belonging to a South American millionaire who left at the beginning of the war. The chateau was unoccupied save for a caretaker, and Commandant Pachezey who occupied a room on the ground floor. The drill grounds were at the top of the hill just before you arrive at Arnouville from the station, and the school was in a farm building midway between the Chateau grounds and the town pump on Arnouville's single paved street. This school was the Ecole de Tir contre Avions of the French Army, and was a war time institution founded for the purpose of training officers and men in anti-aircraft work. When the Commission arrived there were already two Americans taking the training under the French, Captains

Digitized by Google

AMBASSADE
DE LA RÉPUBLIQUE FRANÇAISE
AUX ÉTATS-UNIS

Washington le 20 Août, 1917.

Les Autorités des Douanes Françaises sont priées d'accorder à M.M. le Major Francis B. Stoddard fils, le Capitaine Robert H. Wilder et le Lieutenant Cabot Ward, citoyens américains qui se rendent en France chargés d'une mission militaire, toutes les facilités pour l'entrée de leurs bagages et de procéder avec des égards particuliers aux formalités dont elles ne pourraient les dispenser./.

L'Ambassadeur de France;

AMBASSADE DE FRANCE WASHINGTON

Jusserand

Messieurs les Officiers
des Douanes Françaises.

Digitized by Google

Humbert and Anderson of our Coast Artillery, and as they had only begun their course Captain Wilder joined them in their studies. This was the first American class in a school which later under Major Anderson's direction trained hundreds of our men.

Without going into details of the course of instruction pursued by Captain Wilder, it is sufficient to say that the course included a trip to the front and qualified the officers to command a battery in action. During the first night which Captain Wilder spent at the front in the First Section of the Tenth French Army an unfortunate incident occurred. The Captain was spending the night in a dugout in the trenches at Chemin-des-Dames in company with two French officers. This dugout was the size of an ordinary room but only just high enough in which to stand upright. It was constructed partially underground, and partially built up of sandbags, which entirely covered the roof ten feet deep, and was camouflaged by a shield of trees. Two windows and a door occupied one side. They were screened with cheese cloth which was wet down at the approach of gas. A gas attack occurred on the night which Captain Wilder spent there, and the orderly who gave the warning neglected to latch the door completely. The gas arrived on a gust of wind which blew the door open, and the three officers were slightly gassed before it could be closed. Captain Wilder being asleep receiving no injury to his eyes, but suffered later from the after effects of gas poisoning.

While Captain Wilder was at the school, Captain Humbert, the senior officer, received word that the first American class was on the way to the school for instruction, and as no Americans had as yet graduated, the problem of instructing thirty-six eager students was appalling. Moreover there was no equipment for a school, no quarters for the students, and no commissariat. In this emergency it seemed to Captain Wilder appropriate that he give his help for the time being to untangle the situation which might have caused a serious delay in the prosecution of the war. He therefore delayed the completion of his report, and placed himself under Captain Humbert's orders. The Chateau was commandeered,

Digitized by Google

AMERICAN OFFICERS AT THE SCHOOL, ARNOUVILLE.

THE UBIQUITOUS BARBED WIRE.

Digitized by Google

supplies were gathered, and arrangements made in the village for a boarding-place. The material contained in the report as well as Captain Anderson's notes were rushed to Paris and mimeographed to serve as text-books. When the contingent arrived, a school, such as it was, was in working order. This was the beginning of what became a very large school, covering the Chateau grounds with barracks, and filling the Chateau itself with school rooms.

In addition to the work at the school, Captain Wilder, to make the report as complete as possible, visited the principal forts surrounding Paris and conferred with French officers as to the defense of the city, and was present at a number of trials of new apparatus.

In the meantime Lieutenant Ward who had begun the survey of the defenses of Paris was obliged to go to England on the receipt of a cable from Major Stoddard. The fact that the Commission was able to obtain so much information in such a short time and to visit so many strategic points was not accidental. It was due entirely to Lieutenant Ward's brilliant work in liason. A diplomat trained in European customs, a personal friend of many high officials of both England and France, he was able to open doors that otherwise would have been closed at that time to Americans.

On October 20th the appropriation having been expended, and as much material having been gathered as the time allowed, the Commission made ready to return. Lieutenant Ward, who had been promoted to a Captaincy in the meantime, remained in Paris as he had been appointed a Major in the Aviation Section, Signal Corps, U. S. Army. After organizing the Bureau of Production, he made a study of the French Aviation Supply System from the factory to the front, including the Aviation Schools and upon the completion was made the representative of the U. S. Aviation in securing from the French Government the necessary properties and facilities immediately required for the American development in France, and taking action thereafter on property secured for immediate development. Subsequently he was transferred to the Intelligence Section, and was designated Chief of the Intelligence Section, L. of C. Later he was promoted to be Assistant Chief of Staff, G2., S. O. S.,

Digitized by Google

and promoted Lieutenant-Colonel General Staff. In this capacity he organized the U. S. A. intelligence system in England and France, and on the Spanish, Swiss and Italian borders. He also operated the systems. His name was before the Army Board at G. H. Q. in France for promotion to the grade of General, but the Armistice put a stop to further activities of this board as far as promoting Reserve officers to the grade of General was concerned. However, he took part in the St. Mihiel offensive and is entitled to wear battle stars for various other engagements. He was awarded the Distinguished Service Medal by the United States Government March 21, 1919, together with the citation "For exceptionally meritorious and distinguished services." As Assistant Chief of Staff, in charge of the Intelligence Section of the Services of Supply, he has rendered services of the most valuable character. He has handled with great efficiency the important task of counter-espionage throughout the American Expeditionary Forces and in the neighboring neutral countries. In this service he showed marked ability, combined with superior military knowledge. On April 25, 1919, he was made "Officier de la Légion d'Honneur" by the French Republic, and on April 29th, 1919, the British made him a "Commander of Distinguished Order."

Major Stoddard and Captain Wilder returned with the report, the substance of which is contained in the following chapter. Major Stoddard commanded the Second Battalion of the Ninth C. A. C. for a time and later became Division Ordnance officer of the 17th Division U. S. A., reaching the grade of Lieutenant-Colonel.

Captain Wilder was incapacitated for some months due to the gassing he received, but later returned to his duties as Works Manager of the American Ammunition Co.'s loading plant from which he had been borrowed for the purposes of the trip. In the meantime he had been placed on the Reserve List of the New York Guard. After the Armistice on an order from Colonel Burleigh he was attached to the Ninth C. A. C. as an Instructor in Artillery. He also served several assignments under Colonel Byrne as acting

Digitized by Google

Artillery Engineer in the Ninth Coast Defense Command. During his last assignment he was commissioned a Major by Brevet for Distinguished Conduct and Public Service in Presence of the Enemy. The presentation speech follows.

"In the summer of 1917, Captain Robert H. Wilder went abroad as one of a commission of three officers sent at the request of the Eastern Department to investigate and report on anti-aircraft artillery. After reporting to General Pershing personally, at Chaumont, Captain Wilder was sent to the French Anti-Aircraft Artillery School at Arnouville where he rendered himself invaluable, not only to the Commission but to the American officers who were endeavoring to form an Anti-Aircraft School in conjunction with the French. An expert engineer, with a profound knowledge of fuses, shells, explosives and range finding instruments, Captain Wilder sketched French material so that it could be duplicated, which sketches we used not only to start the American School in France, but were used at the Anti-Aircraft School at Fort Monroe.

"On or about October 18, 1917, Captain Wilder went to the French front north of Chateau Thierry and Fismes along Chemin des Dames near Craonne, where the French were getting ready for their attack on Laon. The first night that he arrived he was gassed and was the first American officer gassed in the war. Thereafter, notwithstanding his gassing, he pursued his duties of examining and investigating guns and complex range finding instruments, all the time being under artillery fire from the German trenches, which was very active at that time owing to the impending attack by the French. During all the time Captain Wilder pursued his investigations with the utmost coolness, and paid absolutely no attention to the shell fire, some of which was directed at a battery with which he was stationed. Thereafter the Commandant of the Coast Artillery School at Fort Monroe sent to the Adjutant-General of the State of New York, a formal letter of commendation concerning the work of the Commission of which Captain Wilder was a member.

"In recognition of the above services, the State of New York has awarded to you, Captain Robert H. Wilder, 9th Coast Artillery Corps, New York Guard, the Brevet Commission of Major for distinguished conduct and public service in the presence of the enemy, and it gives me the greatest pleasure to hand you your commission at this time."

Digitized by Google

Chapter Twelve (II)

THE ANTI-AIRCRAFT REPORT

FOR the benefit of those who have not had the opportunity to read the report turned in by the Commission, it may be interesting to know the substance of it. At the time that this report was made it was the only practical and comprehensive information in existence in this country for the guidance of the Army in its defense against hostile aircraft. It was transmitted to the Adjutant General of the State of New York, and under his instructions was delivered by Major Stoddard and Captain Wilder in person to General McCain, the Adjutant-General of the Army. The Commission was highly complimented by various Generals and the report transmitted to Fort Monroe, where it was used as the basis of a text-book for the training of officers in the combatant forces. The following pages give in general terms the substance of the report and discussion of the problem of anti-aircraft defense.

Anti-aircraft artillery in its present form has been a development of this war. It has grown out of the necessities of the moment and by slow degrees. At the beginning of the War there was no such artillery and German planes used to sweep down over the Allied trenches and drop bombs on the infantry. In order to prevent such attacks, machine guns were stationed just back of the infantry trenches and their fire forced the hostile aeroplane to fly higher. This height was not sufficient, however, and field-guns were installed on make-shift mounts in especially prepared trenches behind the machine guns. No great improvement has been made on this method except in the mounting. The usual guns are the ordinary French seventy-fives placed on special mounts. They correspond nearly to our three-inch guns and have a range of approximately four miles. Such a range obliges the enemy aeroplanes to rise to a height of about eighteen thousand feet.

The French guns fire with extreme rapidity, sometimes as high as twenty-five shots per minute, and the German guns fire more

Digitized by Google

slowly. But this disadvantage was offset by the greater number of German guns.

The anti-aircraft artillery serves three purposes:

(1) It acts in an offensive way in bringing down or frightening off enemy planes which are trying to take observations along the front.

(2) It obtains information in regard to the movement of enemy planes and is thus a valuable addition to the Intelligence Department of the Army.

(3) It defends a city or a certain specified area and prevents the enemy from dropping bombs—at least accurately.

An aircraft fleet is made up of various types of machines. Certain planes are bombing machines, equipped especially to drop bombs on cities, forts, enemy trenches and workshops. Other machines are for the specific purpose of taking photographs of enemy positions. It is this function that has caused the aeroplane service to be termed the eyes of the army. Other machines are for the purpose of guiding the firing of the heavy artillery. The three types are interchangeable and may be used for any one of the three purposes. Such planes mount to a great height above the trenches and direct the fire of their own artillery. Still other machines are fighting machines only. It is their business to cooperate with the anti-aircraft artillery in preventing the approach of enemy aeroplanes or in preventing them from leaving the ground. The escadrilles are made up of several types of machine, the photo, observation, or bomb-dropping machines, which are slow-flying planes and which are protected by a number of fighting machines. When a fleet is composed entirely of rapid flying or fighting machines, its object is to attack the enemy planes in their own territory or which have crossed the line and are taking observations, or which are on their way to bomb a city.

The first business of the anti-aircraft artillery is to cooperate with these latter machines in preventing enemy aeroplanes from crossing the lines and taking observations. If such planes cannot

Digitized by Google

approach near enough to take photographs, the enemy is kept in the dark or, to use the popular term, his eyes are put out.

In addition to the field-guns already mentioned, and which are mounted on fixed mounts, the French in the beginning used auto-cannon or seventy-fives mounted on special automobile mounts which could be moved rapidly from place to place. These guns were moved toward a threatened point and the necessary instruments installed upon their arrival. It was soon found, however, that the attacking aeroplanes usually made a feint toward a given point and when the auto-cannon rushed up, or while they were still under way toward that point, the aeroplanes changed their course and attacked from a diagonally opposite direction, with the result that the auto-cannon were on the side opposite from the attack and were perfectly useless. The use of such auto-cannon was afterwards developed at the front, however, where a number of positions are arranged in advance and the cannon were moved from one place to another every day. After the anti-aircraft gun had fired for a few hours the Germans usually got the position and prepared to bombard it the following day. With the use of auto-cannon it is possible to shift this position so often that it is practically impossible for the enemy to find the anti-aircraft artillery. The positions are prepared in advance and the organization has been so perfected that guns and instruments can be installed and ready to open accurate fire within five minutes of the time of their arrival.

In firing at an aeroplane from the ground, two gun pointers are used, one for lateral and one for vertical deflection. This means that the sights are kept pointed directly at the target by constantly training the gun. All corrections for drift, time of flight, etc., are made on special instruments by other operators. These instruments move the sights in accordance with the corresponding amount in order to keep the sights pointed at the target. The instruments on the gun by which such a result is obtained may be compared to the ordinary slide-rule as they mechanically add and substract and reduce the corrections, which are set on the various scales, to a

Digitized by Google

simple movement of the sights one way or another. Both the lateral and verticle deflections vary with the speed of the target, the time of flight of the projectile and the usual secondary corrections for wind, drift, etc., and angle of approach of the target. Relatively speaking, it is impossible for the aviator to change his speed or his altitude rapidly and it is assumed that these factors will be constant during the time of flight of the projectile. The vertical and lateral deflections are obtained under this assumption, and later corrections for drift, wind, area of the day, etc., are set off on the secondary correction scales.

The angle of approach is the angle made by the symmetrical axis of the target (the fusilage) with the vertical plane of sight. When no wind is blowing, the fusilage points in the same direction as that in which the plane is moving, but when a wind is blowing across the long axis of the aeroplane, the line of the fusilage does not coincide with the line of flight of the plane. The head of the plane is on the line of flight of the machine, but the tail, due to the pressure of the wind swings to one side. Therefore, the angle of approach is not the intersection of the path of the aeroplane with the plane of sight except when there is no wind. This angle of approach is sometimes measured by instruments which are extremely accurate or it may be estimated by the battery commander.

The speed of the target is also measured by special instruments, although if the type of plane is known, its speed can be estimated by the battery commander. A skillful Frenchman is able to tell the make of a plane when it is still no more than a speck in the sky. The altitude is obtained by various methods, some employing a long base line and others an instrument similar to the Barr and Stroud. The altitude and other required data is continually measured or estimated during fire. Fuse-setter range also enters in. This quantity regulates the point of burst of the shell.

Suppose in horizontal or ordinary field firing the fuse was set at twenty-one seconds. Ordinarily this would explode the shell at about 6,000 yards in a horizontal plane. We could still have the

Digitized by Google

same fuse-setting and yet elevate the gun corresponding to the "fuse-setter range" and have the shell still travel the required twenty-one seconds and yet burst only 3,000 yards away. In the first case the shrapnel would perhaps just skim the ground glancing from stones and do considerable damage. In the second case, it would simply bury itself in the ground. There would be no point in ordinary field fighting in firing shrapnel 3,000 yards with a twenty-one second fuse setting, but there is a great deal of point in using the "fuse-setter range" in firing at aeroplanes where the shell bursts at a point 3,000 yards or so in the air.

A hostile aeroplane usually appears at a height of about six thousand meters and, as it is advisable for tactical reasons to open fire as soon as possible, fire is usually commenced at such a distance that the time of flight of the projectile is from eighteen to twenty seconds. The gun can be fired at a rate of twenty-five shots a minute. This means that there are four or five shots on the way by the time the first one bursts. As the plane moves nearly a thousand yards during this time and as it can move in three dimensions, it is obvious that the problem is to hit a twenty-foot cross—twenty feet being the spread of the aeroplane wings—in a sphere of a half-mile radius. The aviator may decide during this time to change his course in any of the three dimensions. The popular idea of shooting at aeroplanes is that it is like shooting a bird on the wing. In bird shooting, however, the time of flight of the shot or bullet is almost negligible and sufficient correction to obtain accuracy can be made by eye. The aeroplane on the other hand is going at a speed of about 135 miles an hour and the distance from the gun is many thousand feet.

The first shots of the eight or ten which are fired at the plane are carefully calculated to burst along the path the target is taking with the idea that both shell and aeroplane will arrive simultaneously. The others of the group are planted along the path that the battery commander surmises will be taken by the aviator in case he escapes the first shots. With five shots in the air before the first one bursts, it is evident that the element of unexpectedness to

Digitized by Google

the aviator is necessary to make aeroplane shooting anything but guess work or luck. It is considered by the French a waste of ammunition to fire more than eight or ten shots at a target from a single gun. If the first few shots fail to hit, the aviator will twist or dive or go off on the wing so that it is simply guesswork to try to predict his movements and fire again before he has laid his next course. The French gunners, being nimble-witted, use clever guesswork and never do the same thing twice. Even so, the best French batteries have only brought down one plane for six thousand shots fired, while the poorest battery of a certain army brought down only one in twenty thousand.

The fact that only one aeroplane is actually brought to earth for every six thousand shots fired is no indication of any lack of usefulness on the part of the anti-aircraft artillery because three or four shots will often cause the hostile aviator to turn back without accomplishing his mission, which may have been an attack on an observation balloon or may have been the taking of important photographs and the discovery of operations behind the lines. Where the anti-aircraft artillery is especially active, sometimes several days go by without the successful approach of an enemy aeroplane over the lines. The efficiency of the French method of diverting anti-aircraft fire at night is illustrated by the experience of a French aviator. A young aviator was ordered to make observations of the German lines. He was instructed to hand in reports at a certain time and place before ascending but, being young, he omitted the red tape. He went over the German lines and when he returned after night-fall he was greeted by fire from the anti-aircraft guns. He retired again over the German lines and returned at another point. He was again driven back by his own guns. This happened six or seven times before it occurred to the commander of the battery that there was something wrong. Upon inquiry it was discovered that one of the French aviators was missing and the man was allowed to land. By that time he was practically out of gasoline

As the anti-aircraft crews are obliged to be constantly on the

Digitized by Google

lookout for enemy aeroplanes, it is logical that they should be the ones to record the movements of all planes approaching from enemy territory whether they are able to open fire upon them or not. They thus become a valuable branch of the Intelligence Department. Neither the Infantry nor the Artillery has time to make such observations. They are busy with their own work and the air service itself cannot make records for the same reason, and also because a plane which is clearly visible from the ground frequently cannot be seen at all from the air on account of the cloud conditions.

The anti-aircraft artillery also serves in this connection as a guide to friendly aircraft actually in the air. An aviator may pass and repass within a few yards of an opposing machine without seeing him. It is the function of the anti-aircraft artillery to observe such manoeuvres and report them to the signal officers of the esquadrille. These officers in turn signal the aviator by wireless telephones or telegraphs, by flashlights or by ground signals. These ground signals usually take the form of white sheets laid on the ground in the shape of an arrow, the point showing the course the hostile plane has taken. Even in such comparatively clumsy work as the spreading of large white sheets on the ground, the men are so well drilled that the work is done in remarkably short time. The aviator looking down sees a white arrow suddenly appear on the ground beneath him and changes his course accordingly.

There are, of course, anti-aircraft guns used in the defense both of London and of Paris. When such artillery was first conceived, it was believed that auto mounts could be used and the defenders of the city were pictured as leaping upon their apparatus and rushing to the point of attack like firemen going to a fire. They were described as racing through the streets firing as they went. This idea has been used as a recruiting argument. However, in practice it is impossible to fire from a moving machine because such procedure involves the problem of constructing a motor truck sufficiently strong to withstand the setback of the gun and no accuracy can be obtained when firing from such a moving base. The

Digitized by Google

machine might take a sudden turn around a corner just as a gun was being fired and the shell would strike the roof of a building or a church tower instead of the enemy. Even auto mounts that could be rushed from place to place have been found to be impractical for reasons described. The enemy can dodge such guns before they are ready to fire. Several instances have occurred where the Germans have attacked a theoretically defended city without a shot being fired at them by the defending gun. This has led to the withdrawal of auto mounts from the defense of cities and has brought about the installation of fixed mounts for the defense of definite areas. One difficulty in using anti-aircraft guns where raids are infrequent, as they necessarily would be in the case of American cities, is the danger of the falling shrapnel. The question is often asked as to the rate of mortality among the civilian population from falling fragments of friendly shells because, of course, a piece of steel comes down at the same speed at which it goes up. The French answer this question by saying that there are no such cases on record, because everything that goes up is French, while everything that comes down is German. It is well known, however, informally, that many people have been killed by their own guns because, where raids are a novelty, the civil population, instead of retiring to cellars rushes out into the streets to see what is going on. No amount of argument has succeeded in preventing this in Paris.

Even at the end of the war when anti-aircraft defense had been developed considerably beyond the point where this report had been written it was only in its infancy. The use of aeroplanes is bound to become more and more important and in consequence the development of anti-aircraft defense will probably reach greater and greater importance in military strategy. It is therefore a matter of great pride to the Veteran Corps and the Ninth Coast that their officers foresaw this development and were pioneers in aiding this country to a proper consideration of the importance of anti-aircraft defense.

Digitized by Google

Chapter Thirteen

THE WORK OF THE REGIMENT

IT may surprise the reader to know of the varied and numerous activities in which the Ninth Coast engaged after its reorganization. These activities were of so many kinds that few even in the regiment itself knew of them all. It must be remembered that the country was in the grip of a great emergency, and that great numbers of able-bodied men had been drawn out of civil life to serve in the Army. In addition to this shortage of active workers there were a number of important and unusual activities to be carried on at home, activities that would have taxed the ingenuity of the city at any time, and emergencies arose which required additional work to protect the civil population. In many ways and for many duties a regiment like the Ninth Coast filled the place which would otherwise have been empty, and helped the work of the city to run smoothly where otherwise there would have been a hitch. The Ninth Coast Artillery Corps held itself ready to give assistance wherever a trained body of men was needed to carry on any work which protected the civil population or helped in the prosecution of the war.

An example of this is the work of the fire fighting company. We all remember the intense cold of the winter of 1917-1918. There was a perfect epidemic of fires, until the officers and men of the Fire Department were at the point of exhaustion. A very serious danger confronted the authorities. If the Fire Department gave out, the possibility of a great conflagration became almost a certainty. The call came to the Ninth to furnish a reserve force of fire fighters, to be ready to help out in case of a great emergency.

The Fire Fighting Company of the Ninth was commanded by Lieutenant (later Captain) H. King Coolidge, with Private John F. Mooney of the Eleventh Company, an ex-fireman, as Chief of

Digitized by Google

Staff. There was detailed a squad of eight men from each company. This work was carried on at Fire Headquarters in East 65th Street under the command of Captain Gurnee of General Dyer's Staff. These lectures at the Fire Headquarters instructed the officers from the various Regiments in all the details of fire fighting, including the use by means of demonstrations, of the different kinds of apparatus pertaining to fire engines, fire boats, hand extinguishers, fire hose and connections, tools, holders, nets, ladders, wall scaling, and the innumerable details of the work.

This work was finally discontinued, the authorities feeling that the necessity had passed.

The officers of the Fire Fighting Company made a most careful and elaborate inspection of the entire Armory, and as a result presented a most complete and valuable report of its condition in respect to danger from fire.

On November 15, General Dyer with two of his staff officers called at the Armory informally and met most of the officers of the Regiment. General Dyer gave a short, informal talk, which was very helpful, showing his interest in the Regiment and his appreciation of the work we were doing. It was the sort of talk which inspires men to renewed and greater effort.

For many weeks a detachment of men of the Quartermaster's Department of the U. S. A. were quartered in our Armory, using the gymnasium and some of the upper rooms. The regular army cooks pronounced our cooking arrangements to be perfect. While these men were stationed there a disastrous fire broke out in the early morning in the Salvation Army Barracks across the street.

The Troops distinguished themselves in helping rescue endangered inmates of the Barracks.

In the holiday season the use of our Armory was given to the War Camp Community Service, who, in connection with the New York Athletic Club, gave a fine boxing exhibition.

Meanwhile the process of organization and development went on continually and in a very satisfactory way. The Great War had taught military men many new things. Among others, the British

Digitized by Google

Army had evolved a fine bayonet drill. In order to see to it that our men had proper instructions for this, an expert, Sergeant-Major Covington, of the British Army, was engaged to teach the officers of the Ninth. Practice under his directions went on every Saturday afternoon until the officers were fully competent to instruct their men. Captain Henry Sillcocks, of the First Company, in the intensity of his efforts to carry out the instructions, so injured himself that he was disabled for a long time. Suffering great pain and discomfort he finally was compelled to relinquish the command of his company and to go on the reserve list.

On January 29 a dinner was given to Major Stoddard and Captain Wilder by the officers of the Ninth. Lieutenant-Colonel Burleigh acted as toastmaster. Speeches were made by Major Stoddard, Captain Wilder and Colonel Delafield. Among the guests present were Colonel Arthur Schermerhorn, Major Edwin Gould, Colonel Falls of the Seventh, Colonel Wells of the Seventy-First, Major Teets of the Eighth, Major Strong of the First Field Artillery, and Captain Kellogg of the U. S. Navy.

After his return to this country, and especially after the completion of the report to the War Department, Major Stoddard was very active in making speeches and delivering lectures on the subject of his experiences abroad, seeking in every way to arouse the people to a realization of the tremendous task before this country.

On January 19, 1918, the Ninth was ordered to furnish a battalion to a Provisional Regiment of the Guard detailed to act as Guard of Honor and escort to the Serbian War Commission. To all who love deeds of daring and heroic endurance it was a welcome task to honor this ally of our Country. The First Battalion was detailed to this duty.

This was also the first public appearance of our band. The Ninth had organized an enlisted band. Mr. Kenneth Woodward, with great industry, had carried on this work and his men, joining with the musicians of the other commands, formed an unusually large, if improvised, band; much of the credit going to the Ninth because our lusty and skillful bass drummer was chosen for that

Digitized by Google

important position and his big bass drum was marked "Ninth Coast Artillery Corps."

On February 28, the Second Battalion gave a very interesting and picturesque drill which included street riot tactics, setting-up exercises, bayonet work, dog-tent pitching and guard work. The dog-tent pitching and guard work were especially well staged. A company appeared in heavy marching order, halted, proceeded to pitch the dog-tents while the usual guard was posted. The lights were lowered until it was quite dark, the men rolled in their blankets, crept into the tents, taps sounded, then attempts to run the guard were shown. The lights were then brighened, reveille was sounded, and there followed a competition in rolling up the blankets and tents which excited great interest. The review was taken by the Hon. Edward R. Finch, Justice of the New York Supreme Court.

The question of riot drill, proper tactical formation for street fighting, dispersing mobs, etc., had received attention. Captain Barrett Putnam Smith, descendant of General Israel Putnam of the Revolutionary Army, has written an account of the development of this.

"Shortly after the 'muster in' of the Ninth, in the fall of 1917, a regimental board of officers was appointed to investigate the question of riot tactics, with a view to preparing the organization for the duty it was most likely to be called upon to perform. It will be recalled that there was at that time considerable apprehension in many quarters as to what the future might develop in the way of an outbreak of disorder and violence in the city, organized or otherwise, from any one of several causes; the possibility of trouble from the very large element of German sympathizers in the population, the known disloyalty of certain political factions, and there were even dire predictions that the draft calls would result in rioting by the lawless as in 1863. Fortunately such fears were proven groundless, though recent disclosures perhaps might justify the belief that had there been no State troops in readiness for an emergency of this sort at all times something unpleasant might have been attempted.

The formations found most suitable for the regiment were Street Column and the Hollow Square. These movements being simple, training progressed with rapidity. As they were necessarily restricted in area of evolution by the width of the average street, a two platoon company formation was adopted in order to secure maximum flexibility, permitting free interchange in either company or battalion units from one to the other.

Digitized by Google

Various movements inv[illegible]g the use of flankers for covering intersecting streets while on the march, etc., w[illegible] devised and prac[illegible] as well as the utilization of independent squads. The [illegible] Company armed with the Lewis guns was drilled with the regiment i[illegible] a way found to bring these guns into action rapidly from an[illegible] *w Square,* and without appreciably diminishing the fire power of the [illegible]es, by echeloning them outside.

The formations adopted by the Ninth, particularly the *Square,* have been subject to criticism on the score that at no time should any but offensive measures be used in riot work, and that the *Hollow Square* being fundamentally defensive is therefore unsuitable. This contention while perhaps theoretically correct, loses much weight if it be kept in mind that in the suppression of violence in a city such as New York the holding by the military of many vitally important points against greatly superior numbers would assume the same value in moral effect as a tactical offensive measure, so that the use of the *Hollow Square* for this purpose would tend to vest it with offensive qualities. Used in combination with a purely offensive formation, the *Street Column,* there can be no doubt of its value for city use.

By the simple expedient of using front and rear ranks as independent platoons, whereby the rear rank of the first platoon became the right, and the front rank of the second the left face of the formations, the *Column* and *Square* were found to be entirely satisfactory for use by single companies, thereby greatly increasing the effectiveness of the regiment and expanding the zone of its operations.

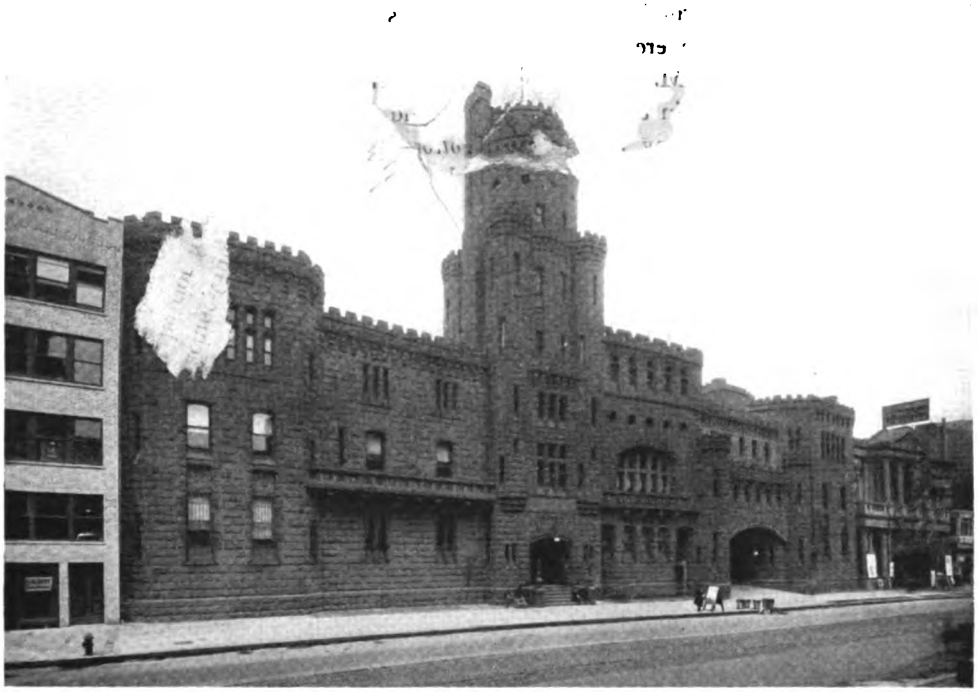
A Riot Drill in Madison Square Garden during the Military Exhibition in January, 1918, by a battalion commanded by Major Stoddard and the M. G. Co. of the Ninth C. A. C. was most favorably commented on by competent judges.

It may also be of interest to know that after leaving the Ninth, Captain Smith tried out the *Street Column,* etc., with his company of the Seventy-First Regular Infantry, 11th Division. This company was about the size of the largest battalion of the Ninth C. A. C., two hundred and fifty men in four platoons of seven squads each and armed with rifles, hand granades, automatic rifles, Browning and rifle grenades. It was of course necessary to simulate the streets, houses etc., of a city, but it was gratifying to find that the formations were sound in principle and flexible enough to permit the use of all weapons and secure full fire power, which was difficult unless the company was deployed or in a formation of combat groups.

It so happend that fate decreed that the Riot Drill practiced so often on the floor of the 14th Street Armory should not be tested in the crucible of action, but had it been otherwise, no one familiar with the personnel of the regiment can doubt but that it would have stood that test, and stood it well."

During the winter a number of ladies met in the Colonel's reception room at the Armory and organized as the Woman's Auxiliary of the Ninth Coast Artillery Corps. Colonel John Ross Delafield

Digitized by Google



THE ARMORY, 125 WEST 14TH STREET.

2ND BATTALION AT RIOT DRILL.

Digitized by Google

welcomed the ladies to the Armory, and congratulated them on their proposed patriotic service. The Adjutant, Captain Frank E. Davidson, addressed the meeting, outlined the objects to be attained, and assisted in the organization. The officers were:

Mrs. Howard Duffield, Chairman, Mrs. Ernest P. Hoes, Treasurer, Mrs. Ethelbert Ide Low, Secretary.

The wives of all the officers and the enlisted men were invited to join, and where the member of the regiment was not married, he was invited to designate his mother or a sister for membership. The dues were fixed at one dollar per year.

The Woman's Auxiliary was of great assistance to the Regiment, donating many things that it needed and could not get from the State. Among many other things should be mentioned a first-aid kit for each of the Companies and the Sanitary Detachment.

When the First Battalion held some drills in Van Cortlandt Park, the Canteen Committee, wearing their attractive uniforms with appropriate brassards, and under the very capable and enthusiastic direction of Mrs. Frederick W. Longfellow, provided a delightful luncheon, which was much appreciated.

The Auxiliary held its last meeting in May, 1918. At this meeting it was decided to postpone further action until the Winter. When the Winter arrived, the Armistice had been signed, and no further immediate work seemed necessary; so it waited patiently until opportunity offered for further service, which came to it through the organization in November, 1920, of a new Ladies' Auxiliary of the Ninth Coast Defense Command. The retiring organization turned over to their successors the small balance in their treasury, which was sincerely appreciated.

On April 9 one of the most important and interesting reviews of the Ninth Coast Artillery Corps took place at the Armory on Fourteenth Street. Mrs. John Ross Delafield presented the Regiment with a new stand of colors. This was a very beautiful and impressive ceremony. One of the older men, now retired, looks back wistfully upon his service with the Corps and was especially impressed with the presentation of the colors, as well he might

Digitized by Google

have been. His description of the presentation is here given:

"An Armory on the night of a review is a busy place and an interesting one. The extra guards, the man a little late who rushes in frantic haste with the dread of a caustic Top Sergeant on his face, the pretty girls with a kindly eye for the spruce young officers, the wife, mother, sister or sweetheart anxiously looking for Harry; the Staff severely conscious of their own importance—much more so than anyone else—and the Adjutants, those marvels of precision and military alertness. Yes, we write humorously of it, but when the fateful sixty-fourth birthday has come, and the honorable but unwelcome words "Retired List" have been written after your name, there will come times when you wish most sincerely that they were yet in the future.

So it was an important evening for the Ninth. We were to receive a set of colors. They had been exhibited in the window of a fashionable uptown shop and greatly admired, and they were worth admiring. The bugles sounded, and there was a great running to and fro, a snapping of the rifle locks, the crisp voice of the Top Sergeant, that magnate and autocrat, and the counting off—One, two, three, four. They form in Battalions. The Color Guard in place with empty slings and no colors, then maneuver until they take their final place, the First Battalion facing east, the Second south, and the Third west. Our attention is then focussed on the Adjutant, so trim, so alert, so debonnaire. Then on our great, big Colonel, picture of a soldier, and his Staff. The writer confesses that the Staff in his day was not always perfect in drill and there were times when some of the Staff were or should have been thankful that the Colonel could not see out of the back of his head, although half the men of the Regiment thought he could, while every one of them knew the Lieutenant-Colonel could see out of the back, front and both sides of his head at the same time.

We then had that very simple, very beautiful ceremony of Evening Parade, including Retreat. It was a wonderful sight to see those earnest, determined men at present, and soul stirring when the flag came slowly down.

The Colonel faces about. The Staff takes its proper place; the Color Guard marches out and takes position on the Colonel's right, facing east. Mark that Color Guard—it's old New York in New York's oldest regiment—Shrady, Rhinelander, Beekman, Pierrepont. The Lieutenant-Colonel here leaves his place and marches to the Colonel's box. From the box steps a sweet, dainty little lady—simply gowned—and with her two sons, manly boys, carrying the flags. I wish, reader, I could make you see that scene as I saw it then, and as I sometimes see it when at home, I sit in front of the fire and think of the days when I wore the uniform.

When they come in front of the Colonel, in a clear, gentle voice, Mrs. Delafield presents the colors to the Regiment, and in a few choice sentences, the Colonel accepts. Then the Colonel commands the Chaplain, and the Chaplain steps forward, and asks

Digitized by Google

the blessing of Almighty God upon our colors, upon our regiment, and upon our country.

The band strikes up "to the color," and the Color Guard marches in front of the regiment, each battalion coming to present as the colors pass, and then the Color guard takes its proper place. The Colonel escorts Mrs. Delafield and the boys to the reviewing stand. Lieutenant-Colonel Burleigh takes command; we pass in review, and the ceremonies are over.

In March a Military Tournament was given in Madison Square Garden for the benefit of the Women's Overseas Hospital. The Second Battalion of the Ninth, then commanded by Major Francis R. Stoddard, Jr., was invited to take part, giving an exhibition of riot drill, and it was allowed ten minutes. The invitation was a great compliment, for there were many participants from the Navy, the Marines and the Regulars. The bands of several of the organizations which participated were massed, that of the Ninth included, under the direction of Lieutenant John Philip Sousa. In the afternoon the guest of honor was the Secretary of the Navy, Hon. Josephus Daniels, and in the evening the Governor of the State of New York, Hon. Charles S. Whitman. When the time came the men of the Ninth marched in under the command of Major Stoddard; proceeding column of Squads they went around the arena, then forming in column of companies advanced to in front of the Governor's box, presented arms. Then forming in hollow square they proceeded with their riot drill, freely using the machine-guns. There was plenty of rifle firing. Altogether it was a very impressive piece of work. Everything went smoothly. Every command was obeyed with snap, and in exactly eight minutes it was over. This demonstration made a deep impression on those who saw it and was received with tremendous applause. There was an air of reality about the work of our men, an appearance of earnestness and determination. As our Battalion manoeuvred Governor Whitman turned to General Sherrill, who was with him, and said, "These are the Regulars from Fort Slocum?" "No," said General Sherrill, "that is a Battalion from the Ninth Coast Artillery, Delafield's regiment." The Governor would not

Digitized by Google

believe it until he recognized some of the officers and men who were personally known to him.

To settle any doubts as to the truth of this anecdote, the Historian wrote to Governor Whitman and received the following reply:

Alexander R. Thompson, Esq., "April 21, 1920.
Room 1803,
27 Cedar Street, New York.

My dear Sir:

Answering yours of April 20, I recall the incident to which you refer, and the story is substantially true.

I am very glad indeed to hear from you, and appreciate your kind expressions of regard.

With cordial good wishes, I am always, Sincerely yours,
Charles Whitman. (signed)"

These men, late of the V. C. A., were men of standing in the community, men who had made their mark, men of high character and ability; they were doing this work because they wanted to serve the State and the Nation. It was of these men and men like them that General Bell and Colonel Rose had spoken so highly. No better illustration of what manner of men they were can be given than the following extract from an account of the early history of the Second Battery, written by Captain (later Lieutenant-Colonel) Stoddard, its first C. O.

"Several things stand out in my memory which are connected with the Second Battery of the V. C. A. When I first took command, it was composed of about forty men. First and Second Lieutenants had been assigned to me but I had no non-coms and nearly all of the men were strangers to me. In order to select acting corporals I formed the battery and requested each man who had seen previous military service to step to the front. About sixteen men stepped forward and I questioned each one. The answers that I received typifies the V. C. A. Two men had been Colonels in the National Guard; another man had been a member of Roosevelt's Rough Riders; another had been a Lieutenant in a

Digitized by Google

revolutionary force raised in Argentine Republic to invade Paraguay, where he had been wounded; another had served fifteen years in the Seventh Regiment; another had been a Lieutenant in the U. S. Army during the Philippine Insurrection and had been wounded; another had been machine gun expert in President Sam's Army in Haiti. I selected a former Lieutenant-Colonel of the Florida National Guard as my First Sergeant, while Corporals were selected from the best of the remaining experienced men. For some time thereafter, I kept learning that some private had formerly been a high officer with a long record of military service. One day a very vigorous, gray-haired man, whom I had known as a member of the Society of the War of 1812, reported for drill and announced that he had served in the Civil War. The personnel of the company was wonderful. Someone once said that the only time that many of the members of the V. C. A. ever took orders from anyone was when they came to drill. Among my men I found presidents and managing officers of many of the largest business concerns in the city. There were several prominent lawyers, among them two judges. One man was a prominent doctor. A former acting Governor of Porto Rico and U. S. Minister to Peru was drilling as a private. One day I received by mail a book on a leaf of which was a dedication from its author, a rear rank private. Some one seeing the book on my desk, remarked that it had been one of the best sellers during that season. The best clubs and societies of the city were represented by the men in the ranks.

"One day an incident occurred which showed what sort of men composed the company. One of the former privates, ex-Senator Howard R. Bayne, of Staten Island, was scheduled to speak that evening at a meeting of the Sons of the Revolution. Before dismissing the men at the end of their drill, I stated that I thought it would be a nice tribute to Senator Bayne, if those members of the company who belonged to the Sons of the Revolution attended his lecture in uniform and in a body. About thirty of the men stated that they were members of the Sons and that they could attend the lecture.

Digitized by Google

"The Battery at first had one compulsory and two voluntary drills a week. By unanimous vote of the Battery it was agreed that there would be three compulsory drills and that no further men would be enlisted who did not obligate themselves to drill three times a week.

"The Battery was soon filled. The maximum number in the battery had been set at 118 and as I was allowed two extra men because of details, my total number was 120. My ordinary attendance, three times a week, averaged about 110 men. There were only 100 rifles assigned to the battery and there never was a drill at which I was not obliged to borrow rifles from some other battery. I do not believe that any military organization had a better personnel than did the V. C. A. at the time of which I write, which tends to explain the wonderful record which it made, then and later in the 'Ninth.'

"The famous old Fifth Squad of the Second Battery still retains two members who were connected with it when it was chiefly composed of rare old New Yorkers whose eight respective ages totaled nearly 500 years. The Nestor of the Squad was Thomas R. Murray, who insisted that he was seventy-six and J. Edward Weld, Charles Bellows, William K. Wardner and John Winters Brannan, all admitted being over twenty-one.

"Back in V. C. A. days it was the leftflank squad and suffered from short legs and still shorter wind. Whenever the Second executed a column right or left, led off by its taller squads, the noble Fifth Squad did some spread-eagle stepping around the corner, and when turns were made in company line Privates Murray and Bellows gave dangerous imitations of school-boys on the tail end of a 'crack-the-whip.'

"But Captain Gage always called them the 'old reliables,' and the War furnished no better examples of patriots than the men of sere years who made good in the ranks, although any of them could have secured an honorable discharge by telling the surgeon how old they were." [From *"Ninth Coast News,"* January, 1919.]

Digitized by Google

Chapter Fourteen

IN TIME OF NEED

ORDERS were issued in the spring of 1918 from Brigade Headquarters for the Regiment to help out with the Third Liberty Loan Drive which was just starting. The first day the Band with the field music did yeoman's service. The Regiment was thoroughly canvassed, and, in addition, men of the Regiment worked hard in their business and professional circles. At the end of the first week of the Drive it was determined to parade the Liberty Loan district and by means of the music, speeches, solicitation, to see what could be done. On Saturday afternoon the First Battalion was ordered out. The Franklin Trust Company, now the Bank of America, in this and every similar parade furnished skilled men, well stocked with bonds, subscription

Digitized by Google

blanks, weekly payment books, circulars, etc., who rode in the motor trucks under the command of a Lieutenant blessed with a voice which had the penetrative qualities of a steam calliope. The Regiment marched west on Fifteenth Street to Eighth Avenue and up Eighth Avenue till the Band reached Twenty-Third Street, and then and there began to try to sell bonds. A frost occurred. The only people who could even attract attention were Captain Thebaud and Captain Barrett Smith. Thebaud would spot a victim, fix him with his eagle eye, while Barrett Smith would, in his snappiest manner, give him a pen and say "sign here." However, he didn't sign there or anywhere else, so Major Delafield determined to hie with his Battalion to the haunts of the rich and fashionable. The Battalion marched East to Fifth Avenue and up to Thirty-Fourth Street, and there the Lieutenant referred to, when the Band stopped invited them every one to "come buy a bond," in tones that would penetrate the deafest of ears. When Captain Smith wasn't looking Captain Thebaud hypnotized a citizen and took his fifty dollars, letting the bank men give him a bond. The women were pretty and modishly gowned and the men looked rich but they didn't buy. Then off marched the Battalion to Eighth Avenue and down to Twenty-Third Street. It soon became apparent what a difference it means in New York business which side of the street you are on. Several hundred dollars worth were sold and when the Battalion got tired standing it hiked off for Abingdon Square and left one truck with several suave and fascinating privates to exhaust the finances of the neighborhood. Catching up with the Battalion in Fourteenth Street, after their visit to Abingdon Square which was unsuccessful, they proceeded to Union Square. There began real business. The band played, men made short addresses, trained bond salesmen and men who wanted to try their luck circulated through the crowd. Some one started the cry "Come sign up for your bond on a soldier's back." Looking over the crowd it didn't seem possible to sell over a few fifty-dollar subscriptions, but nearly ten thousand dollars worth were sold.

Digitized by Google

Two or three times a week one of the Battalions would undertake this duty. One evening they stopped in front of a large restaurant with a foreign clientele. The Band played and people crowded to the windows to watch and applaud the men as they were put through the Manual of Arms. Then a group of picked salesmen from the ranks, with their rifles slung over their shoulders, went inside and got busy. A few short, snappy speeches were made. Every announcement of increased subscriptions added to the enthusiasm. Finally one gentlemen said that he would double the subscription in that room up to ten thousand dollars. "Let's stick the old Guy," a sportive lady cried, and they did. He was game and finally came up to over twelve thousand dollars. One parade landed over twenty-nine thousand dollars, another over thirty-seven thousand. One evening a battalion went through the Italian quarter about Bleecker Street. How the beaus and belles of the Forties would have been astonished at the condition of their once aristocratic homes. The parade ended at Abingdon Square and sold over forty-five hundred dollars worth of bonds. A gray-haired Calabrian kept shouting "boy ten feefty—girl twelve feefty." Someone finally guessed that he had two children, a boy of ten and a girl of twelve, and that he wanted to buy a fifty dollar bond for each, so they took his money and made him happy.

Woman's Service Flag Parade

In order to promote enthusiasm for the Liberty Loan it was determined to have a large parade on April 26th. The striking feature of which was to be the Woman's Service Flag Division to be composed entirely of women entitled to carry the service flag. Offers to participate came pouring in on the authorities until they realized that it was going to be a tremendous task to organize this division which eventually turned out fifteen thousand women.

Colonel Delafield was appointed Chief of Staff to the Marshal, or rather the Maréchale. We did not know until the last minute who was to be chosen nor what difficulties there were in making the decision. When made it was certainly an excellent choice.

Digitized by Google

All the officers and most of the non-coms of the Ninth were ordered to report for duty in assisting the Chief of Staff in organizing and placing in position the various units and the thousands of unorganized participants. Of course many of the organizations knew their business, knew it well. Others had had no experience, and there was the great mass of women to be organized in platoons of twenty files. Trained then and there to keep their alignment, preserve their intervals and to "eyes left" at the reviewing stand. Platoon leaders to be selected, taught to give the right hand salute and to preserve their intervals.

The contingent from the Ninth knew their business. They had fine material to work with and made a good job of it. It seemed as if all the women in New York and its suburbs were going to march in that parade. They came in well organized bodies. Marching like veterans. They came singly and with hesitation, they came in two's and three's and in larger groups and each one carried her service flag; her heart was with her man. In hundreds of instances with her men. The work was well done, a credit to the teachers and to the taught.

The parade was a fine one. The First Division was made up of United States Infanty, Marines and Sailors. The Second Division was rather uninteresting, made up of many business and industrial organizations. Then came the women, headed by their Maréchale, Mrs. Robert Bacon, whose charm of manner and distinguished bearing showed the wisdom of those who appointed her; and in immediate attendance upon her was our big Colonel, a soldier every inch of him, and there were over seventy-six inches. With him were the Adjutant, Captain Frank E. Davidson and Sergeant-Major Paul Tillinghast. After Mrs. Bacon's comely Staff came a few automobiles carrying women who had five and six stars in their flags, then the women each with a service flag, platoons of twenty files, each with its leader. They marched well, mighty well, and still they came rich and poor, well dressed and in old clothes. Scholars in cap and gown, nurses in their trim uniforms, black and white; and as the mighty host passed by in order and with dignity,

Digitized by Google

it seemed as if one could sense the intense patriotism of the woman heart of America, its devotion to duty, its steadfast purpose.

On April 20 the entire Guard was ordered to parade as a demonstration in aid of the Loan Drive. It was the first appearance of the New York Guard in a body. The Ninth received its full share of the applause, and there was plenty of it. One of the great metropolitan newspapers rang up the armory to know if the Regiment were not Regulars. They insisted that it must be, because it marched so well and were so well equipped. The Adjutant and Sergeant-Major say that they frequently heard the cry "There come the Regulars" as the Ninth approached, and one youth was heard to say to his mother: "I hope when I get to be a soldier that my Colonel will be like that big one."

The line of march was up Fifth Avenue from Washington Square to Fifty-seventh Street, down by the Sixth Avenue Elevated to Eighteenth Street and a short march round the neighborhood. The Armory was then thrown open to the public. After evening parade the Colonel reviewed the Regiment and then came speeches. The Collector of Internal Revenue and Dr. Richard Derby, son-in-law of Col. Theodore Roosevelt, were among the speakers. Altogether the Regiment was credited with a total of $1,218,650.

While this Liberty Loan work was going on the men were also busy getting ready for first inspection. There had been no inspection by Brigade or State Headquarters in the V. C. A., and so to many of the officers this was a new experience. As far as the Field and Staff were concerned it was a formality, but it was no mere formality to the Adjutant, the Sergeant-Major and the Regimental Clerk. The latter was a very hard-worked individual. Shortly after the transfer from the V. C. A. the Ninth secured the services of Sergeant Paul J. Hulser as Regimental Clerk. He knew the regulations, was familiar with the Guard paper work and was always good-natured and courteous, and his untimely death months later in Serbia, came as a shock to the Regiment.

This first inspection did a world of good in teaching the neces-

Digitized by Google

sity of proper handling of company paper-work. The muster rolls were not up to the mark, but with that exception the Regiment showed up well, extraordinarily so for a command which had so many inexperienced officers.

On April 8, 1918, a service was held at St. Patrick's Cathedral, in memory of a number of American citizens who had been killed by a German shell while attending divine service in the Church of St. Sulpice in Paris. The officers of the Regiment were notified that a requiem mass would be sung on April 8, and invited to attend in a body. The north side of the main aisle was occupied by Guard officers and by units of American nurses. In addition to the solemn and beautiful service there was an eloquent and patriotic sermon.

During the winter of 1917-1918 a special guard was maintained in the Armory for the protection of the rifles, machine-guns and ammunition so essential to the protection of the city. Every night an officer, one or two non-coms, and half-a-dozen privates of one of the several companies in turn marched guard in the Armory lest perchance any evil-intentioned group of would-be malcontents should make an attempt to seize the building or the rifles, machine-guns and plentiful ammunition therefor then stored within its walls. The guard was posted at night and relieved each morning at daybreak. It was excellent practice for officers and men, and demonstrates in its way the tendency of the authorities to neglect no precaution in times of stress.

On May 1, about 8 o'clock P. M. a telephone message was received to mobilize at 8 A. M. the next morning and to proceed to the Battery at 8:30 A. M. to act as escort to two bodies of foreign troops, a battalion of Anzacs and a company of French Riflemen (Shock Troops)—"the famous Blue Devils." Every thing went smoothly and easily; and had it not been that the telephone exchange was out of order in Staten Island and prevented our notifying one company, it would have made a record. Several companies had 99 per cent present. At 8 o'clock A. M. the regiment was transported to the Battery by the Elevated Railroad in a special train.

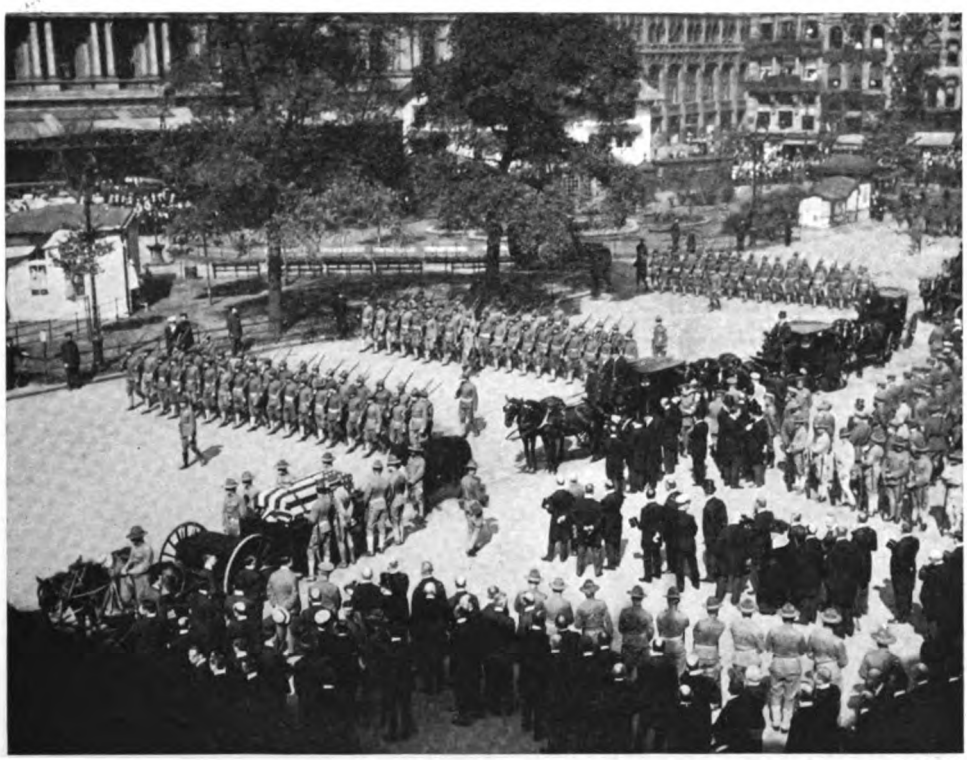
Digitized by Google

MAYOR JOHN PURROY MITCHEL.

Digitized by Google

The foreign guests arrived and were received with ceremony. They were splendid fellows and the Ninth was glad that it had been chosen to welcome them. The Band did finely, tackled the Marseillaise at sight, and played so well that the French Major with characteristic French tact asked Colonel Delafield if they were not mostly of French descent.

The visitors were escorted to the City Hall where they were formally received by the municipal authorities; after which all proceeded uptown. They were greeted with much enthusiasm all along the line.



THE FUNERAL OF JOHN PURROY MITCHEL.

Digitized by Google

GOVERNOR CHARLES SEYMOUR WHITMAN.

Digitized by Google

On May 24th the Regiment tendered a review to Governor Whitman. Before the review, Colonel Delafield entertained the Governor and a number of guests at dinner at the Union Club. Among those present were: Col. John J. Byrne, Mr. H. M. Myrick, Major Howard Thayer Kingsbury, Rev. William T. Manning, Mr. Howard R. Bayne, Maj. Howard C. Smith, Commo. Louis M. Josephthal, Mr. E. H. Outerbridge, Justice Edward R. Finch, Lieut-Col. Howard E. Crall, Maj. Edwin W. Moore, Mr. Frederick C. Harriman, Brig.-Gen. Charles H. Sherrill, Lieut.-Col. George W. Burleigh, Maj. Edward C. Delafield, Maj. William L. Hodges, Capt. Frank E. Davidson, Justice Henry A. Gildersleeve, Lieut.-Col. Arthur Schermerhorn, Maj. Francis L. V. Hoppin, Mr. Eliot Tuckerman, Capt. Paul Gibert Thebaud, Maj. Charles A. Clinton, and Chaplain Howard Duffield.

The Governor was properly received as he entered the Armory: the Field Music played flourishes and the Second Company, under Captain Gage, the Senior Captain, presented arms. After the review the Second Battalion gave a riot drill, and the Motor Corps of the National League for Women's Service, an exhibition drill. The Governor made a short speech to the Regiment, which was followed by Evening Parade and Retreat, and later by a reception in the Colonel's room.

On July 11, 1918, at New York City, occurred the public funeral of Major John Purroy Mitchel of the United States Aviation Service, who lost his life at Rockwell Field, San Diego, California. Lieutenant-Colonel George W Burleigh was in charge of all the arrangements at the City Hall, and in the large military escort following the casket containing Major Mitchel's remains, the Ninth Coast, led by Colonel John Ross Delafield, occupied a place in line. The procession passed from the City Hall to St. Patrick's Cathedral, where a vast gathering witnessed the last services performed over the body of the late Mayor. The public funeral of Major Mitchel was impressive. The youth and great promise of this public and patriotic official won for him the respect and admiration of men and women throughout the country, and his friends in

Digitized by Google

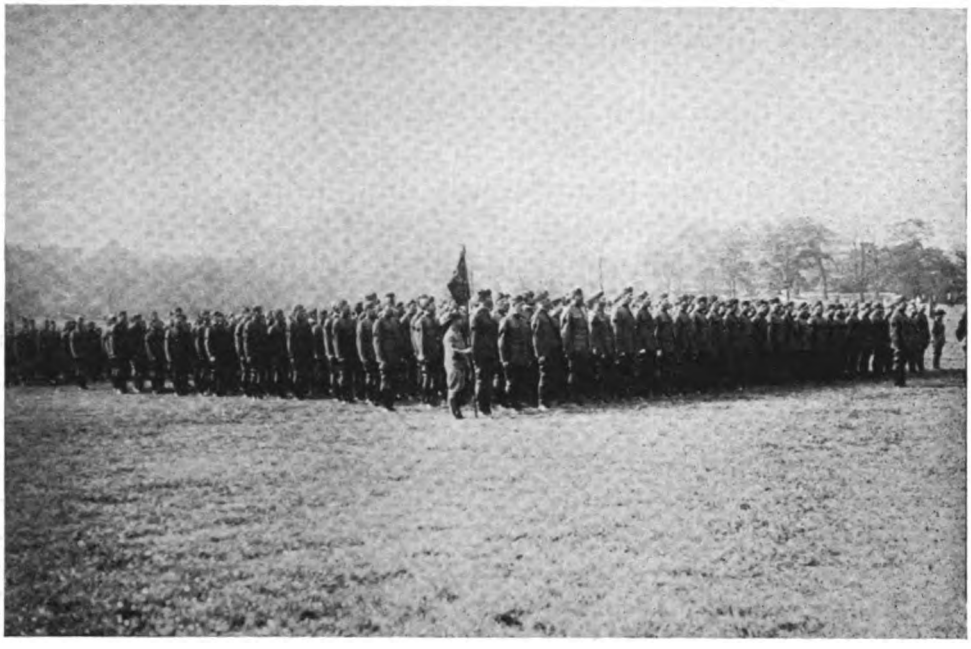
New York were counted by the thousands. In the many high places occupied by Mr. Mitchel in the city government, his ability and patriotic qualities attracted an ever-widening attention, and his rise to the position of Chief Magistrate of the American Metropolis was remarkably swift. When his term of office as Mayor expired he was at the height, and his immediate entry into the military service of his country was to be expected of a man of his calibre.

While ruling the affairs of the city, it was Mayor Mitchel's duty to receive many of the foreign missions from overseas, sent to this country in the effort to secure America's aid to bring peace to a tortured world. In these days Mayor Mitchel conducted his great responsibilities with perfect tact, giving further proof of his unusual ability to meet and successfully cope with the most difficult and trying moments in the life of a prominent public official in the momentous years of the great international conflict.

Beneath and above all the public and private acts and utterances of John Purroy Mitchel, his outstanding qualities of a highly intelligent gentlemen, were evident to those who were his political opponents as well as to his friends. In the life of New York City his place has not been filled, and, as the years come and go, the citizens of the Metropolis are learning more and more to appreciate what has been taken from the civic progress of the Nation's most important community.

There are many semi-official branches of helpful work in the Army and Navy both abroad and in the camps in the United States. Of these a very important one was the Young Men's Christian Association. We at home did not always appreciate the importance of this, and indeed the men abroad did not always sense its great value. "Give me nine hundred men who have a Y. M. C. A. rather than one thousand men who have none and I will have better fighters every time," said Lieutenant-Colonel E. S. Wheeler, U. S. A., to General Pershing. General Pershing directed that Colonel Wheeler's letter be sent to the Y. M. C. A. officials and added the following endorsement. "The conclusions and opinions of Lieutenant-Colonel Wheeler are concurred in by

Digitized by Google



OVERSEAS SECRETARIES ON THE SHEEP MEADOW, CENTRAL PARK, READY TO PASS IN REVIEW.

these headquarters." The Y. M. C. A. Overseas Secretaries, as they were called, were in reality part of the Military establishment. They were subject to the articles of War (n-Sub-div. D. Art. 2) and wore the uniform prescribed for them by the regulations. They were ranked as sub-lieutenants.

It was of the greatest importance that these men, most of whom had no military experience, should be taught enough of the School of the Soldier to preserve a military bearing, to have correct military manners. Indeed it was essential that every Secretary should be a model of military obedience, military courtesy and military bearing; that he owed to himself, to his comrades, to his

Digitized by Google

Association and to the United States Army. General Orders 183—Division of the Philippines, 1901, says:

"In all armies the manner in which military courtesies are observed and rendered by officers and soldiers is the index to the manner in which other duties are performed."

This was as true of the Y. M. C. A. Secretaries as it has always been of the officers and men of the Army.

In order to help these devoted men, by giving them some training in the fundamentals of military life, Lieutenant-Colonel Burleigh of the Ninth had given a great deal of time and attention to the work of teaching them how to carry themselves and how to behave, with the rudiments of the School of the Soldier. Upon request Colonel Delafield gave the use of the Armory of the Ninth to the Y. M. C. A. training classes. Colonel Burleigh was ably assisted by Major Charles A. Clinton, Captains H. Pushae Williams, Edwin B. Jenks, Leonhard A. Keyes, H. King Coolidge, Lieutenants Tillinghast, Malcolm Simpson and H. P. Gallaher, and others. At first only a few hours were allowed, which made the work difficult. In every instance something was accomplished and in many instances a great deal. The adaptability of the American when in earnest, his quickness of perception, were wonderfully illustrated. To carry the work further, Colonel Burleigh compiled a very clear, precise set of rules which were printed in pamphlet form and entitled "Elementary Text-Book for Y. M. C. A. Secretaries." This was published by the National War Work Council of the Young Men's Christian Associations. With their training started and this little book to study under the leadership of the most experienced in each unit, they had an opportunity to perfect themselves before their voyage to Europe. In addition to the strictly military regulations, were some very clear, sensible instructions as to exercises and general behavior, the book also containing a set of valuable rules for instruction in litter-bearing, arranged by Captain Edwin B. Jenks, Sanitary Detachment.

The value of this preliminary training was apparent and a longer time was allotted to it. The new Secretary upon reporting was at

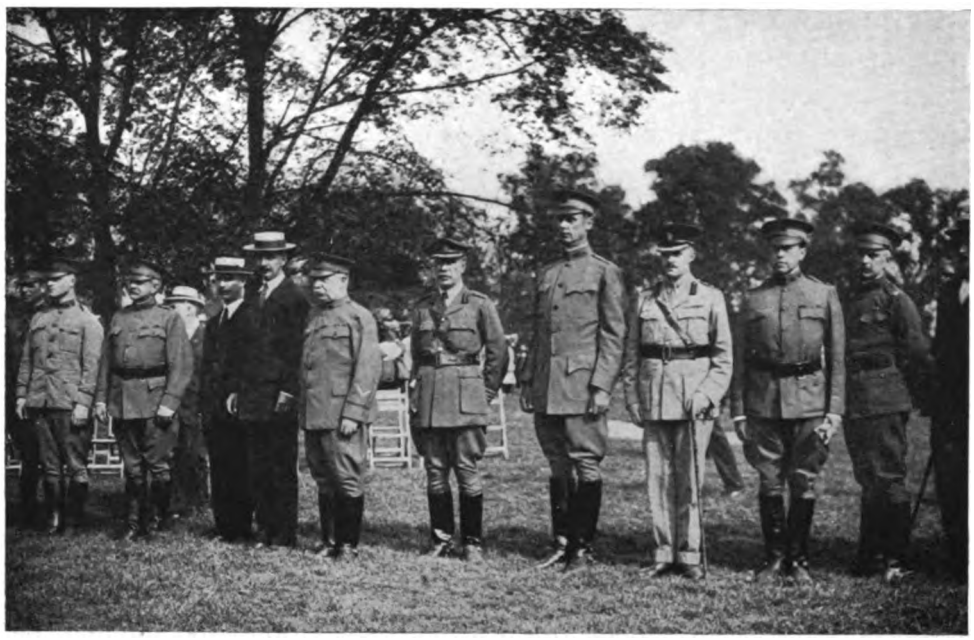
Digitized by Google

once inducted into the Company and the new company into the training regiment. This induction into the larger units had a very gratifying effect on the morale of the men. It gave each man an immediate appreciation of his responsibility and a fuller realization of the fact that he was a member of a larger unit with which his individual welfare was inseparably connected. It impressed upon him the absolute necessity for performing his part of the work accurately and completely to insure the team work which the military machine demands. After such an introduction the new companies were divided daily for squad work, but were placed as a part of a larger unit battalion or regiment for a short period during each day's drill. This system acted as a stimulus and brought about a competition that was helpful.

By the kindness of the Park and Police departments drills were held in the open. These were varied by visits to West Point, Camp Merritt and Pelham Bay Camp. During the summer Captain Jenks brought to the Park two ambulances manned by the American Red Cross Ambulance Unit of Yonkers, N. Y., and gave instructions to the Y. M. C. A. men, in groups of one hundred, in lifting and carrying wounded. On July 25, 1918, the pro-

LT.-COL. BURLEIGH AND HIS STAFF AT THE HEAD OF THE "Y" SECRETARIES.

Digitized by Google



GENERAL MANN AND STAFF.

visional regiment of Y. M. C. A. Secretaries was reviewed by Brigadier-General William H. Mann, U. S. A. In the reviewing party were Messrs. John Sherman Hoyt, Francis Louis Slade, Colonel John Ross Delafield, Ninth C. A. C., Major Howard Thayer Kingsbury, Captain Frank E. Davidson, Ninth C. A. C., Colonel Dennis, Canadian Army, William G. Gardner, of British Consulate, Lieutenant-Colonel Cathel, British Army, Señor Quesada, Vice-Consul of Cuba. Colonel Burleigh and his assistants were highly gratified by the fine appearance and soldierly bearing of the Secretaries. Any one who heard Colonel Burleigh's short, pungent address to the Secretaries would be firmly convinced of its good effect. With his forceful common sense he emphasized the practical things they should do, even to making their own beds when visiting, and the like homely but essential courtesies of daily life overseas. That these had great effect could be seen from the faces of the men addressed. No man could go through that training, short as it was, without being improved and to a certain extent

Digitized by Google

prepared for his frequently exacting duties in the A. E. F. In all, over four thousand "Y" Secretaries received their training by the officers of the Ninth.

At an assembly of the training regiment in Central Park on August 27, 1918, after Colonel Burleigh had completed his usual address to the men, a committee of the overseas Secretaries formally presented him with a .45 Colt automatic pistol and holster. The pistol was suitably inscribed upon a silver plate set in the stock. It read:

Lieutenant-Colonel George W. Burleigh, 9th Coast Artillery Corps,
New York Guard-Training Regiment Overseas Secretaries,
Y. M. C. A., August 27th 1918.

The following is a copy of the special permit issued by the Police Department for this instruction:

POLICE DEPARTMENT
CITY OF NEW YORK

OFFICE OF THE CHIEF INSPECTOR

New York, July 29th, 1918.

To Whom It May Concern:

Lieutenant Colonel George W. Burleigh, 9th Coast Artillery, New York Guard, is instructing and drilling the Overseas Secretaries of the Young Men's Christian Association, before their departure abroad. These drills are liable to take place on any of the streets of Manhattan or the Bronx.

Do not interfere with him.

(Sgd.) JOHN DALY,
Chief Inspector.

During the summer of 1918 the drills and other regimental activities continued. On July 27 the armed guard patrolling the Armory was relieved from duty.

During the spring and summer special attention had been given to rifle practice. A complete acount of this training and the results are shown later in this book in a comprehensive article prepared under the direction of Lieutenant-Colonel Edward C. Delafield.

Digitized by Google

Another interesting phase of military work was military map reading and making. Instruction was given under Colonel Delafield's direction to a class of our officers and men by two professors from the faculty of the College of the City of New York.

Another useful course of instruction was the training school for the officers of the New York Guard held at Camp Whitman, Greenhaven, Dutchess County, New York, from August 31 to September 14, 1918. Among other officers of the Ninth detailed as instructors was Lieutenant-Colonel George W. Burleigh whose subject was "Military Courtesy and Customs."

This lecture delivered on September 2, was not only much appreciated by the officers in command but had a marked effect on the students in the camp. Colonel Burleigh, from his long familiarity with Regular Army officers and his natural aptitude and innate thoroughness, was a master of the subject. A marked improvement was noticed in all the niceties of military manners. "In all armies men are first judged by the way in which they observe the rules and customs of courtesy. A Zachary Taylor or a Ulysses S. Grant may neglect these small things, but be sure, Mr. Officer, that you *are* a Taylor or a Grant before you do so." Major Howard Thayer Kingsbury, formerly of the Ninth, lectured on Military law. The following officers of the Ninth were detailed to give instruction in the British bayonet drill: Captain Cruse, Lieutenants Crawford, Schwab and Gallaher. Their work was highly commended by the commander of the Post, as were the services of Captain Cruse, Lieutenants Messenger, Simpson and Gallaher during the second week.

The Supply Officer of the Ninth, Captain Dos Passos, did a fine piece of work in handling the officers' baggage. Things arrived on time and were handled skillfully and promptly. Sergeant Kelly who drove our truck is entitled to great credit.

When camp was cleared out on Saturday morning September 7th it was the duty of each officer to see that the shacks were left clean and in order. It certainly was a source of pride and gratification to the Ninth to see how perfectly this work was done by

Digitized by Google

our officers. The cleanest shack of all was that of Company A where Major Gage and Lieutenant-Colonel Burleigh had been located.

On September 4th, while Company A was doing guard duty, Lieutenant-Colonel Burleigh acting as Corporal-of-the-Guard, the Guard was turned out for the Adjutant-General upon his arrival at the camp in his official capacity. Everything was done with snap and precision. A pleased smile came over the General's face when he saw who was Corporal of the Guard. It seldom falls to an Adjutant-General's lot to see how very efficient one of his aids can be as a Non-Com.

During August 1918, two cups were presented to the Regiment. One was given by Supply-Sergeant (later Captain) Robert Sedgewick, to be given to the Company having the best average in the following tests.

I. The highest percentage reporting for duty on every sudden call during the year.

II. The highest percentage of qualified Armory Markmanship.

III. The highest percentage of men efficient in signalling, both sending and receiving.

The other cup was given by Color-Sergeant (later Captain) T. J. Oakley Rhinelander for sharpshooters.

In 1919 the contest for this cup was won by Lieutenant-Colonel Edward C. Delafield.

During this month Private Oliver W. Mallaby died of pneumonia. He was an old V. C. A. man who had served in the First Provisional Regiment N. Y. G.

Major William L. Hodges, who was relieved from duty on August 10th, after one year of service with the First Provisional Regiment, N. Y. G., on the New York City Aqueduct, has received a very unusual letter of comment on his record from Colonel Rose

Digitized by Google

dated August 17th at the Headquarters of the First Provisional Regiment at Croton Lake, N. Y. The letter is, in part, as follows:

"III. It has been said that the history of the First Provisional Regiment's first year automatically divides itself into three portions: that of mobilization, organization and standardization. It may be well to add that the period of standardization and in a measure, reorganization does not yet seem past. It was in the mobilization and organization, the latter including construction, that Major Hodges was of such signal service to the First Provisional Regiment. This service was largely due to his special knowledge of varied subjects, particularly those pertaining to communication and housing, together with the large amount of talent which he was able to place at the service of this Regiment, due to his association with men gifted in many ways.

"IV. Camp Rose, selected on Sunday, August 12, 1917, as the headquarters of the First Provisional Regiment, and later amplified into a permanent Regimental Headquarters establishment, is to all intents and purposes the product of Major Hodges' ability and appreciation of the needs of the men and officers occupying it.

"V. Designated as officer in charge of the construction work, Major Hodges set about the matter of telephone and electric light construction work a few weeks after the Regiment entered the field, and it was no fault of his that both systems were not in operation long before the winter snows set in. It was very largely a result of his representations as an engineer and expert that the relations between the Telephone Company and the First Provisional Regiment, as well as the Electric Lighting Company and the First Provisional Regiment, were as smooth and harmonious as they proved to be in the early days of the construction and as they have remained ever since. Major Hodges' knowledge of the technique of telephone construction work enabled this Regiment to avoid tactical errors in the distribution and operation of its Guard Line Intelligence System.

"VII. Major Hodges' wide acquaintance with experts in engineering and construction enabled him to call to the service of the First Provisional Regiment in the matter of barracks construction Lieut. Herbert W. Lockwood, 9th C. A. C., who, as a steel manufacturer and jobber, was able to secure estimates and make purchases that kept the cost of the barracks of this Regiment well below the sum authorized by the City of New York. In conjunction with Lieut. Lockwood, Lieut. Arthur Wynne, 12th Infantry, and Lieut. Tremain McKinstry, of the 10th Infantry, Major Hodges supervised the work of barracks construction. * * * In spite of all obstacles and heedless of the many stumbling-blocks that seemed to be constantly falling in the path of the construction detail, Major Hodges brought to a successful conclusion this vital and immediate work.

"VIII. These three phases of the services rendered the First Provisional Regiment and the State of New York would, of themselves, constitute a record of which any

Digitized by Google

officer might justly be proud. But Major Hodges' record does not stop here. He was one of the officers who were able to grasp the larger view of the mission of this Regiment, and who appreciated from the beginning the real and great danger from sinister sources and influences found on every side.

"IX. As Commanding Officer of the entire sector of the First Provisional Regiment's line from the Hudson River to the City of New York in the early part of the year's services, and later when this big sector was divided into two battalions, as Commanding Officer of the First Battalion, Major Hodges maintained the one aim of efficient and unselfish service.

"X. But perhaps of more real value to the Regiment than anything else was Major Hodges' appreciation and exposition of the regimental spirit, which the Commanding Officer strove to inculcate in the period of mobilization and organization. Loyalty, unswerving allegiance to the best ideals of the service, and a kindly, helpful spirit marked the service and administration of Major Hodges from the time of his entry into the field.

JOHN B. ROSE,
Colonel."

Major Hodges went to the Aqueduct in command of the two provisional batteries of the V. C. A. on August 9th, 1917. These officers and men made a splendid record in this duty in which the Ninth can always take justifiable pride, for almost all the officers and men of that fine Battalion came into the Ninth. Major Charles Alexander Clinton served with the First Provisional Regiment again in the summer and fall of 1918.

The following lines of Sergeant Pinckney, printed in the *Ninth Coast News,* show the spirit and feeling of the officers and men of the Regiment during their efficient performance of these manifold duties:

"What are you going to say, my lad,
In the long, long years to come,
When your children sit on your knees at night
And ask what their 'Dad' has done?
Or if, old man, you are past that time
When you tuck your babies in bed,
There'll be lonely moments for you at your club
When the tales of the War are read.

Digitized by Google

We can't all follow the Stars and Stripes
To answer the great appeal;
To win for freedom or lie with the dead
' 'Neath the poppies of Flanders fields.'
But to you it is to stand prepared
To guard by day and night
The homes and loved ones of those who have gone
To give their all in your fight."

It was with considerable emotion that the regiment received the news that Colonel Delafield had been appointed Major in the Ordnance Department, U. S. A., and was about to relinquish the command of the Ninth. For many years he had been a devoted member of the Artillery Service Detachment, V. C. A., and with the late Frederick Sanford Woodruff had long been ideal Color Sergeant, and later Chief of Section. When the prospect of active duty confronted the Detachment the choice of a Vice-Commandant to command and organize the active military part of the Corps and Society was felt to be a matter of the gravest concern, The Council of Administration, upon which the duty of making the selection was imposed by statute, after the most careful consideration unanimously selected Color-Sergeant Delafield. A man of force and dignity, inheriting the finest traditions of the American Army officer, possessed of executive ability of high order, he had done fine work in organizing the V. C. A. and the Ninth Coast Artillery Corps.

On September 25, 1918, he was given a review by the Regiment and a farewell dinner by the officers. The review was in many respects like other reviews, but there was a touch of sadness in it for it marked a separation. An officer greatly respected and much beloved was giving up his command to accept a lower rank in a more important service. Many present remembered him as the stalwart Color Bearer in that small unit of aristocrats. Very many had seen him develop that unit into a large and efficient corps of guardsmen, and had followed when duty called him and them into the Ninth.

Digitized by Google

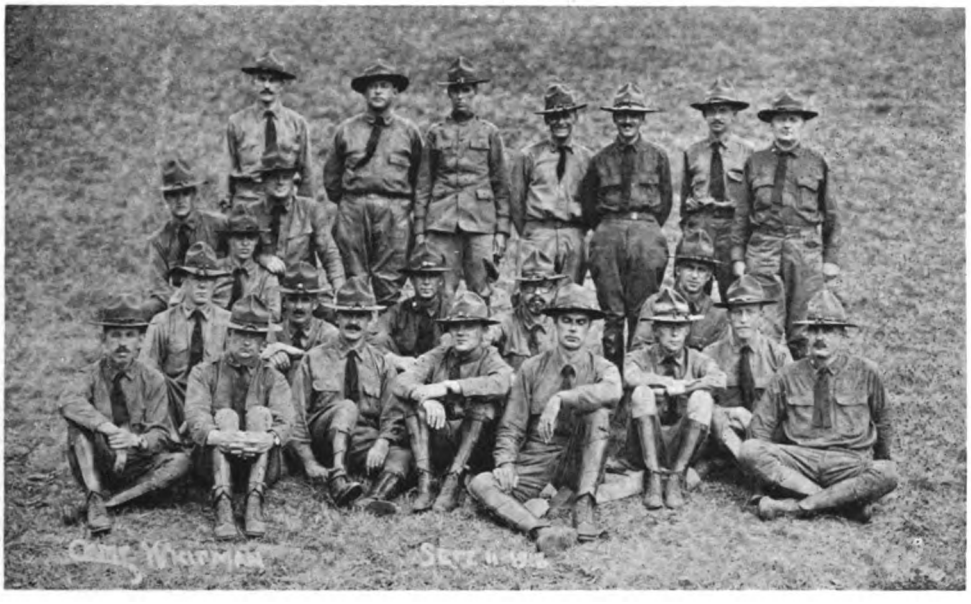
Digitized by Google

During the ceremonies Colonel Burleigh, who had just been commissioned Colonel and appointed to the command of the Ninth, presented Colonel Delafield, on behalf of the officers and men, with a beautiful sabre. At the end of the review, before the men were dismissed, the officers formed in two lines in front of the sally port, and stood at salute as the two Colonels passed between them. The officers were transported by the ladies of Colonel Bastedo's Motor Corps to the Union Club, where after an excellent dinner and a few well-chosen speeches they each in turn bade farewell to their retiring Commanding Officer.

READY TO DEMONSTRATE A LEWIS MACHINE GUN AT THE COUNTY FAIR.

Digitized by Google

LIEUTENANT-COLONEL BURLEIGH AND HIS OFFICERS AT THE OFFICERS' TRAINING SCHOOL, AT CAMP WHITMAN, AUG.-SEPT., 1918.



COLONEL DELAFIELD AND HIS OFFICERS AT THE TRAINING SCHOOL, CAMP WHITMAN, AUG.-SEPT., 1918.

Digitized by Google

COLONEL GEORGE W. BURLEIGH.

Digitized by Google

Chapter Fifteen

COLONEL BURLEIGH TAKES COMMAND

COLONEL DELAFIELD, who had previously applied for a commission in the Infantry, U. S. A., had been appointed Major in the Ordnance Department and was immediately ordered to an important post in the Disbursing Bureau. When the armistice was signed Major Delafield developed a plan for the settlement of the innumerable claims against the government, which was approved by the War Department. He was detailed to the organization of the Bureau of Contract Adjustment and promoted to be Lieutenant-Colonel and then Colonel. This organization of which he was the head had been invaluable both to the Government and to the contractors. It may be noted that another of our men served in that Bureau, Private Howard R. Bayne, of the 3rd Battery, V. C. A., and the 3rd Company of the 9th.

The following analytical appreciation of Colonel Delafield has been written by one who was intimately associated with him in his military work during the organization of the Detachment and the Ninth, a period of over a year.

John Ross Delafield is a large man in the best sense of the word. He had a big frame and good health, he had a big heart and sound common sense. He had a clear brain and an absorbing sense of duty. This steadfast sense of duty is his ruling passion. I saw him in the heyday of success when he had accomplished the impossible. I saw him when his duty called him to give up the Corps he loved so well and the Service dear to his heart without elation in one case and without depression in the other. With no vain regrets but rather with "patience firm and virtue high" he did the work before him and brought to his new tasks the zeal and energy he had shown before. During all the time I was with him, often when circumstances and people were trying beyond endurance, I never heard him say a discourteous word. There was a natural dignity about

Digitized by Google

the man which to many seemed to be austerity, but beneath it was a just and kindly spirit. His view of men and measures was the large just view. He seemed to see through the shams and pretensions into the real nature of men so that those he selected for commissions were well qualified and those whose pretensions exceeded their merits were passed by. He had the respect and admiration of his officers and men.

When Colonel Delafield accepted a commission in the U. S. Army, Lieutenant-Colonel Burleigh was promoted to succeed him as Colonel of the Ninth C. A. C. and continued the vigorous and efficient policy, skill and tact in administration and organization he had already shown. He was thus enabled to perfect the magnificent regiment he commanded.

There probably has never been a change in the command of a Guard Regiment which has been so smoothly and easily made as this change in the Ninth. The warm personal regard and professional cooperation between Colonel Delafield and Colonel Burleigh made the transition imperceptible and without friction.

Just as Colonel Burleigh's promotion was a perfectly natural evolution, so Major Edward C. Delafield became Lieutenant-Colonel. This very able, efficient and modest officer has been noted for his 100 per cent performance of every duty devolving on him.

Captain Ernest P. Hoes of the Tenth Company was promoted Major. Without a ripple these changes were made, and the work of the regiment went on smoothly and easily. But this smoothness and ease was due to the skill and ability of the officers and the high character and intense patriotism of the men.

Lieutenant-Colonel Delafield and Major Hoes were both not only men of unusual ability in their business and professional relations but were natural soldiers; men who had an inborn aptitude for military affairs and were both well fitted for high command.

On October 8, a Lewis machine-gun was sent up to the Bronx in charge of Private Henry C. Roe to be exhibited at "Liberty Land" in aid of the 4th Liberty Loan Drive, and on the same day the women of the Army Transport Service were given permission to

Digitized by Google

use the Armory for drill purposes in preparation for their participation in the Liberty Loan Parade on October 12. The entire Regiment was in this parade and made its usual fine showing. Its equipment, Sanitary Detachment Ambulances, Supply Company Trucks, Machine-Gun Company, with its Lewis guns, were noticed with approval.

In addition to its own participations in this parade, Lieutenants Elmer R. Hollander, Leslie A. Messenger, Harry P. Gallaher, W. Douglas Owens, Malcolm D. Simpson and John Messenger were detailed to assist in organizing the Ladies and Allies Divisions, returning to the Regiment in time to join their own Companies. Meanwhile Lieutenant W. Douglas Owens had been detailed to drill drafted men, who had been invited to appear Tuesday and Friday evenings. In addition to this Liberty Loan work permission was given the Independent Sons of Italy to use the Armory for Liberty Loan celebrations.

On Russian Day, October 16, the First Battalion with Machine-Gun Sections and Field Music formed at the Armory under the Command of Major Ernest P. Hoes and proceeded to the Waldorf Astoria, where it rendered salute to the Russian officers, and then escorted them to the Altar of Liberty in Madison Square, and after the formal exercises escorted them to the St. Regis, where the Field and Staff lunched with the Commission.

Colonel Burleigh participated in almost all of the ceremonies at the Altar of Liberty during the 4th Liberty Loan Drive, and with his Staff attended the final dinner on October 19 at the Army and Navy Club. On the afternoon of October 19 the Second Battalion turned out and collected the Standards in the Avenue of the Allies and carried them with due ceremony to the Army and Navy Club. On the evening of October 16 the Third Battalion paraded in the local rally for the Liberty Loan Rally which was held in the Armory after the parade. The regiment was credited with $2,621,050 in subscriptions to this loan. The Band did splendid work in this drive. The members cheerfully responded to every call and the calls were many.

Digitized by Google

On October 12 Colonel Burleigh and a delegation from the Ninth attended the formal opening of the United States Navy Rifle Range at Caldwell, N. J.

On October 14 the officers and men of the United States Transport *Von Steuben* gave a dance in the Armory.

On October 18 a squad was detailed to attend the funeral services of Private Walter E. Mason of the Thirty-first Field Artillery, U. S. A., the quarantine regulations preventing the detail of Regulars.

On October 24 the flag over the Armory was at half staff in memory of Private Harry A. Carroll of the Tenth Company.

On October 26 the following officers were appointed members of the Examining Board: Major Ernest P. Hoes, Captains Horace F. Pomeroy, Leonhard A. Keyes, Willoughby J. Kingsbury, Frederic K. Seward, Lieutenants Oscar W. G. Ericson and Bert Wilcox.

On October 30 the Third Battalion, under the command of Major William L. Hodges, acted as escort to the Polish Veterans.

On October 30 the flag was at half staff in memory of Corporal Archibald B. Dunn of the Eleventh Company.

On November 9 a dinner was given at the Union Club by the officers of the Regiment to Colonel Burleigh. Governor Whitman, Major-General Daniel Appleton, Brigadier-General Charles H. Sherrill (former Adjutant-General of the State), Rev. Dr. William T. Manning, Rector of Trinity Church, and Charles Frederick Hoffman, President of the Union Club, and Colonel John J. Byrne, U. S. A., were present as guests. It was on this occasion that Colonel Byrne transferred to Colonel Burleigh for safekeeping the old flags of the Ninth with their many battle rings. The old color-guard of the Ninth brought them into the room where Colonel Byrne presented the colors in an appropriate speech—the colors were received by Colonel Burleigh, formally acknowledged, and were placed in the care of a color-guard of Colonel Burleigh's regiment which reported for the occasion. This attention of Colonel Byrne and the very gracious way in which he made the transfer were deeply appreciated by every one present and his generous and kindly act applauded.

On November 11 the Colonel and his staff were invited to serve in

Digitized by Google

the parade inaugurated by the Fifth Avenue Association in celebration of the signing of the Armistice. The Parade formed at the Ritz-Carlton at noon and proceeded to the Army and Navy Club. From there the Allied flags were carried to the Public Library and raised on the staffs. A Battalion of the Twenty-second Infantry U. S. A. provided the guard.

In November, Captain Frank E. Davidson, Regimental Adjutant, was placed on the Reserve List at his own request, greatly to the regret of the entire regiment. The following appreciation of Captain Davidson was written by Major Hodges for the *Ninth Coast News*:

"The resignation of Captain Davidson and his retirement from the active duty of Regimental Adjutant fills with the deepest regret the hearts of all connected in any way with this organization.

His broad understanding of men and affairs and universally tactful manner of handling each situation as it arose with the suave diplomacy so inherent in him has assisted very materially in bringing the Ninth Coast Artillery Corps to the position it now occupies.

Captain Davidson has a long military record in the service of the State, being for eight years in the Seventh Regiment, after which in December, 1913, he joined the Military Society of the War of 1812, and rose rapidly in its Uniformed Detachment; the Veteran Corps of Artillery, S. N. Y., being commissioned First Lieutenant, and appointed Battalion-Adjutant in 1917. Captain Davidson did yeoman service with a detachment of our Corps that served in the First Provisional Regiment guarding the New York City Aqueduct when that detachment was placed under orders by the Governor of the State.

Captain Davidson has seen our organization through its formative stages in spite of many calls which would have caused a self-interested man to have ceased giving so much of his valuable time to the organization.

It is understood that he is being retained on the Regimental Staff, and we trust he may never actively, as we know he never will in his heart, become separated from us."

On November 29 the United States Provost Guard under Major P. L. Thomas gave a dance in the Armory. It had been using the Armory for drill purposes every morning except Saturday.

The Ninth provided a special guard of Honor for the Thanksgiving Day Services at Trinity Church; Lieutenant Wilcox was in command in the morning and Lieutenant Richard in the afternoon.

Digitized by Google

On November 29 the following orders were issued:

"General Orders
No. 25.

1. The death on November 26, 1918, of Abram Regus, a former soldier of the Ninth Regiment and an employee of this Armory is announced and in respect to his memory the flag on this Armory will be placed at half staff from Reveille to Retreat on Friday, November 29, 1918, the day of his funeral.

Abram Regus enlisted in the Ninth Regiment, June 9, 1870, and faithfully served in the organized militia of the State of New York for a continuous period of forty-seven years until July 22, 1917, when on entry of the Ninth Coast Defense Command into the service of the United States he was found physically disabled and was Honorably Discharged as First Sergeant.

He has a record for long and faithful service rarely excelled and to be envied by all true soldiers. At the time of his discharge from the service he was the senior First Sergeant in the State in length of service.

By order of Colonel Burleigh
Harry P. Gallaher,
Captain, Adjutant."

A review was tendered Brigadier-General George R. Dyer, commanding the division New York Guard at the Armory on Thursday evening November 21, 1918. The review was the first since Colonel Burleigh took command of the Ninth.

The size and arrangement of the Armory always presented certain difficulties to those in charge of ceremonies, and the Field and Staff of the Ninth received many congratulations for the manner in which they overcame the difficulties. New formations were executed and the disposition of the "elements of the command" was planned beforehand with considerable care by Lieutenant-Colonel Delafield and Captain-Adjutant Gallaher.

Colonel Burleigh was desirous that the Regiment be presented in "line of Battalions," something which it had been decided on many occasions was impossible. But by limiting the various "fronts" to sixteen files it was found possible to change the Battalion and regimental formations as desired. The companies were assembled along the west wall of the drill floor and the Battalions were then formed

Digitized by Google

facing south. When the three Battalions were formed each was in line facing south, one behind the other. The regiment then formed in "line of masses."

At evening parade the Battalions formed again in the same manner and the Regiment was presented to the Lieutenant-Colonel in line, each Battalion occupying a side of the armory. After passing in review the Regiment formed in "line of masses" for "trooping the colors" and was dismissed.

First Sergeant Kelly of the Sanitary Detachment received the New York State medal during the ceremonies, and, as the honor was unexpected, the Sergeant was said to have wondered what Kelly was meant when his name was called and he was ordered "front and center." Sergeant Kelly has served in the Guard for ten years, all but one being with the Ninth.

The Machine Gun Company gave an exhibition drill following the inspection and review, and executed a variety of complicated manoeuvres, most of them in double time. Then it moved in "column of sections" at the double to forty paces from the big guns, when the command "in battery" was given and it went into action in skirmish line. After two bursts of fire the company advanced by rushes, a section at a time, covering with continued fire, and then fired a simultaneous continued burst. It may not have occurred to the spectators, and indeed to many of the men of the Regiment, that there was anything unusual about the firing of blank cartridges in machine guns, but this is something that has seldom been achieved successfully, as moving-picture directors will testify. Usually the dummy bullets are of wax, but in a machine-gun the wax melts and a jam is the immediate result. After a little experimenting Captain Murray and Lieutenants Callingham and Scott of the Machine-Gunners discovered that papier maché bullets, with a small charge of powder in them, would fire without jamming, and the bullets would not fly far, as the powder exploded them a few feet from the muzzle. The company fired over five hundred rounds on this occasion without a stoppage. Lieutenant-Colonel Delafield tells of a friend of his, an officer in the Twenty-third, who was in the gallery during the review,

Digitized by Google

and when the "emma gees" started to go into action calmed the fears of a companion by asserting that the Lewis guns would never be fired. "They won't work with blanks," he said, and would have said more, but that the rattle of the guns interrupted him. The machine-gunners are fond of stating that they hate to talk about themselves, but in this case they need have no such modesty. They have the words of Captain-Adjutant Gallaher, Lieutenant-Colonel Delafield, and many other officers, that their performance proved beyond dispute that the Ninth has the best Machine Gun Company in the Guard.

On Wednesday, January 22, a review was tendered to Major-General Daniel Appleton, former commander of the famous Seventh New York Infantry. Colonel Howard E. Crall, its present commander and his field and staff officers were present as guests of the Ninth.

The review was followed by an exhibition drill by the Machine Gun Company and a street riot drill by the First Battalion, Major Hoes commanding, in which a platoon of the machine Gun Company took part. The machine gunners varied their exhibition by dismounting and assembling their guns, and then firing them as evidence that there were no parts left over.

Colonel Burleigh, in addressing General Appleton, said:

"On behalf of the officers and men of the Ninth Coast Artillery Corps, I bid you a hearty welcome to this command. There is not a man in this Regiment who does not know you, and those of us who enjoy your friendship love you. We all look up to and admire you as the Nestor of the Military Profession in this State and among militia officers of this country. We are particularly proud, too, to welcome Colonel Crall and the officers of your former command, the Seventh New York Infantry. Its very name had always signified patriotism and valor. In fact, I believe your motto is *Pro Patria et Gloria.* The mention of the name Seventh Regiment has always been sufficient to convey the very acme of military preparedness and efficiency.

We are proud to number among the officers and men of this Regiment many who have been members of the Seventh, and we have become convinced that a little leaven must have leavened the whole lump, as even those of us who have not had the opportunity of your military instruction, but have had the pleasure of your friendship, have absorbed some of your martial spirit and a desire to emulate your military disposition.

Digitized by Google

We are honored tonight in having the opportunity to present to you for decoration with the State medal for fifteen years' military service, Color-Sergeant T. J. Oakley Rhinelander."

Here the Adjutant ordered Color-Sergeant Rhinelander to the front and center. Bearing the Regimental Color and accompanied by his Color-Guard, Sergeant Rhinelander presented himself before the Colonel.

Colonel Burleigh continued:

"Mr. Rhinelander enlisted in Company K, Seventh Infantry, June 10, 1875, and served almost continuously in that company, except for periods when by removal from the district he was dropped from the rolls, until October 17, 1895, when he was given a full and honorable discharge after thirteen years, ten months and sixteen days actual active service. In 1897 Sergeant Rhinelander enlisted in the Veteran Corps of Artillery of the State of New York, and served continuously therein for over twenty years and until he was transferred with the twelve Provisional Batteries of that organization to this command on October 8, 1917. Sergeant Rhinelander should be entitled to a thirty-five year-medal, as he has been for more than that number of years a member of the militia of the State of New York.

Sergeant Rhinelander performed his duty as a member of this Regiment on guard duty on the Aqueduct last year with an accuracy and care that I am sure would commend him as a real living example of your military training."

I present Color-Sergeant T. J. Oakley Rhinelander."

General Appleton complimented Colonel Burleigh upon the Regiment, and in the course of a short talk told the men that one of his best memories of his own service was that of the eight years he spent as an enlisted man.

In his comment on the record of Sergeant Rhinelander, General Appleton cited the fact that the name of Oakley Rhinelander is known not only here but under the poppies in France, referring to the death at the front of Mr. Rhinelander's nephew, Lieutenant T. J. Oakley Rhinelander, 2nd, son of Philip Rhinelander, mentioned below.

After General Appleton had presented the fifteen years' service medal, and fastened the ribbon about Sergeant Rhinelander's neck, Colonel Burleigh added:

Digitized by Google

"General Appleton, there is another tie between the Seventh Infantry and the Ninth Coast Artillery Corps. Our Color-Sergeant Oakley Rhinelander has a brother who is the Color-Sergeant of the Seventh, Philip Rhinelander, who has served for almost thirty years in that Regiment. Long live the Rhinelanders!"

Captain F. E. Davidson was Officer-of-the-Day, Lieutenant T. P. Battelle, Tenth Company, was Commander-of-the-Guard, and H. E. Nason, Headquarters, was Sergeant-of-the-Guard. A dance closed the affair after evening parade.

General Appleton's staff was as follows:

Colonel J. Weston Myers, Chief of Staff,
Lieutenant-Colonel Charles Elliot Warren, U. S. A.,
Lieutenant-Commander John H. Tappan, U. S. N.,
Major Gerald Stratton, Seventh Infantry, N. Y. G.,
Captain Sidney Appleton, U. S. A.
Captain Leslie Allen Oliver, Seventh Infantry, N. Y. G.,
Captain Thomas C. Wiswall.

Among others present at the review, besides Colonel Crall, commanding the Seventh Regiment and his field and staff officers, including many of his company commanders, were Colonel John J. Phelan, Sixty-ninth Regiment, Colonel William Jay Schieffelin, Fifteenth Infantry, N. Y. G., Major Edward G. Schermerhorn, Captain Douglas E. Dismukes, U. S. N., Captain Fourmestreux of the French Army, Colonel Prentice Strong, First Field Artillery, N. Y. G., Hon. Thomas R. Proctor, of Utica, N. Y., and M. O. Terry, former Surgeon-General of the State of New York.

On the afternoon of February 2 the Ninth Coast went to service in Trinity Church at the head of Wall Street. The regimental church service was held under the direction of the Chaplain, Captain Howard Duffield, who read the first and second lessons.

The Rev. Dr. William T. Manning, rector of Trinity Parish, delivered a short address on the quality of robust manhood represented in the Guard and needed to combat the spirit of pacifism.

The Regiment assembled in the Armory at 2:15 and marched through Fifteenth Street, down Fifth Avenue, through Washington

Digitized by Google

Arch, through Fourth Street and down Lafayette Street, Park Row and Broadway to the church. The band led the column. No pieces were carried and no sidearms were worn. The regiment returned to the Armory by way of the Sixth Avenue elevated.

Among Colonel Burleigh's staff were:

Colonel A. S. Schermerhorn, N. Y. G., Lieutenant-Colonel Charles Elliot Warren, U. S. A., Lieutenant-Colonel H. T. Kingsbury, N. Y. G., Major Edward G. Schermerhorn, N. Y. G., Captain H. Pushae Williams, U. S. A., Lieutenant John T. Harrison, U. S. N., Lieutenant Francis I. Woodburn, U. S. A., Captain Walter Lispenard Suydam, R. L., N. Y. G., Captain George E. Cruse, R. L., N. Y. G., Captain Henry Sillcocks, R. L., N. Y. G., and Captain Robert H. Wilder, R. L., N. Y. G.

The Staff of the Ninth in attendance included Captain Harry P. Gallaher, Adjutant, Major Charles Alexander Clinton, Captain Paul Thebaud, Captain Howard Duffield, Captain Frank Everett Davidson, Captain Louis Hays Dos Passos, Captain John W. Brannan, Lieutenant Joseph F. Sulger, Lieutenant Francis G. Lloyd and Lieutenant Robert Sedgwick.

Dr. John Winters Brannan enlisted in the V. C. A. early in 1917. He was a member of the celebrated Fifth Squad of the Second Battery; served in the First Provisional Regiment on the Aqueduct, was made Captain in the Medical Corps attached to this Regiment. This promotion had been offered to him many times before, but he, one of the deans of the medical profession, to serve in the ranks.

On January 23, the Eleventh and Twelfth Companies furnished a guard of honor at a military mass held at St. Josephs R. C. Church in memory of Private William C. Meehan, Co. A., 395th U. S. Infantry, who died in France.

The Inter-Company Team Match was decided on the Armory Range in February. On the 25th the First, Second, Third, Fourth, Fifth, Sixth, Seventh, Eighth, and Machine-Gun Companies Shot, and on the 27th the Field and Staff, Supply, Ninth, Tenth, Eleventh and Twelfth. The Machine-Gun Company won, with the Field and Staff second. The following are the scores:

Digitized by Google

MACHINE-GUN COMPANY

	200 *Yds.*	500 *Yds.*	*Total*
Sergeant Snyder	33	27	60
Private Lewis, M.	30	27	57
Private Mitchell	30	27	57
Private Lewis, J.	23	29	52
Sergeant Wildnauer	23	18	41—267

FIELD AND STAFF

Lieutenant-Colonel Delafield	32	35	67
Lieutenant Sulger	33	30	63
Colonel Burleigh	25	31	56
Major Hoes	28	20	48
Lieutenant Lines	25	6	31—265

ELEVENTH COMPANY

Captain Wilcox	28	28	56
Private Hartley	30	22	52
Lieutenant Foley	27	25	52
Private Morrison	25	27	52
Corporal Drew	23	25	48—260

Second Company	258
Seventh Company	251
Sixth Company	249
Tenth Company	243
Fourth Company	241
Eighth Company	233
Third Company	217
Fifth Company	210
First Company	209
Twelfth Company	198
Ninth Company (4 Men)	192
Supply Company	142

On March 15th the Regiment gave a review to Major-General Hugh L. Scott, U. S. A., formerly Chief of Staff United States Army, then in command at Camp Dix, New Jersey. General Scott

Digitized by Google

is a distinguished officer and was continued on active duty after reaching the retiring age. General Scott insisted upon carrying out his military engagement although his son, Lieutenant-Colonel Hunter Scott, U. S. A. was lying mortally ill in a hospital in New York, having been transferred from the Army transport on which he had just returned with Major-General O'Ryan, commanding the 27th Division, upon whose staff he was serving.

The Third Battalion gave a very interesting riot drill and exhibition of wall scaling.

General Scott admired the regiment tremendously and highly complimented its efficiency. He stated that it should be a Railroad or Heavy Artillery rather than a Coast Artillery Regiment.

On the occasion of the Welcome Home given by New York City to the 27th Division U. S. A. we were given an opportunity to show our appreciation of the services of the overseas men by taking care of some fifteen hundred officers and men of the 104th Field Artillery under Colonel Delaney. They were a fine lot of men, appreciative and considerate guests. Nothing was too good for them.

All the officers of the regiment in uniform made a formal call on Major-General John F. O'Ryan commanding the 27th Division at the Hotel Biltmore.

The ceremonies of welcoming home the veterans of the Ninth are described in another place.

On April 27, by order of the Governor, all organizations of the New York Guard held a Church Parade. The service of the Ninth was held under the direction of Chaplain Duffield in the Brick Presbyterian Church, Fifth Avenue and Thirty-seventh Street.

During the Victory Loan Drive the regiment again did good work. Colonel Burleigh presided each day over the exercises held in the Court of Honor on Park Avenue.

During the ceremonies May 5 to 7, of welcoming home the 77th Division National Army, nearly fifteen hundred officers and men were quartered in the Armory. They were more than welcome, as would have been the case with any men who had fought overseas.

Digitized by Google

Chapter Sixteen

FIELD DAYS AND RIFLE WORK

NO matter how large an Armory may be—and that of the Ninth certainly was not large—it can never be more than a rather poor substitute for the reality of open country. This is not only true of the drill proper, from Company to Battalion—not to mention Regimental evolutions or ceremonies—but particularly and most emphatically is it true of the various branches of Field Service, the practice of which is almost impossible in any Armory.

The importance of so-called Field Days was fully recognized by Colonel Burleigh, and, though his command was kept pretty busy with a variety of duties incident to the War which made it very hard to find the time necessary for such outings, he arranged, on two separate occasions, to take the Regiment to Van Cortlandt Park, in the Borough of The Bronx. The advantages of this location were many, principal among them being the matter of transportation, the variety of terrain, and the fact that it was comparatively easy to obtain the necessary permission from the Park Commission and Police assistance in keeping the Parade Ground clear.

The first of these Field Days was held on Sunday, December 22, 1918. The choice of Sunday, while it had its advantages, also had drawbacks, as firing was not permitted, and it excluded the Regimental Band. As it happened, it turned out to be a lucky day for the Band, for they were the only members of the Regiment who did not get a thorough wetting.

The day started most inauspiciously, damp and threatening, and before noon it had settled down to a steady rain, which later developed into a drenching downpour. While ponchos had been issued by company sergeants, orders to take them were countermanded shortly before Assembly and overcoats were ordered worn. After Assembly at 8:45 the Regiment marched to the Seventh Avenue Subway station at Fourteenth Street and entrained for Van Cortlandt Park on a special train. On arrival at destination, Battalions were

Digitized by Google

turned over to their Majors for an hour's drill. The Battalions took advantage of the time allotted to go through the various formations of Battalion and Riot Drill, as well as "extended order" evolutions, while the Machine-Gun Company simulated "combat" conditions for the benefit of a moving-picture concern.

The Regiment was then assembled, formed for parade in line, and reviewed by Park Commissioner Hennessy of the Bronx. Notwithstanding the fact that the ground was soft and wet from previous rains, and that it had by this time begun to rain in earnest, the Regiment made an excellent showing.

Colonel Burleigh then put his command through a brisk drill before Recall and Mess Call were sounded. Arms were stacked on the hill, and mess was spread. It was a wet but enjoyable meal, and every one felt cheered, for they knew not that the worst was still to come!

Officers' call was sounded while the men rested, and Colonel Burleigh outlined his plans for the afternoon to the assembled officers. It was ordered that the Regiment should march from the Parade Ground by way of the East Mosholu Parkway through the Bronx Park to the Subway station at 180th Street and Southern Boulevard. War conditions were to be simulated by observing the principles of security as applicable to troops on the march.

Assembly was sounded at 1:15 P. M. and the Regiment formed. On the march each Battalion in turn formed the "Advance Guard" and then the "Rear Guard." "Point," "Advance Party," "Support" and "Reserve," with the necessary connecting files, as well as "Flank Patrols," were provided, while the "Rear Guard" was formed in accordance with established principles. Thus each Company had its opportunity in practice and instruction, while the Machine-Gun Company was divided between the "Main Body" and the "Rear Guard." The time passed quickly enough on this four-mile hike, notwithstanding the pouring rain, and the overcoats, which grew heavy as they absorbed the water.

At the entrance to the Zoological Garden at 180th Street the Regiment entrained and was soon back in the Armory.

Digitized by Google

The second "Battle of Van Cortlandt," as it was affectionately called, was "fought" on March 8, 1919. Season and weather were more favorable for this Field Day, and every one felt a great deal better—possibly because it was Saturday and the Band had no excuse for absenting itself.

Attendance at the early morning Assembly was voluntary, but it was obligatory to take part in the afternoon events. Thus the organization, which proceeded by way of the Seventh Avenue Subway to Van Cortlandt Park Parade Ground early that morning, numbered little over one-third of the entire strength, and companies had to be consolidated for the purposes of drill.

These temporary companies passed the forenoon in company drill, both "close" and "extended order," while some of the officers and sergeants practiced estimating distances under Major Hoes. The Supply Company was working hard at preparation for mess, while the Sanitary Detachment, after pitching its tent, practiced what it had been taught by Major Clinton, by inducing two boys to lie down on the field, as if wounded, and permitting members of the Detachment to "tag" them. A hurry call was sent for Ambulance and Surgeons, and these arrived on the scene with such promptitude that the Ambulance was nearly overturned. Emergency dressings were applied with the help of splints improvised from tree branches. The boys were carried on litters to the Ambulance and hurried to the hospital tent, situated close to the mess tent on the hill, and then treated —to eats! As recorded in the April issue of the *"Ninth Coast News,"* "contrary to expectations, the boys, at last accounts, were still alive!"

Mess was held on the hill on the same spot as on that last memorably damp occasion. Bright sunshine cheered the scene this time, and it was a sight long to be remembered when the remaining Detachment, which had left the Armory shortly after noon, was seen approaching the hill in "Column of squads," with the Band leading, the sun sparkling on the instruments and rifles, as the Battalions under command of Major Keyes approached in perfect cadence and formation to the tune of one of the best marches in Lieutenant Houts' repertoire.

Digitized by Google

COLONEL BURLEIGH AND STAFF.

After providing for those of the late arrivals who had left the city without taking the time for lunch, the Battalions were assembled in column of squads and reported to Colonel Burleigh, who marched his command to the westerly side of the Parade Ground and formed the Regiment in line for Parade. The names of all officers and enlisted men who had qualified at Rifle practice in Peekskill during the summer of 1918 were read, and Expert Riflemen, Sharpshooters and Marksmen advanced in three separate ranks. Qualification bars and medals were distributed, and the Regiment then passed in review before a number of former officers, who had left the organization during the War to enter Federal Service.

The Regiment then manoeuvered in command of Colonel Burleigh, and at about 4 P. M. entrained for Fourteenth Street in a special train of the Westside Subway.

The day had been one of great benefit to the Organization as well as to the individual, in practice and instruction, and in physical benefits, while it brought the members of the different Companies closer together and thus helped to uphold the high morale of the "Ninth."

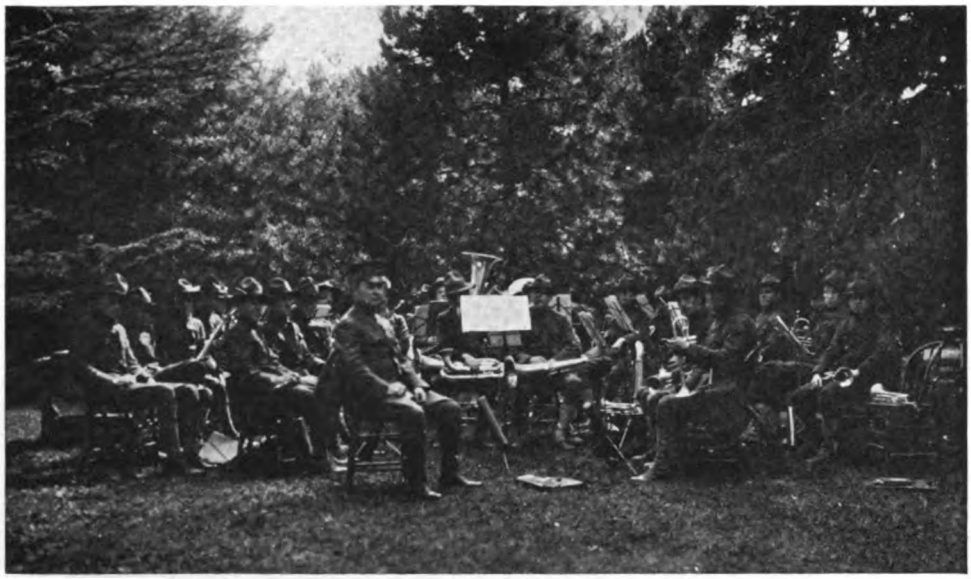
Digitized by Google

When the men of the Ninth were detached from the V. C. A. and were transferred to the New York Guard they had had very little rifle practice. In the Service Detachment they had experience in qualifying every year with the revolver on the State ranges and had developed a Revolver Team which was second only to that of Squadron A. of the National Guard.

The Regiment was armed with Krag rifles, and, in addition, had the use of a number of Springfields. Immediately on entering into possession of the Armory in Fourteenth Street the rifle range was brought into constant use. Captain Thebaud, the efficient I. S. A. P., was faithful in the performance of his duty and always a warm advocate of the training in shooting. Later he was assisted by Lieutenant Henry D. Brandyce, who had seen service in the First Provisional and left the Ninth to go to the Eighth C. A. C. as Captain and Inspector Small Arms Practice.

Digitized by Google

EQUITATION SCHOOL, CAMP WHITMAN, AUG.-SEPT., 1918.



BAND OF THE 9TH C. A. C., N. Y. G., AT PRINCETON UNIVERSITY.

Digitized by Google

But the real serious work came in the summer of 1918. On June 20-22, 1918, the Regiment began its experiences on the State Range at Peekskill and made its first record. Under all the circumstances it was a very creditable one and reflected credit on both officers and men. The Ninth Regiment went to Peekskill by battalions on June 20 to 22, inclusive, to qualify as Class A and Class B men. Those who made a minimum of 150 out of a possible 225 made class A, while Class B included the scores between 130 and 149, inclusive.

In the week of July 22 Class B men had an opportunity to qualify as Class A men.

On July 16, 18 and 20 the Class A men returned to Peekskill to try for records as Expert riflemen, 210 or better, Sharpshooters 190 or better, and Marksmen 160 out of a possible 250.

The qualifications made at record practice follow:

FIELD AND STAFF

Expert

Major Delafield	229
Lieut. Col. Burleigh	222
Lieutenant Brandyce	215
Captain Thebaud	211
Colonel Delafield	210

Sharpshooter

Major Hodges	209
Major Gage	208
Lieut.-Adj. Messenger	193

Marksman

Lieut.-Adj. Lines	171

HEADQUARTERS COMPANY

Sharpshooter

Sergeant-Maj. Moon	195
Sergeant-Maj. Hinkle	191

Marksman

Sergeant-Maj. Leach	188
Sergeant-Maj. Smith	177
Captain-Adj. Davidson	161

FIRST COMPANY

Expert

Greenfield	215
Sergeant Lane	211
Tallman	211
Adams	210

Sharpshooter

McClure	207
Corporal Dornin	206
Connell	202
Sergeant H. Schwab	200
Huxtable	200
Coryell	197
Captain Low	197
Sergeant Parsons	195
Thayer	192
Corporal Pierrepont	191

Marksman

Safford	188
Lieutenant Watjen	186
Slocovich	181
Perry	178

Digitized by Google

FIRST COMPANY (Cont.)

Marksman

Sergeant Hopson..... 177
Stewart 177
Tatham 173
McElroy 172
DeBuys 171
Corporal Winslow..... 167
Dewey 167
Sergeant G. Schwab..... 162
Oswald 160

SECOND COMPANY

Expert

Sergeant W. W. Mack..... 210

Sharpshooter

Sergeant Noyes..... 200

Marksman

Pastor 183
Corporal Neumuller..... 181
Corporal Evans..... 177
Wilson 172
Morford 168
Sergeant Riley..... 164
Cowan 164
Dunsmore 164
Captain Harrison 163

THIRD COMPANY

Sharpshooter

Baldwin 192
Captain Ford..... 190

Marksman

Gardner 184
Pape 181
Trussell 180
Drucker 180
Dusterdieck 179
Tefft 172
Corporal Godfrey..... 172

THIRD COMPANY (Cont.)

Bugbird 167
Skinner 165
Corporal Funk..... 165

FOURTH COMPANY

Sharpshooter

Church 203
Hengerer 197
Sergeant Crosley..... 197
Butler 195
Rogers 190

Marksman

Strong 181
Ayer 181
Lieutenant Lowther..... 175
O'Toole 175
Morgan 173
Sergeant Pinckney..... 170
Rossire 169
Sergeant Elliott..... 168
Sergeant Crummey..... 166
Sherman, C. A..... 162
Sergeant Howard..... 160

FIFTH COMPANY

Expert

Sergeant Delmonico..... 227

Sharpshooter

Schindele 200
Lieutenant Richard..... 198
Sergeant Stokes..... 190

Marksman

Wheatley, A. F. J..... 179
Wheatley, Ralph..... 169
Carnahan 162

SIXTH COMPANY

Expert

Farrington, W. L..... 211
Sergeant Lawrence..... 211
Sergeant Emmons..... 211

Digitized by Google

SIXTH COMPANY (Cont.)

Sharpshooter

Edge 203
Severance 193
Farrington, C. L. 191

Marksman

Sergeant Lyall 186
Loscomb 176
Chapin 174
Captain Smith 169
Rotchford 166
Corporal Bennett 166
Sergeant Nast 165
McLachlan 163
Hall 161

SEVENTH COMPANY

Sharpshooter

Gilbert 200
Seeley 192
Corporal Clark 190

Marksman

Nichols 181
Hoffman 180
Smith 179
Corporal Hunter 176
LaCour 174
Lieutenant Smith 172
Corporal Chase 169
McKnight 167
Captain Lane 165
Watson 164
Whipple 164
Sergeant Willets 162

EIGHTH COMPANY

Sharpshooter

Sergeant Sarkisian 195
Hough 195
Lieutenant Messenger 194

EIGHTH COMPANY (Cont.)

Sharpshooter

Sergeant Larkin 194
Lieutenant Teague 193
Sergeant Moir 193
Childs 193
Burdick 190
Sergeant Wye 190

Marksman

Captain Pomeroy 185
Sergeant Guiler 183
Harriss 179
Richards 178
Van Wagenen 176
Heine 176
Patterson 175
Corporal Locke 172
Hasselriis 169
Skinner 163
Ermish 162
Wilson 160

NINTH COMPANY

Expert

Beinert 214
Wheeler 210
Dickie 210

Sharpshooter

Dannenberg 207
Sergeant Wood 198
Lieutenant Seward 196
Daly 193
Deschere 191

Marksman

Nichols 173
Randolph 172
Vinton 172
Gildersleeve 163
Knitel 163

Digitized by Google

TENTH COMPANY

Sharpshooter

Captain Hoes	204
Ruoff	204
Fagan	196
Lieutenant Earle	194
Johnson	191
Murphy	190
Sergeant Easton	190

Marksman

Sergeant Battelle	182
Corporal Brown	179
Campkin	175
Sergeant Thayer	167
Dodge	167
Hubbell	163
Corporal Boddington	162
Dawless	160

ELEVENTH COMPANY

Expert

Lieutenant Wilcox	212

Sharpshooter

Corporal West	208
Sergeant Sanford	196
Captain Keyes	191

Marksman

Yetman	187
Knight	186
Sergeant Dougherty	183
McDermott	181
Firth	186
Hurley	175
Kinsella	174
Haskell	173

ELEVENTH COMPANY (Cont.)

Morrison	168
Allen	168
Burdick	168
Corporal Foley	165
Drew	163
Louderback	161

TWELFTH COMPANY

Expert

Harvey	212

Marksman

Burgess	185
Robbins	181
Holloway	179
Sergeant Britten	177
Jaeger	174
Sergeant Vandervoort	165
Sergeant Manowitch	161

MACHINE GUN COMPANY

Expert

Richards	210

Sharpshooter

Boyd	190

Marksman

Roe	177
Corporal Snyder	175
Palmer	172
Lieutenant Knickerbocker	170
Lieutenant Callingham	170
Liddle	169
Corporal Wildnauer	166
Corporal Kene	166

Many of these men, and also numerous others, at later dates shot for record, and either bettered the above scores or swelled the ranks of experts, sharpshooters and marksmen of the regiment.

Digitized by Google

LIEUT.-COL. EDWARD C. DELAFIELD.

Digitized by Google

Major Edward C. Delafield made the New York State team which participated in the Interstate Rifle Matches at Camp Perry, Ohio, in September. Before the matches began he attended for three weeks the United States Course in Rifle Practice and Sharpshooting for Officers. In the Wimbledon Cup Match at 1,000 yards, he was number twelve out of 920 entrants, with a score of 87 out of a possible 100. The scores of the 1st, 2nd and 3rd entrants were respectively 92, 91 and 90. The New York State Team won the Hilton Trophy, and Major Delafield stood second on that team. A mighty fine record for the representative of our new regiment.

When Colonel Burleigh assumed command of the Ninth Coast he announced to the Regiment that Lieutenant-Colonel E. C. Delafield would have direct supervision of the new rifle practice programs. In accordance with this step Lieutenant-Colonel Delafield put into operation a short instruction course for rifle practice. The purpose of the course was to help the Ninth Coast in its bid for first place in the rifle work of the Guard. The outline of the preliminary instruction course, including the text of the ten commandments and the three cautionary rules, were as follows:

PRELIMINARY INSTRUCTION COURSE

1. Position Drills

a. Standing with and without sling: Be sure to get left elbow under piece and rest on chest, right elbow drawn up so that recoil is properly taken.

b. Kneeling with and without sling:

c. Sitting with sling; Explain method of sitting without jar and without losing balance, also explain carefully position of elbows on knees so as to avoid soreness. An angle of about 30 degrees should be used.

d. Prone Position with sling: Special care must be taken that the sling does not slip below the muscle of the arm, and that it is very tight. The 45 degree position is an aid. The left elbow must be directly under the piece, so as to decrease the possibility of cant.

In all of the above position drills no snapping of the pieces must be allowed so as to avoid bad habits before this stage has been reached, and great care must be taken by the instructor to cover all details.

Digitized by Google

2. Manipulation.

With the cut-off, the recruit must be taught proper manipulation of the bolt. Take hold of the bolt in raising it with the thumb and forefinger. In returning the bolt to place use the thumb portion of the palm of the hand. This method is the quickest devised, and can be used for the 1917 model with the pressure of the main spring on the return, as well as for the Springfield or Krag. In standing and kneeling positions the piece can be taken from the shoulder for manipulation, although it is preferable to hold it to the shoulder. In sitting and prone positions all men must be taught to hold the piece at the shoulder when bolt is manipulated. This can best be accomplished by instructing the men before taking hold of the bolt to cant the top of the piece to the right with the left hand and by pressure of the cheek roll the body slightly toward the right and lift the head to avoid the backward motion of the bolt. When the above has been properly taught, and the aiming and sighting drills also have been covered, one minute time practice should be employed.

3. Aiming and Sighting Drills.

This drill should be taught from the prone position only until the men are well versed in the requirements. Use the sighting box with targets the full length of the armory, pieces to be wedged into the sighting box.

First Exercise.

The recruit will carefully sight his piece and the target will be moved until he considers it correct. With an open sight the front sight must be levelled with the rear sight. There is no such thing as a fine sight or a full sight in correct shooting. The sight point must be centered in the middle of the peep, and care must be taken that the recruit is satisfied with his sight; the instructor must take the recruit's place and see whether the sights are properly centered or levelled and whether the bull is properly set on the front sight with the proper light space between. When this is once accomplished the recruit is ready for the second exercise, or triangle exercise

Triangle Exercise.

It is most important that this exercise be carried out on the full length of the armory. Short distances are of but little use, and the triangle at this distance, resulting from marks made through the center of the bull's eye, should be, when the recruit has practice, within the size of a 25 c. piece at 100 yards. When this has been successfully accomplished proceed to

Sandbag Exercise.

Raise the piece on the sandbag at proper height for ground position. Hold the strap in the left hand just under the explosion chamber, and place the knuckles of the hand on the sandbag, the hand guard of the piece resting on the partly closed

Digitized by Google

fingers and held with the thumb and forefinger. This position enables the rifleman to pull hard against the shoulder and is better than the regulation strap hold, as there is no attempt to fight the sandbag or the strap hold. The recruit should then take as careful aim as though he were in a match. There is no such thing as an approximate aim. It must be perfect, and the alignment must be gotten by rapidly focusing the eye from the rear sight to the front sight to the bull, and while the final squeeze takes place the focus must be on the bull. The recruit should not know when the firing pin will actually fall, but when it does fall should immediately call his shot, as for instance, a four at eleven o'clock, and this should be plotted in a score book as though actually fired. Should the recruit always call bulls he is either not honest with himself or does not understand his previous instruction and should begin over again. He should not be allowed on the range until the instructor is convinced that the squeezing of the trigger fires the gun at a time not definitely predetermined by the recruit, and does not in so firing it alter the sight of the piece.

Gallery practice will be postponed for any company officer or enlisted men until this course has been successfully carried out.

The Ten Commandments

All these instructions must be carried out, with particular attention being given to the Ten Commandments, which follow:

1. Position 45.

   So as to allow the body to roll as a result of the discharge of the piece rather than be struck by it.

2. Adjust sling high.

   Otherwise the advantages of the sling are lost.

3. Hard on shoulder.

   Prevents flinching and avoids bruises.

4. Freeze face to stock.

   Avoids injury to the face and insures uniformity on the distance and line of sight.

5. Hold breath.

   Prevent rising and falling of the muzzle with each breath. Should be held as the front sight approaches the bull.

6. Take command of trigger.

   When the slack is taken up the probability of jerking the trigger is much lessened.

7. Align sights.

   Always remembering that a peep does not necessarily naturally center itself and that the center must be held.

8. Last focus on bull.

   As the results of a rapid change of focus from rear to front to bull.

Digitized by Google

9. Final squeeze.
   The most important point of all shooting.
10. Call shot.
   If the piece was fired by a squeeze and not a pull, the shot can always be called.

Three points which must be especially watched in target work:

1. Watch the muzzle of the rifle for injuries due to neglect or cleaning. A rifle with an injured muzzle cannot shoot accurately.

2. Watch the guard screws. A loose guard screw not only makes erratic shooting but continues to change the zero of the rifle in one direction or another.

3. Watch trigger squeeze. This must always be kept before a rifle-man.

When all of the above is thoroughly mastered, work with the Hollifield rod should be taken up, and then armory gallery practice followed, all of the instructions above to hold.

Practice on the outdoor range would conform to the above on the short ranges, that is, 200 and 300 yards. Mid-ranges, 500 and 600 yards, or long ranges, 800 and 1000 yards, require additional instruction which can only be taken up through lectures or actual range work.

These instructions were developed through the company officers. Instructions were first carefully given the officers; by them to the non-coms, and then to the men. The work was carefully supervised and constantly followed up.

The matter of organizing a rifle team to represent the Ninth Coast Artillery Corps in the outdoor matches presented many difficulties. The National Matches at Caldwell came at a time when most people were away on a vacation and as both Caldwell and Peekskill were not available for team practice prior to the matches, the team presented more of an effort of individual than "team shooting."

Captain Wilcox was confronted with the problem of keeping twelve men for the National Match after the N. Y. National Guard team had taken four men from his list. This left him with practically no alternates, and the completeness of his team was more a matter of having twelve men present.

The four men from the Ninth Coast on the N. Y. State Team were Lieutenant-Colonel E. C. Delafield, First Lieutenant J. F. Sulger, First Lieutenant J. G. Phelps Stokes, Private J. Pospisil—the last named being an alternate. Colonel George W. Burleigh was de-

Digitized by Google

BRIGADIER-GENERAL GEORGE RATHBONE DYER.

Digitized by Google

tailed as an observer. In the National Team Match the high score on the N. Y. State team was made by Lieutenant Sulger with 277 out of a possible 300. Colonel Delafield with 270 was second high. This was excellent work by Colonel Delafield as he reported to the team the night before the match and had no practice whatever. Lieutenant Sulger also was selected as member of the National Guard United States team in the United Service match in which he was high score of the N. G. team with 276. High score of the winning Navy team was 282.

The Ninth Coast entered the National Match for practice only, as the thought of winning was not entertained by anyone. The work there made the men familiar with team matches, it gave them a chance to see how a rifle range functions during important matches and it made it a fact that when the team again entered competition it would not be "green." This all showed itself when the team competed in the New York State matches at Peekskill on September 8, 9, and 10.

The matches at Peekskill started with the Headquarters and Brigade Matches, team of twelve on Monday September 8. This was preceded by two days team practice at which the Ninth Coast did not have a full team present, so that we entered the Headquarters match with men that had no practice at all. The team did all that was expected of it—it won. The scores:

	200 yds.	300 yds.	600 yds.	Total
Lieutenant-Colonel Delafield	47	44	47	138
Lieutenant Sulger	46	43	47	136
Major Hodges	44	47	43	134
Captain Perry	47	43	43	133
Lieutenant Stokes	45	43	42	130
Captain Earle	43	43	41	128
Lieutenant Messenger, L. A.	46	40	40	126
Lieutenant Leach	47	38	37	122
Lieutenant Messenger, J.	43	40	38	121
Lieutenant Schwab	41	44	35	120
Colonel Burleigh	40	40	38	118
Private Pospisil	42	36	37	115
	521	501	488	1520

Digitized by Google

Squadron A	525	505	466	1496
13 C. D. C.	500	459	406	1365
First Brigade Match				
Won by Seventh Inf.	503	501	450	1454
Second Brigade Match				
Won by Twenty-third Inf.	506	482	470	1458
Third Brigade Match				
Won by Second Inf.	494	482	450	1426
Fourth Brigade Match				
Won by Seventy-fourth Inf.	515	507	498	1520

In the Governor's Match on September 9 the team had almost everyone entered, and finished the skirmish run as follows:

Conditions: 5 shots, 30 seconds, D target at 600 yards, 500 yards, 300 yards and 200 yards.

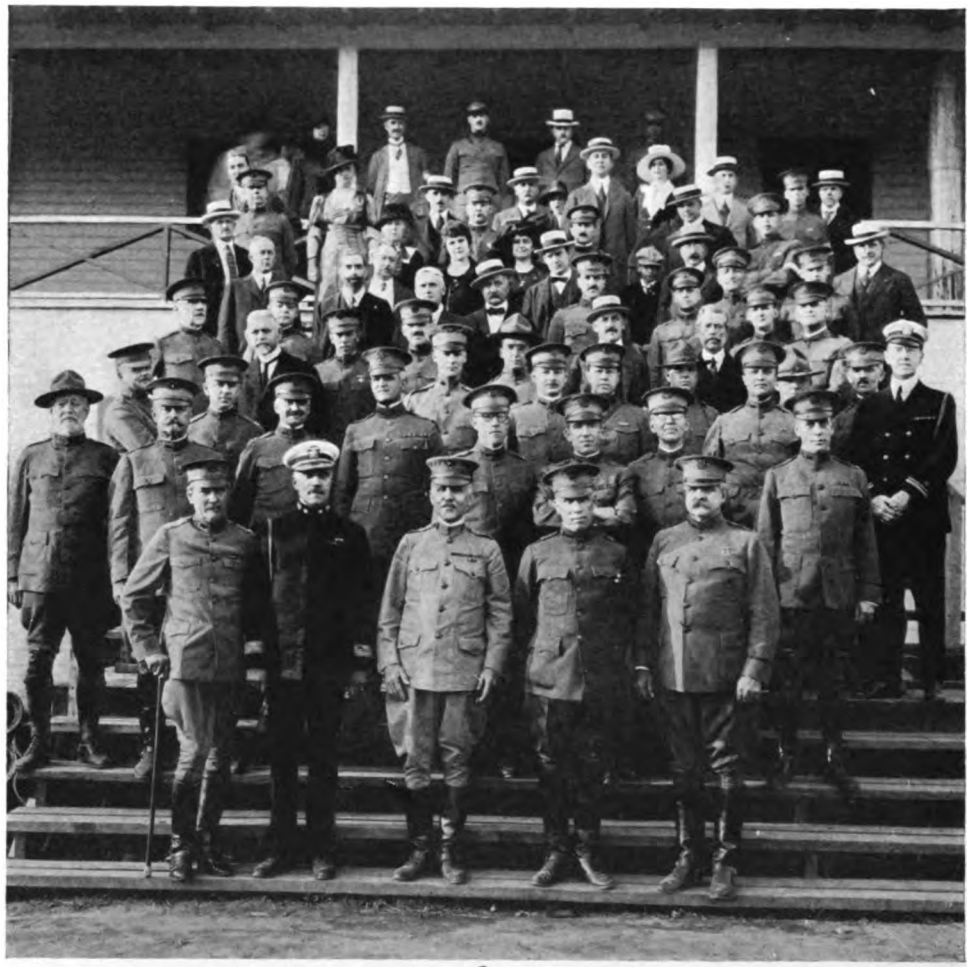
Won by		Lieutenant L. D. Stickles, Co. D, Seventy-First Inf.	Score of	89
5th	place	Lieutenant Sulger, Staff, Ninth C. A. C.	"	81
9th	"	Lieutenant Stokes, Staff, Ninth C. A. C.	"	77
15th	"	Lieutenant Messenger, L. A., Staff, Ninth C. A. C.	"	72
18th	"	Colonel Delafield, Field, Ninth C. A. C.	"	72
22nd	"	Captain Perry, Thirteenth Co., Ninth C. A. C.	"	68
27th	"	Corporal Church, Sixteenth Co., Ninth C. A. C.	"	64
41st	"	Sergeant Hengerer, Sixteenth Co., Ninth C. A. C.	"	54
47th	"	Private Pospisil, Headquarters Co., Ninth C. A. C.	"	52
51st	"	Lieutenant Foley, Twenty-Third Co., Ninth C. A. C.	"	49
65th	"	Major Hodges, Field, Ninth C. A. C.	"	41
66th	"	Lieutenant Messenger, J., Staff, Ninth C. A. S.	"	41
70th	"	Major Hoes, Field, Ninth C. A. C.	"	39
82nd	"	Colonel Burleigh, Field, Ninth C. A. C.	"	25
83rd	"	Corporal Yetman, Twenty-Third Co., Ninth C. A. C.	"	25
85th	"	Lieutenant Howard, Sixteenth Co., Ninth C. A. C.	"	23

90 entries

In the Adjutant-General's Match on September 9 we had five entries, which finished as follows:—

Won by Co. E, Seventy-First Inf., with a total score of 319.

Digitized by Google



NEW YORK DAY AT THE NAVY RIFLE RANGE, CALDWELL, N. J.

Front row, left to right: Col. Smith, 13th C. A. C., N. Y. G.; Commo. Josephthal, N. M. S., N. Y.; Maj.-Gen. Barnett, U. S. M. C.; Adj.-Gen. Berry, N. Y. G.; Col. Burleigh, 9th C. A. C., N. Y. G.

Digitized by Google

		300 yards Standing	600 yards Prone	200 yards R. F.	Total
3rd place	F & S, Ninth C. A. C.				
	Colonel Delafield	26	31	39	96
	Lieutenant Sulger	26	33	45	104
	Lieutenant Stokes	22	32	41	95
		74	96	125	295
7th place	F & S, Ninth C. A. C.				
	Lieutenant Messenger	28	20	43	91
	Major Hodges	28	32	29	89
	Lieutenant Leach	15	27	41	83
		71	79	115	263
15th place	Sixteenth Co., Ninth C. A. C.				
	Sergeant Hengerer	23	26	42	91
	Lieutenant Howard	21	9	32	62
	Corporal Church	23	18	21	62
		67	53	95	215
21st place	F & S, Ninth C. A. C.				
	Captain Watjen	8	15	38	61
	Colonel Burleigh	14	24	23	60
	Major Hoes	14	20	23	57
		36	59	84	179
23rd place	Fifteenth Co., Ninth C. A. C.				
	Sergeant Johnson	22	2	30	54
	Private Pagan	17	29	13	59
	Private Hubbell	18	15	13	47
		57	46	56	159
		24 entries			

In the State Team Match September 10, teams of twelve (practically the qualification course) we finished 4th to the 71st, 74th, and 7th Infantry teams. Changes were made in the team, as some of the men found it necessary to return to the city, and the showing was not so good. High score of the match (all teams) was made by Lieutenant-Colonel Delafield, 234 out of a possible 250, Lieutenant Sulger being 3d high (all teams) with 230.

Digitized by Google

The scores: State Match

Pos.	Team	200	300	600	200RF	300RF	Total
1	Seventy-First Inf.	533	531	527	520	517	2628
2	Seventy-Fourth Inf.	534	523	532	524	506	2609
3	Seventh Inf.	502	502	524	385	474	2487
4	Ninth C. A. C.	510	499	470	492	490	2461
5	Twenty-Third Inf.	492	488	475	473	481	2409
6	Second Inf.	510	485	470	424	484	2373
7	Tenth Inf.	485	474	485	448	454	2346
8	Forty-Seventh Inf.	456	461	426	440	411	2194
9	Fourteenth Inf.	427	440	388	342	265	1962
Individual scores Ninth C. A. C.							
	Lieut. Col. Delafield	46	45	48	46	49	234
	Lieutenant Sulger	47	45	45	47	46	230
	Captain Perry	45	43	44	47	48	221
	Captain Earle	44	43	43	44	44	218
	Lieut. Messenger, J.	42	41	39	46	48	216
	Major Hodges	46	40	39	42	49	216
	Lieutenant Stokes	40	42	40	45	44	211
	Lieut. Messenger, L. A.	43	44	34	43	39	203
	Private Pospisil	41	40	33	36	39	190
	Sergeant Hengerer	41	41	38	39	28	187
	Lieutenant Leach	40	38	42	32	25	177
	Corporal Church	35	37	25	31	31	159
		510	499	470	492	490	2461

All told, the team did very well but would have made a much better showing if there had been a greater number of candidates for the team.

The following is a complete list of Officers and men that represented the Ninth Coast Artillery Corps in the matches at Caldwell and Peekskill:

Colonel G. W. Burleigh
Lieutenant-Colonel E. C. Delafield
Major W. L. Hodges
Major L. A. Keyes
Captain J. M. Perry
Captain V. M. Earle
Lieutenant W. B. Cass
Lieutenant W. I. Foley
Lieutenant A. C. Leach
Lieutenant C. H. Ellard
Lieutenant G. Schwab
Sergeant L. Hengerer

Digitized by Google

Captain Burt Wilcox
Lieutenant J. F. Sulger
Lieutenant J. G. Phelps Stokes
Lieutenant L. A. Messenger
Lieutenant J. Messenger
Corporal F. E. Church
Private J. Pospisil
Private S. Yetman
Private M. C. Lewis
Private J. Lewis

To give an idea of the work at Caldwell and of the interest it held for those present we give an account of the work at the range by one of our officers, told in his own words.

"On July 7, 1919 I was ordered by Colonel Burleigh to proceed to Caldwell, New Jersey, and report to the commanding officer of the U. S. Navy Rifle Range as Property and Supply officer of the Ninth Coast Artillery Corps, New York Guard. A few days after arriving there, the commanding officer advised Colonel Burleigh that he was in need of additional officers to assist in the work of organizing the N. R. A. Matches, and requested the use of my services as information officer and as Acting Adjutant to Major Paul A. Capron, U. S. M. C., of his staff at such times as my regular duty did not demand my attention. Colonel Burleigh was glad to permit me to do this and I was soon detailed to this duty. I was appointed officer of the day shortly after this, and for the rest of the time that I was there so acted on every sixth day in rotation with five other officers of the Army, Navy and Marine Corps.

About the middle of July, there was a serious flood at the post, and for the time being I had no duties to perform in connection with my own unit, and therefore was able to give my entire time to assist Colonel Harllee and his officers in restoring conditions at the camp. It was a long, tedious piece of work, as the water was very slow in receding and we were only able to get things into fair shape by the time that the first of the matches were shot early in August. Nevertheless, the season was a successful one and I would be the last to find fault with conditions which could not have been in any way avoided.

From the time the matches began until after Labor Day our work was endless, as there were about 5,000 in the camp, of whom about 3,000 were civilians, and the difficulties and perplexities that were brought to our attention by the latter were numerous. The duties of the staff officers in that post were varied and continuous under the conditions described, as we were endeavoring to keep a lot of civilians, who had probably never been obliged to live under such unpleasant conditions, in an agreeable frame of mind, and endeavoring to get them to remain through the matches, and at the same time make them as nearly comfortable as possible. I have never seen such fine spirit displayed by any body of men as by those officers at Caldwell. Lieutenant-Colonel Harllee was tireless in his endeavors not only to hold the matches,

Digitized by Google

but to hold them under as nearly normal conditions as possible. The flood and other unexpected contingencies which arose almost at the last minute were enough to stagger any commanding officer, but Colonel Harllee's attitude of serenity when face to face with almost superhuman difficulties made every one of his officers anxious and willing to spare nothing to lend him every endeavor and assistance at all times. That the matches were held and that they were successful was due entirely to his able leadership and determination to permit no obstacle to stand in his way. Taken as a whole, it was the most interesting experience of my brief military career, and I could ask no greater pleasure than to again have an opportunity of serving under Colonel Harllee at some future time.

The post was situated on very low ground, virtually a low-lying swamp in the valley adjoining the Passaic River northwest of Caldwell, N. J., and at the height of the matches, contained forty to fifty frame barracks and other camp buildings, and possibly 1,000 tents. One difficulty was the question of mess, as separate messes had to be provided for numerous units. When I first went to the post, there were not so many officers but that one mess was sufficient for all. By August 1, however, so many more officers came that it was necessary to divide the mess, and Colonel Harllee opened a staff mess in what was termed the clubhouse, to which he invited a number of officers regularly, and nightly invited many others as guests, not to mention the rifle teams which came as units, until all had been invited at least once. These affairs were generally held in the evening, and were accompanied by music and entertainment, followed, as a rule, by speeches or interesting talks by some officer or other person. There was no lack of music, as through the Matches there were several bands present, and they aided very much in keeping up the spirits of the men who were doing pretty uncomfortable work and leading a very uncomfortable life. For days at a time, I saw assembly for both Marines and Sailors held in three feet of water, this to make clear the difficult conditions under which everything was done over there for a period of ten days. For the men, there were separate messes for the Marine Corps, the Navy and those of the enlisted force of the Army present, of whom there were a considerable number; also numerous messes for the civilian rifle clubs.

I have been asked to describe the routine of the arrival of a civilian rifle team. As a rule they came from great distances, many from far Western and Southern States, and they always seemed to time their arrival at Caldwell after the last transport truck had been parked and the chauffeur sent to bed, so that the officer of the day had his work cut out for him for many hours following midnight. Team Captains would call up from Caldwell at absurd hours of the morning and state they had arrived at the end of the trolley line with their men, and request prompt transportation to the camp. However, I think we invariably succeeded in satisfying them that the delay was no fault of ours. I know that no rifle team or body of men ever landed in the

Digitized by Google

camp without at once receiving hot food and being almost immediately made comfortable in barracks so far as it was possible to be in any camp.

I want to pay a tribute to the work of the welfare organizations of that camp, the Y. M. C .A., the K. of C. and the Salvation Army. The work they did was beyond all praise. During and after the flood there were entertainments nightly in one or the other of their buildings, and it went a long way to keeping men who worked hours and hours every day in deep water, or later on in sticky mud, in a good humor. The services rendered by the ladies of the Red Cross of Caldwell, headed by Mrs. Edwin E. Bond, were equally important and worthy of attention. They accomplished wonders in every way in maintaining the morale of the camp.

As regards the arrangements for mess for outsiders at the camp, I would say that civilian teams or individuals coming to the camp paid for their own mess, although mess rooms and the mess itself were furnished and prepared by the regular camp organization. During the summer, I was frequently called upon to inspect the camp messes, and in so doing invariably found them to be of good quality, well cooked and properly served. Anyone who found fault with the food that he received at Caldwell did so without reason. Great criticism has been made of the camp and the conditions in it, during and following the period of the high water, but I want to say in that connection that as Officer-of-the-Day on Colonel Harllee's staff I was in a position to know at all times as to cases in the camp hospital. Almost all of the cases that were there during the summer were accidents, and I did not know of a single case of a man permanently stationed at that post who was at any time sick because of the conditions in that camp. We did have numerous cases of illness lasting for a few days at a time, but almost invariably they were outsiders, civilians who came from comfortable homes and indoor work, who went to Caldwell and immediately went out on the Rifle Range, lay down on the damp ground without protecting themselves by wearing a woolen belt, and naturally became prey to slight intestinal disorders. The Red Cross furnished the post with a detail headed by Major Slicklen. He brought several nurses who assisted greatly in the care of the sick and injured in the hospital. Naturally there were many accidents as there always are at annual matches. The only wonder to me was that more men were not drowned, so far as I know only one having lost his life in that way.

There were about 250 targets, 100 on the 1,000 yard range, 100 on the mid-range, and 50 on the 200 yard range. Liberal opportunity was furnished to all outsiders to shoot at all times, except when matches were on. That this opportunity was not availed of generally was due to the conditions above described. Nevertheless, when it was possible to shoot, there were almost always some enthusiasts there at work. Ammunition and Springfield rifles were furnished free of all charge, and all a man had to spend was his carfare and the price of his mess, of which he had a choice of three, the officers', and two classes of enlisted men's mess, one where his mess kit was washed for him after its use, and the other at a lower rate where he washed it himself.

Digitized by Google

New York Day was one of the pick days of the season. Colonel George W. Burleigh, my commanding officer at that time, and a selected committee gave a luncheon at the Waldorf-Astoria to Adjutant-General Berry and a large number of invited guests, mostly officers of the New York Guard. Following this luncheon, the party was driven in automobiles from the Waldorf-Astoria to the camp. On the way to the camp, the party stopped to see an exhibition at the aviation field about two miles away from the camp. This aviation unit was to have been stationed in a field directly across the street from the camp, but as this was turned into a temporary lake by the flood, it was never possible to carry out the original plan. However, daily after the arrival of the aviators exhibitions were given over and about the camp. After the exhibition ended, the party continued to the camp and was conducted on a tour of inspection by the Commanding Officer and his Staff, after which a photograph was taken on the steps of the clubhouse.* At about 7 o'clock in the evening a front line barrage was simulated under conditions as near as possible to actual warfare by the detachment from the Army School of the Line from Fort Benning, Georgia, under the command of Major Cheedle. The party later returned to New York as they had come.

The camp closed on the last Saturday in August, and by Labor Day there was no one left except the permanent camp force."

* See page 208.

POST 8, CO. A, NORTH OF TUCKAHOE ROAD.

Digitized by Google

Chapter Seventeen

THE OLD NINTH RETURNS

ON April 23, 1919, was held a memorable parade. It was the welcome home given by the new Ninth, the Ninth Coast Artillery Corps of the New York Guard, to the men of the old Ninth, the Ninth Coast Defense Command of the New York National Guard, who had been in the Service of the United States during the World War. It would take much more than the space allowed for this occasion to give a bare outline of the services rendered by our comrades of the old regiment. True to the magnificent traditions of their famous command they had done well in every unit to which they were sent. They served in the Fifty-Seventh, Thirty-Seventh, Forty-Third, Thirty-First, Seventy-Fourth Artillery, the Seventeenth Anti-Aircraft Battery, Fifth and First Trench Mortar Battalions. Sixty-five men in the parade that April day were in Battery A of the First Trench Mortar Battalion, served from Chateau Thierry to the end of the Meuse-Argonne Battle, and when the Armistice was signed were just outside of Sedan.

And in addition to the veterans of the World War there were in the parade not only Veterans of the Spanish War who suffered and sickened in the awful camp at Chickamauga, not only veterans who had faithfully and patiently done their work in the piping times of peace but also the Veterans of the Civil War, the men of Antietam, Gettysburg, and Cold Harbor. A far cry from those Civil War bloody battles to the tremendous conflict of the Meuse-Argonne, but the men of the Ninth were there.

The Regiment under the command of Colonel Burleigh formed in the Armory at Fourteenth Street, and headed by the Band and Field Music marched to the rendezvous in Sixty-seventh Street between Central Park West and Broadway. In addition to the regimental staff with former officers of the new Ninth, there was an honorary staff of officers and men of the new Ninth who had entered

Digitized by Google

the Federal Service. After the new Ninth had lined up on the north side of the street facing south, the old Ninth, under command of its soldierly and able Colonel John J. Byrne, marched out of the First Field Artillery Armory and were formed on the south side of the street facing north.

Then in a brief but beautiful little ceremony the Colors of the old Ninth were returned to the veterans of the World War. The Colors, the most valuable possession of a Regiment, a sacred heritage, had been passed to the new Ninth shortly after Colonel Burleigh took command. The new Ninth carried the two sets of Colors and when the color guard of the old regiment was paraded their old flags were presented to them. A just and fitting tribute to brave men. The parade was reformed and marched in column of squads to Seventy-second Street and thence across Central Park unil the head of the line reached Fifth Avenue. There was a signaling post at the reviewing stand, another at Seventieth Street, and another in the Park. As soon as the reviewing party had arrived at the stand, this fact was wigwagged to Colonel Burleigh. The column marched down Fifth Avenue, headed by a platoon of mounted police. On the reviewing stand were the Mayor, the Park Commissioner, Major-General Daniel Appleton, Commodore R. P. Forshew, Brigadier-General O. B. Bridgman, Colonel Arthur F. Schermerhorn, Lieutenant-Colonel Olmstead, of General O'Ryan's Staff, and many other distinguished officers.

The new Ninth, headed by its stalwart Colonel, acting as escort, preceded the war veterans who were followed by the Civil and Spanish War men, some of whom were carried in the automobiles of the Woman's Motor Corps of America.

The parade was received along the entire line of march with cheers. The attending crowds were not only much larger than we expected but were very enthusiastic in their greetings of the three parts of the parade—the Ninth of the New York Guard, the men of the Ninth who had served in the War, and the old veterans, many of whom were strikingly vigorous and hearty in appearance. There was a guard of honor at the Reviewing Stand furnished by

Digitized by Google

the Xavier Cadet Battalion, Xavier High School, which also furnished the ushers and music here. Noticeable in the many warm greetings given the men of the Ninth was that from a large contingent of the Salvation Army.

The line of march was down Fifth Avenue to 13th Street, west to Seventh Avenue, north to 15th Street and east to the Armory.

When the men arrived in the Armory they were promptly dismissed. The tables were all set for dinner. The Supply Company had arranged for an excellent dinner which every one enjoyed. Over sixteen hundred men were fed. As soon as dinner was over the tables were removed and the floor cleared. The guests were then given a vaudeville entertainment which was followed by dancing.

One of the last services of the new Ninth to the City was their solution of the following technical problem.

Notified from Brigade Headquarters of a theoretical situation as follows: "A civil uprising has occurred—all transportation lines have ceased to function. Telephone, telegraphs, power and lighting plants are working, but in danger—have a few civilian guards. Your regiment has been assembled. Colonel Burleigh issued the following orders: The 1st Battalion, Major Hoes, will guard the Armory and immediate neighborhood. The 2nd Battalion, Major Hodges, will guard the City Hall, Hall of Records, Municipal Building. The 3rd Battalion, Major Keyes, will guard 23rd Street Ferries, Hudson Tubes, foot of Christopher Street."

REPORT OF MAJOR HOES

1. On receipt of orders on above problem, assembled the officers of the first Battalion, reported the substance of those orders and made the following dispositions:

Commander of Guard—Captain Perry.

Entire Battalion to be divided into three reliefs, of approximately fifty men each and mounted as single guard:

First Relief, Captain Kingsbury.
Second Relief, Captain Schwab.
Third Relief, Captain Ericson.

Digitized by Google

First relief to go on duty at once, remainder of guard held in reserve:

Following posts established,—Cossack Post at:

(1) Cor. 6th Ave. & 15th St. (3) Cor. 6th Ave. & 14th St.
(2) Cor. 7th Ave. & 15th St. (4) Cor. 7th Ave. & 14th St.
(5) In S. W. Tower (with machine-gun and 3 men.)
(6) In Tower on North side of roof (with machine-gun and 2 men.)
(7) Four sentries posted on street front of Armory,—double sentries at doors. Sentries at all approaches to magazine and at magazine and at headquarters. Remainder of guard and 2 machine-guns held in reserve.

Gave instructions all sentries and cossack posts to permit no assembling in streets enclosing block in which Armory is located and to report immediately to me at headquarters any disturbance.

Dispatched (theoretically) four patrols of one squad each to go through four buildings specified (including roofs) to get names of all occupants and persons employed therein. To search for and bring to headquarters suspicious characters and all arms and ammunition and explosives found therein.

Posted (theoretically) sentinel at door of each of those buildings with instructions to allow no one to enter without being satisfied that their business is proper.

Directed that as each relief goes on post, a patrol go through the building including roofs, and report. Further details covered by guard report book.

Ernest P. Hoes,
Major, C. A. C.

REPORT OF MAJOR HODGES

"1. Under order from the Commanding Officer, the Second Battalion was assembled at 7:15 p. m. with field equipment, inspected and remained on the floor of the Armory awaiting further orders.

2. At 8:20 p. m. received orders to issue sixty rounds of ball ammunition, which was immediately carried out, receiving ammunition from the magazine.

3. At 8:30 p. m. received orders advising that a riotous disturbance was in progress and to proceed with Battalion as rapidly as possible by use of motor transport to City Hall Park, N. Y., and protect City Hall, Municipal Building, Hall of Records and other public buildings in that vicinity; report by telephone to Commanding Officer of Armory when disposition had been made covering the above; men to be provided with three days rations. Four Lewis guns, three hundred rounds of ammunition (ball), and gun crews under a Lieutenant were assigned to the Command.

4. The rations were issued by the Supply Officer.

5. The Battalion and Machine-Gun Detachment proceeded out of the Armory to Fifteenth Street, where it boarded ten motor cars commandeered for that purpose.

Digitized by Google

6. At 8:45 p. m. the first detachment, consisting of seventy five officers, men and non-commissioned officers, two machine-guns, left the Armory by motor, proceeding west to Seventh Avenue, south on Seventh Avenue, Varick Street and West Broadway to Chambers Street and east on Chambers Street to block between Church Street and Broadway, arriving at 9:10 p. m. The motor cars proceeded at intervals of about one hundred feet, preceded by one motor about one hundred yards in advance, one man with fixed bayonet riding on the running board of each side of each motor. The remaining portion of the Battalion and Machine-Gun Detachment, under Captain Scott, remained at the Armory in Fifteenth Street to await the return of motor transport.

7. Upon detraining, a detachment (eleven men and three N. C. O'S), were detailed as guard at the corner of Chambers and Church Streets, and a detachment (eleven men and three N. C. O'S), was placed as guard at Chambers Street and Broadway, (while detraining, a platoon of Infantry—colored—passed west along Chambers Street). The detail at Broadway and Chambers Street next moved east on Chambers Street to Record Place; a detail (four men and one N. C. O.), north on Broadway to Reade Street and a detail (four men, one N. C. O), south on Broadway to Warren Street. Reports were received from these details that conditions at these points were quiet.

8. The main body then proceeded east on Chambers Street to a point north of the New York County Court House.

9. The detachment at Chambers Street and Record Place then proceeded east on Chambers Street to Center Street, and a detachment (four men, one N. C. O.), proceeded north on Record Place to Reade Street; a detachment (four men, one machine-gun, four machine-gunners and one N. C. O), proceeded to southwest corner of New York County Court House, and a detachment (four men, one machine-gun, four machine-gunners, and one N. C. O.), proceeded to southeast corner of New York County Court House.

10. On account of small body of men in reserve, no other move was made until 9:30. The remaining men (sixty men, eight machine-gunners, twenty-one N. C. O's, four officers), of the Battalion and of the Machine-Gun Detachment arrived and joined the main body on Chambers Street, north of the New York County Court House. A detachment (one Lieutenant, twenty-one men, eight machine-gunners, five N. C. O.'s) proceeded along west face of New York County Court House and City Hall and were disposed; at southwest corner City Hall four men, four machine-gunners with one machine-gun and one N. C. O.; six men, four machine-gunners and one machine-gun and one N. C. O. at southeast corner of City Hall, the remainder posting line of sentries south of City Hall and in reserve at points south of center of City Hall. (Machine-guns placed by Lieutenant in the open as a psychological deterring effect on disorderly element—the detachment being advised to proceed to a

Digitized by Google

protected position, which had been selected nearby, in case of an attack)). A detachment (twelve men, two N. C. O's), proceeded to corner of Chambers Street and Broadway as reserve at that point.

11. The main body proceeded east on Chambers Street, taking up position in the northeast corner of City Hall Park, immediately south of Hall of Records. A detachment (one Captain, four men, one N. C. O.), proceeded east under Municipal Building to east face of Municipal Building; (at this point a detachment of the Sixty-Ninth Infantry, under command of Captain Quinn, was encountered covering the southeast face of the Municipal Building).

12. A detachment (four men, one N. C. O.), proceeded north on Center Street to Reade Street at north end of Municipal Building.

13. A detachment (two men), proceeded to corner of Elm and Duane Streets.

14. An additional detachment (seven men, one N. C. O.), proceeded to point of the detachment on Chambers Street at east face of Municipal Building.

15. An additional detachment (three men, one N. C. O.), under Captain proceeded to point detachment at Center and Reade Streets and covered north end of Municipal Building.

16. Detachment (four men, four machine-gunners with one machine-gun, and one N. C. O.), previously located at southeast corner of New York County Court House, removed and sent to join detachment at north end of Municipal Building.

17. A detachment (four men, four machine-gunners with one machine-gun, and one N. C. O.), proceeded with addition of four men from main body and one Lieutenant, to south end of Municipal Building.

18. A detachment (twelve men, two N. C. O's), proceeded to south side of Brooklyn Bridge Extension.

19. Remaining with main body as reserves—Battalion Commander, Adjutant, two Captains, two Lieutenants, nine N. C. O's, twelve men, motor transport parked on Chambers Street between Broadway and Hall of Records, with drivers (seven N. C. O's three men). Entire strength of Battalion—one hundred fifteen men, sixteen machine-gunners, thirty-eight N. C. O's and nine officers—Battalion Sergeant-Major remained at Armory. Complete disposition effected and inspected at 9:50 p. m. Endeavored to report to Commanding Officer at Armory at that time through telephone at Police Station at City Hall—found Police Station closed—used telephone in drug store under World Building—message delayed, due to lack of available free wires.

20. Received orders to hold men in position and return to Armory after thirty minutes had elapsed after time of complete disposition.

21. Between 10:10 and 10:20 inspection of all posts and detachments made.

22. At 10:30 men were assembled in northwest corner City Hall Park. All were accounted for and first detachment started to Armory in motor cars. The remainder of the Battalion proceeded to march to Armory, and, as motor cars returning

Digitized by Google

met this body, additional men were transported in motor cars to the Armory. Complete force at Armory 12 p. m. Ammunition returned to magazine and men dismissed.

(Signed) W. L. Hodges,
Major, Ninth C. A. C., N. Y. G."

REPORT OF MAJOR KEYES

"1. The following order was received by the commander of this Battalion at 8:20 p m., June 19, 1919:

(1) You will proceed at once to protect the following points:
West 23rd Street Ferries,
Hudson & Manhattan Railroad Tubes,
Foot of Christopher Street.

(2) You will report your estimate of the local situation and of your disposition of your troops.

(3) Regimental Headquarters will be in the Veterans' Room at the Armory, 125 West Fourteenth Street, Telephone Farragut 456.

(4) Sixty (60) rounds of ammunition will be issued to each man.

(5) Four (4) Lewis machine-guns with four (4) magazines filled with ball ammunition will be assigned to your command.

(6) Three (3) days' rations will be issued.

(7) Transportation lines have ceased to function, but telephone and telegraph are still effective, power and lighting plants are still working.

(8) Transportation will be by automobiles, commandeered for the purpose and now parked in Fifteenth Street.

2. Thereupon the Battalion commander issued the following order to the Captain of the Eleventh Company:

3rd Batt., 9th C. A. C., N. Y. G.
Armory, West 14th St.

From: C. O. 3rd Batt. June 19, 1919.
To: C. O. 11th Co.
Subject: Orders.

I. Pursuant instructions C. O. Ninth C. A. C. there is a disturbance at H. and M. Tubes at Christopher St.

II. You will proceed to Christopher St. and take charge reporting upon your arrival to Battalion Headquarters, D. L. & W. Railway Station, West Twenty-third St.

By order of Major Keyes.
Leslie Messenger
Adjutant.

Digitized by Google

3. At 8:40 p.m. sixty (60) rounds of ammunition were issued to each enlisted man of the Battalion, and each officer was required to carry pistol ammunition. Thereupon pieces were loaded and locked and bayonets fixed. Three days' rations were duly drawn.

4. Captain Wilcox proceeded to comply with his orders and the other three companies were transported (by automobiles, commandeered) to the foot of West Twenty-third St. On leaving the Armory the verbal report was made by the adjutant to the commanding officer of our movements, and notification was given that Battalion Headquarters would immediately be established at the ticket office of the D. L. & W. Railway Ferry, West Twenty-third Street.

5. The three Companies were marched in column of squads at "high port" and on reaching the tactical grounds were marched alongside a fence at the north of the grounds with a view of forcing a crowd, if any, into the side streets and immediately taking possession of the ferries. Thereupon the public space in front of the ferries would have been cleared by forcing the crowd up Eleventh Avenue and through Twenty-second and Twenty-third streets, at which points guards would have been mounted so as to prevent any influx or congregating at close range. On the south of the ferries are the steamship piers, which were found to be in possession of Federal troops with whom I would have immediately established cooperation.

6. Our troops on duty at Twenty-third Street would have been quartered in the ferry house of the D. L. & W. Railway for the reason that it is a building constructed on piles and is accessible from three sides by water only, which makes guarding a simple matter. The buildings adjoining the square are old and of low structure. Due attention would have been given to covering these or clearing them, as the situation demanded.

7. Of the four machine guns, one was assigned to each Company; the three at the ferries were held in the center of the square for further orders.

8. Communication with Regimental Headquarters was constantly maintained.

9. After attending to the details at Twenty-third Street, the Battalion commander placed the next senior officer present, Captain Howard Coolidge, in command of the detachment with orders to continue the theoretical instruction of the men and proceed back to the Armory at 9:50 p.m., that being well beyond the time limit fixed.

10. I thereupon proceeded with my adjutant, the observing officer and Sergeant Britten to inspect the Company guarding the Hudson and Manhattan tubes. At 12th Street and 8th Avenue a large crowd had congregated and there was considerable excitement, and at Eighth Street and Eighth Avenue my automobile was stopped by six or seven policemen who asked if there was any excitement "up the street." We answered in the affirmative.

11. On arriving at the Hudson and Manhattan tubes I found the Eleventh Company well posted and giving good protection, under the circumstances, to the

Digitized by Google

tube entrance. The problem at the tube would be mainly at the water's edge where steps were taken to give adequate protection, and at the tube entrance, which was also covered. The power generating station just around the corner from the tube entrance was also covered.

12. We then hurried back to observe whether the excitement referred to at Twelfth and Eighth Avenue had developed but apparently the police had the matter entirely in hand and there was no evidence of disorder.

13. The Eleventh Company returned to the Armory at 9:50 p.m., and the Ninth, Tenth and Twelfth Companies returned at 10:05 p.m. Thereupon pieces were unlocked and ammunition returned, and the Battalion dismissed at 10:50 p.m.

		Officers	Enlisted Men
Attendance:	Field and Staff	2	1*
	Ninth Company	3	43
	Tenth Company	3	41
	Eleventh Company	3	48
	Twelfth Company	3	54
		14	187

*Enlistment pending.

(Signed) L. A. Keyes,
Major C.A.C., N. Y. G."

On October 2, 1919, Colonel Burleigh relinquished the command of the Regiment to accept the appointment as Acting Inspector General on the Division Staff, with the rank of Lieutenant-Colonel. True to the high ideals of his command, he did the duty before him and did it well. His leaving the Regiment marks the ending of a chapter in the history of the Ninth. The officers and men of the Regiment, to show their respect and affection for their Colonel, caused a committee to be appointed who, on their behalf, presented to him a gold watch, on which was engraved the following inscription:

"Presented to Colonel George W. Burleigh by the officers and men of the 9th Coast Defense Command, N. Y. G., upon his relinquishing command of that organization, as a token of their regard and affection. Oct. 2, 1919."

On the reverse side of the watch is engraved the Colonel's coat-of-arms.

Digitized by Google

At a meeting of the Officers' Association, the following resolutions were passed:

"*Resolved,* That we, the officers of the 9th Coast Defense Command, hereby express to Colonel George W. Burleigh our deep regret at his relinquishing the command of this regiment, our highest regard for him as a man, our warmest appreciation of the efficiency of his work as Commanding Officer, and of the unfailing kindness and consideration with which he has exercised the duties of his office; and that we extend to him our hearty and affectionate good wishes for the future.

"*Further Resolved,* That in the adoption of these resolutions, we feel that we are expressing the unanimous sentiment of the enlisted personnel of the regiment.

"*Further Resolved,* That a copy of these resolutions, suitably engrossed, be presented to Colonel George W. Burleigh, as a slight token of our unfailing good will."

We thus come to the close of a patriotic movement characterized by zeal, efficiency and modesty. Men prominent in business and professional life made many sacrifices to serve in the armed forces of the State during the great emergency. They served loyally and faithfully, without pay or other reward, save the consciousness of duty done.

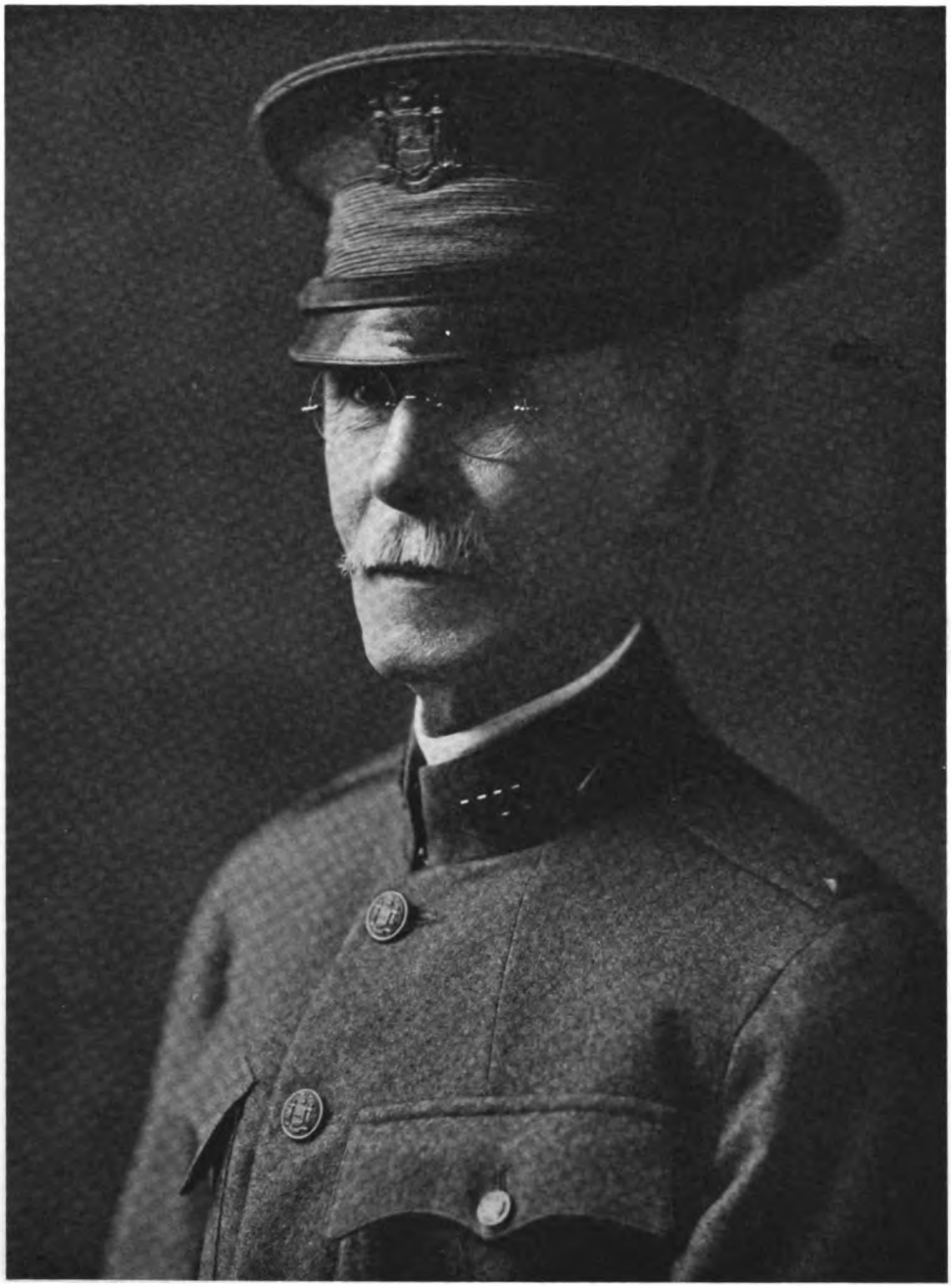
It had been our intention to close the history at this point, but Captain J. G. Phelps Stokes, present Adjutant of the Ninth Coast Defense Command, has written an account of the later activities of the Ninth which will form the last chapter. In bringing his work to an end, the Historian desires to thank the many officers and men who have helped and encouraged him in the work. He has endeavored to be fair and just, without fear or favor, and now he lays down his pen with quickened memories of the willing and patriotic men associated with him in the events just described.

The tale is told, the task is done. In the days to come we will often recall incidents connected with our work, and always have in our hearts a soft spot for our friends and comrades of the V. C. A. and the Ninth.

ALEXANDER R. THOMPSON.

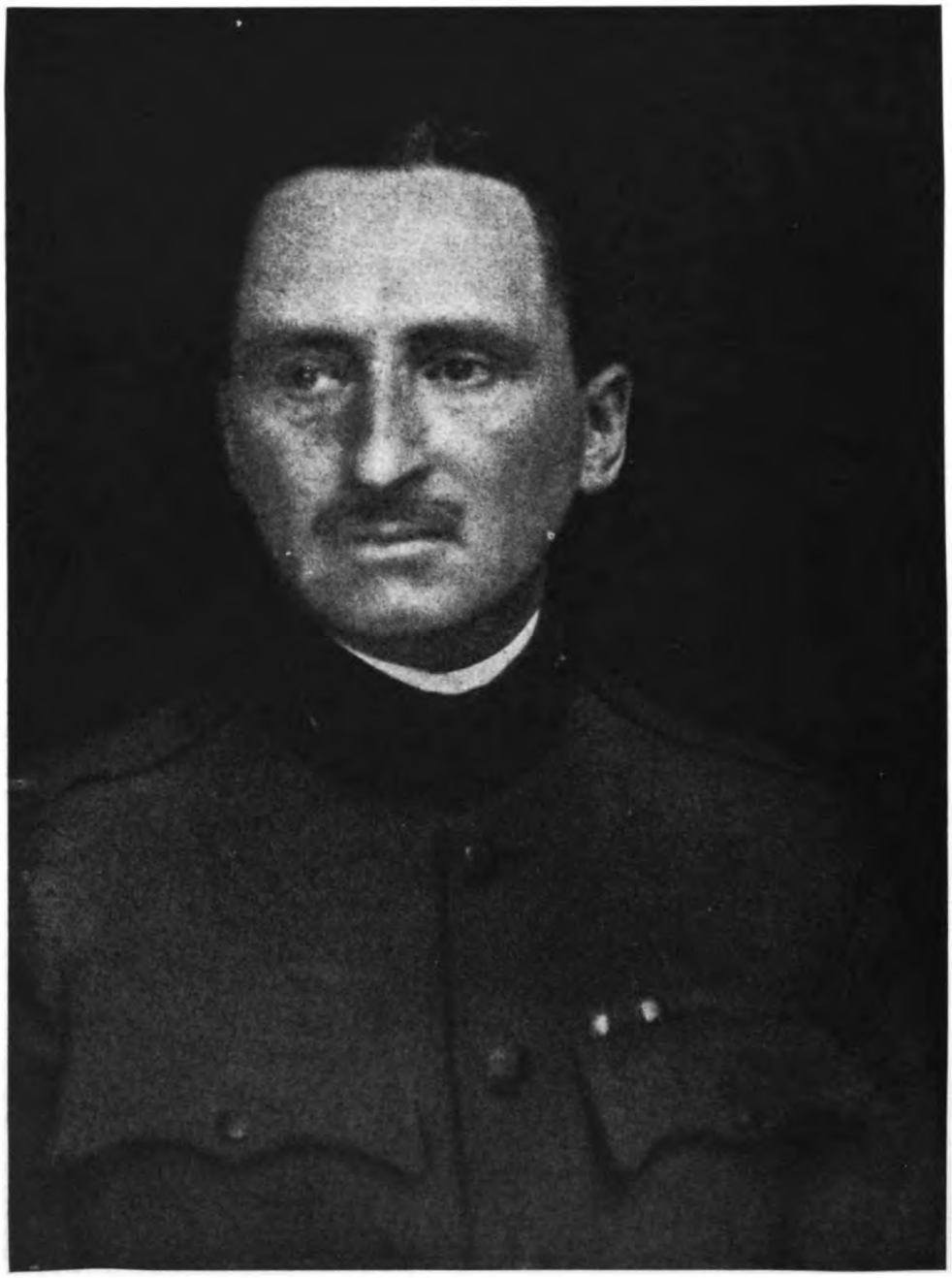
Penn Yan, May 4, 1921.

Digitized by Google



THE LATE 2ND LIEUT. ALEXANDER R. THOMPSON, HISTORIAN.

Digitized by Google



COLONEL JOHN J. BYRNE.

Digitized by Google

Chapter Eighteen

LATER ACTIVITIES OF THE NINTH

By James G. Phelps Stokes

Captain-Adjutant, 9th C. D. C., N. Y. G.

COLONEL JOHN J. BYRNE, the new Commanding Officer of the Ninth Coast Defense Command, was immediately confronted with a somewhat difficult situation. The Ninth Coast Artillery Corps had been organized October 8, 1917, and its original members had enlisted, several hundred strong, on October 8, 1917, for the term of two years. Their terms of enlistment expired on the day that Colonel Byrne took command. The Regiment had already been much depleted by numerous withdrawals following the signing of the Armistice on November 11, 1918. Many men of large responsibilities in the business world, who had entered the Ninth, had felt that hostilities having ceased and the war having virtually ended, their duties to their businesses should receive larger consideration again, and many of these men had already applied for and received their honorable discharges, and the full and honorable discharges of many others were already due.

On October 8, 1919, the Regiment numbered 49 officers and 623 enlisted men. Of the enlisted men, the terms of enlistment of a large proportion had expired at midnight of the preceding day. Had these men asked for and insisted upon their discharges just then, the Command would have been very greatly weakened, and at a time when notwithstanding the termination of hostilities the need for an efficient guard in New York City was perhaps greater than at any previous time during the war. Fortunately, the large majority decided to continue to serve. For a new danger had arisen—the Bolshevist movement and the organization within the City of New York of numerous revolutionary groups having for their outspoken purposes the violent overthrow of the government

Digitized by Google

of our City, State and Nation. This new peril had arisen and reached serious proportions just at a time when the morale of the State troops, generally, had slumped badly as a result of reactions from the tensions of the war.

Under date of October 14, 1919, Major-General J. McI. Carter, of the General Staff of the United States Army, Chief of the Militia Bureau at Washington, writing by direction of the Secretary of War, addressed a letter to the Adjutant-General of all the States, declaring, "The need for the protection of lives and property within the States is greater than at any time since the Civil War." General Carter stressed the "vital necessity" of maintaining the organized militia at full strength, at that time particularly, "not," he declared, "for the purpose of aiding capital in its issue with labor, but with a view to enforcing the law of the land."

To the Ninth Coast Artillery Corps, which had been redesignated on August 7, 1919, The Ninth Coast Defense Command, had been particularly assigned responsibility for the defense of the lower end of Manhattan Island, which was at once both the nerve centre of industrial, commercial and financial America, and the headquarters and centre of activities of half a dozen of the principal anarchist, communist and syndicalist organizations of America. The headquarters of four of these organizations were within a few blocks of the Armory of the Ninth, and the ablest of the revolutionary leaders lived in an obscure alley barely one thousand feet away.

A manifesto of the Federation of Unions of Russian Workers in the United States, had recently declared:

"We must mercilessly destroy all remains of governmental authority and class domination, liberate the prisoners, demolish prisons and police offices, destroy all legal papers pertaining to private ownership of property, all field fences and boundaries, and burn all certificates of indebtedness. We must take care that everything is wiped from the earth that is a reminder of the right of private ownership of property. To blow up barracks, gendarme and police officers, must be the important concern of the revolting working people. In the work of destruction we must be merciless, for the slightest weakness upon our part may afterward cost the working class a whole sea of needless blood. * * * * We call all workers to a merciless war upon capital and

Digitized by Google

government. * * * There is one means * * * armed insurrection and forcible seizure of all instruments and all products of toil." The manifesto calls upon "the working class" to "kindle and maintain the conflagration of civil war until we have torn up by the roots capitalism and government."

Very many revolutionary papers circulating in the State of New York were carrying proclamations of similar import.

Under date of October 20, 1919, Lieutenant-Colonel Edward McLeer, Jr., Division Adjutant, writing by command of Major-General O'Ryan, had urged all unit commanders to take immediate steps to provide one hundred men per company for every company in the New York Guard. In the Ninth at that time the average strength per company was 42. Major-General O'Ryan in a public statement made December 20, 1919, declared, "The time has arrived when verbal patriotism must be translated into organized security."

The Ninth at once endeavored zealously to do its share to promote this "translation." A very vigorous recruiting campaign was got under way promptly. During October, November and December, the Command lost 8 officers and about 120 enlisted men; but by the middle of January, 1920, the tide began to turn and with but three exceptions during the balance of the drill season (ending May 31, 1920), the consolidated reports showed each week greater gains than losses. The strength of the Command on May 31, 1920, was 45 officers and 681 enlisted men.

On April 5, 1920, following rather extensive conferences, an innovation of large significance was introduced. For the first time in the history of the Guard of this or any other State, Vocational Training was introduced in the Ninth Coast Defense Command. Courses were offered in Gas Engine Mechanics, Electric Wiring, Radio, Steam Power and Mathematics. Through the generous cooperation of the Board of Education of the City of New York, skilled instructors were provided and the courses were thrown open to all enlisted men of the Command. Two hundred and seventy-five men were soon availing themselves of the privileges thus afforded of securing instruction and training of sorts that could be ex-

Digitized by Google

pected to increase their earning capacity in civil life, while increasing their efficiency for service in the technical branches of Coast Artillery.

Through the very active interest of Division Headquarters in the inauguration of this experiment, and the representations made to the Militia Bureau by the Coast Defense Officer and the Senior Inspector-Instructor, considerable aid by the War Department had been promised, and appropriations for equipment and material to the value of about $50,000 were made by the Department to put the Ninth's experiment upon a substantial and permanent basis. Similar provision was made looking to the establishment of Vocational Training in all the Coast Defense Commands of New York.

To suitably house the new equipment, appeal was made to the municipal authorities of New York City for an appropriation of $50,000 to cover the cost of erecting new class rooms and shops on the roof of the administration portion of the Armory. After many difficulties and obstacles had been met and overcome, the desired appropriation was finally obtained in the form of an issue of $50,000 par value of corporate stock of the City of New York. Plans for the proposed improvement are being rapidly matured, and it is hoped that it will be available and fully equipped by the opening of the next drill season.

Similarly, after repeated difficulties and temporary setbacks, an appropriation of $25,000 corporate stock of the City of New York has been obtained to cover the cost of providing bathing facilities in all the Ninth's company rooms, a plan which Colonel Burleigh had recommended and considered with the Armory Board, but the appropriation could not then be secured. It is planned to remove one of the two corner stairways in each company room, and to place showers in the spaces thus obtained on the dressing-room floors, and company supply closets in the corresponding spaces on the floors beneath.

Colonel Burleigh had made one of the most interesting improvements in the Armory when the old Band Room near the sally-port was converted into a club room for the enlisted men. This room

Digitized by Google

was redecorated and refurnished in December, 1920, and now affords a club room of a sort of which any regiment might be proud.

The change of the Regiment from an Infantry to a Coast Artillery status has brought about great changes in the character of much of the military instruction given to both officers and men. The officers have their school in the science of coast artillery, under the direction of Lieutenant-Colonel Lewis N. Thiery; and their school in advance mathematics, under Captain Barton Cruikshank. The enlisted men receive constant instruction in the handling of coast artillery material. During the summer of 1920, the federalized units of the Command enjoyed a two weeks' tour of very strenuous duty at Fort Wright, New York, at the eastern entrance to Long Island Sound.

Seven companies of the Ninth are now "federalized" and in service of the United States, viz., the 13th, 14th, 15th, 18th, 21st, 22nd and 24th Companies. It is expected that the balance of the Command will be federalized before the end of the present drill season.

During the two months ending December 15, 1920, a special recruiting drive was conducted, which netted the regiment about 200 men. The annual muster and inspection in the week ending January 22, 1921, showed the strength of the Command to be at that time 46 officers and 751 enlisted men; representing a net gain of 3 officers and 182 enlisted men since the last previous muster in November, 1919.

"Ratione aut Vi" is the motto of our Command. When reason fails to restrain those who would destroy or nullify our Government, force must be used to compel obedience to the law. The Ninth has never failed our Government and it never will.

Digitized by Google

CAPTAIN THEODORE T. LANE (Deceased).

Digitized by Google

CHAPTER NINETEEN

HOW THE NON-MANHATTAN UNITS OF THE V. C. A. AND 9TH C. A. C. CAME INTO BEING

I.—The Third Battery (Later Third Company)—Staten Island

By Its First Commander

Early in the Spring of 1917 some of the citizens of Staten Island who could not volunteer for active military service were strongly of the opinion nevertheless that they should do something toward preparing for possible contingencies. To consolidate the good American sentiment of the community, therefore, a meeting was called by Messrs. F. C. Townsend and H. S. Tenney for four P. M., Sunday, March 25th, to discuss the situation.

At this meeting, Mr. Townsend was chosen Chairman and Mr. Tenney Secretary of the temporary organization then effected. A committee composed of Messrs. F. C. Townsend, J. D. Clarke, A. L. Eglington, A. H. Pogson, H. S. Tenney, with Mr. G. S. Scofield in a legal advisory capacity only, was formed to pass upon the form of organization most available, with which affiliation might be made most advantageously to pursue the purposes of the patriotic gathering.

The next assemblage occurred on Sunday, April 1st, and was attended by about one hundred gentlemen, including the writer. A resolution was then passed to begin drilling the following Tuesday, April 3rd, at 8 o'clock, P. M. This meeting of April 1st was made memorable to its attendants, in its historic significance due to the proclamation of the President of the United States then published, declaring a state of war to exist, and, as an indication of the admirable spirit of these early meetings, the following resolution, proposed by Hon. Howard R. Bayne and carried unanimously, is quoted in full:

"His Excellency, the President of the United States, Washington, D. C.

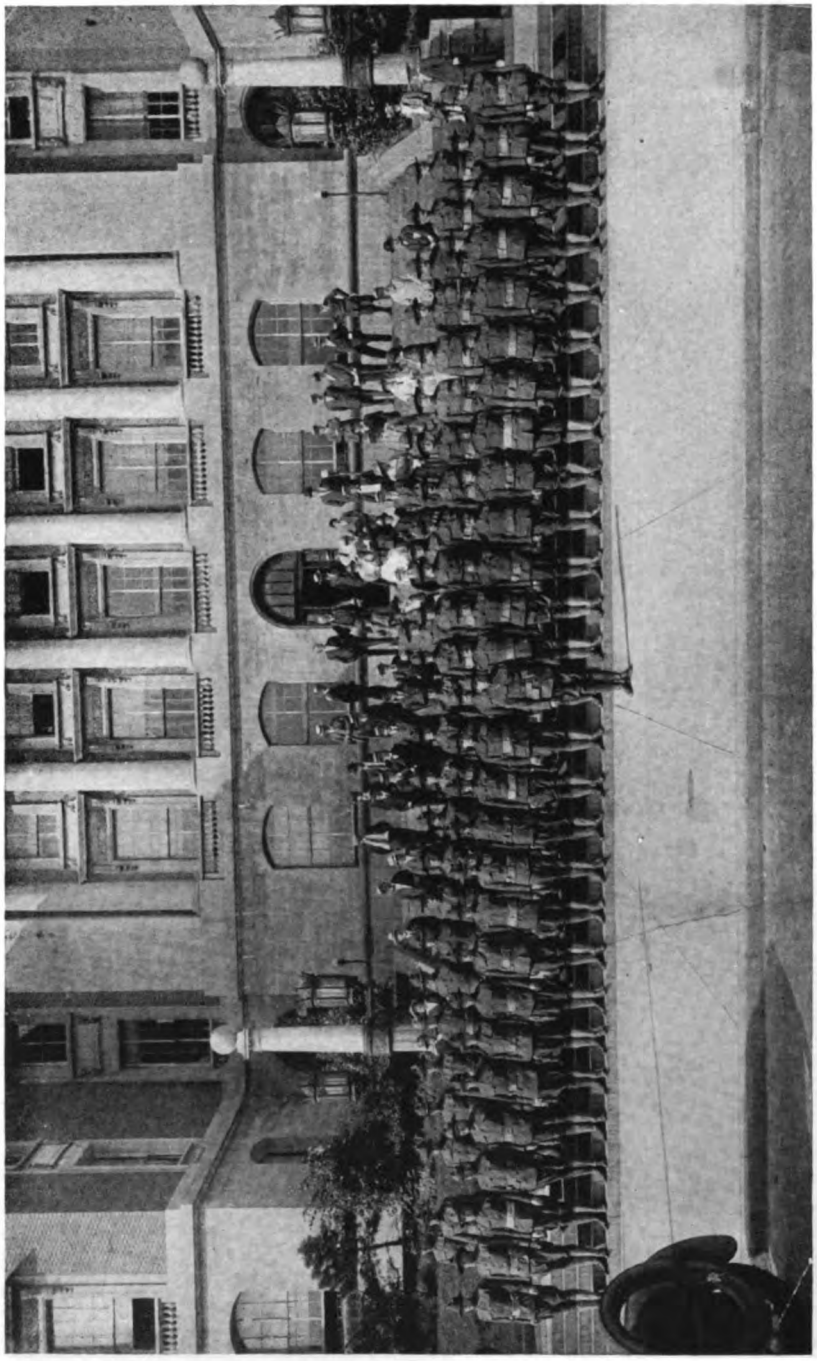
"At a meeting of one hundred citizens of the Borough of Richmond, City of New York, held at the Parish House of St. John's Episcopal Church, on the 1st day of April, 1917, the following resolution was unanimously adopted:

"RESOLVED: That we tender to the President the assurance of our hearty approval and support in the adoption of a firm and vigorous policy in the present crisis which will vindicate and protect our national rights by the employment of the Army and Navy of the United States, and further

"RESOLVED: That we tender to the President to the extent of our ability our individual and collective services in any way in which we may be useful in the prosecution of such policy; and further

"RESOLVED: That the Secretary of this meeting be instructed to immediately transmit a copy of this resolution to the President."

Digitized by Google



THIRD BATTERY, V. C. A., AT BOROUGH HALL, ST. GEORGE, S. I., ABOUT TO LEAVE FOR AQUEDUCT DUTY, SEPT. 5, 1917.

Digitized by Google

At a meeting held after the second drill, on Friday, the 6th of April, it was decided to join the Veteran Corps of Artillery of the State of New York. The suggestion was then made that until the Company, about eighty names to which had been subscribed as members at a previous meeting, should choose its officers, the committee first appointed should attend to its management. No objection was made to this arrangement at the time, so the committee proceeded to enlist recruits into the V. C. A. and the organization thus formed was soon designated by proper authority as the Third Battery, V. C. A., and quickly attained full strength.

About this time the committee requested the writer to take in hand the drilling of one of the three platoons, each consisting of about 35 men, into which the company was divided. Two Coast Artillery sergeants of the Regular Army, from Fort Wadsworth, Sergeants Davis and Snyder, were handling the other two platoons. Most liberal use of St. John's Parish House was given to the 3rd Battery by that church, throughout, for the purpose of meeting and drills. The Battery soon did the writer the honor to elect him Second Lieutenant, Commanding, and he was duly commissioned by the Governor, April 23, 1917. Drills were thereupon vigorously prosecuted, and field work, including extended order drill, with interior guard and outpost duty were taken up in order. Instruction in rifle fire was not neglected, for the Battery was soon armed with the new Krag rifles by the V. C. A. Headquarters. Staten Island offered a fair field for carrying on this work of training the personnel in the open; and Monday and Wednesday nights and Saturday afternoons were devoted to it regularly. In this the Battery Commander, though lacking N. C. O. aid at the start, will always cherish the memory of the loyal and skilful assistance rendered him in his task by Sergeants Davis and Snyder, and later by his own officers and men, when assigned to duty.

The Second Lieutenant Commanding was commissioned Captain, with 1st Sergeant George S. Richards, Jr., First Lieutenant, on July 2, 1917; and Sergeant Arthur O. Ford was appointed First Sergeant the latter part of July. Drilling in the open continued throughout the Summer and the organization and training were gradually perfected.

Pursuant to Special Orders No. 198 and 198-A, 1917, A.G.O., N. Y., and Art. Ser. Det., V. C. A., Orders 18-C, about two-thirds of the Third Battery's strength was enabled to leave Staten Island on the morning of Wednesday, September 5th, for a tour of guard duty on the New York Aqueduct, under command of its officers. It was arranged at Headquarters that those leaving at this time might as far as practicable be relieved by those remaining, details to be worked out. This rather necessary procedure, due to various business responsibilities of the men, complicated somewhat what would otherwise have been a simple matter, in arranging for guard details.

The Battery, some 64 officers and men, received its orders at the Grand Central Station to proceed in two platoons to Ardsley and Tuckahoe, the Battery Commander

Digitized by Google

taking half to the former station, and directing the First Lieutenant to conduct the remaining men to the latter point. Early that afternoon the force arrived, and was merged into the unit holding the sector extending northward from the New York City line to about Elmsford, east of Ardsley-on-Putnam, and including Hillview Reservoir, Fort Hill Siphon, etc., with the intervening Aqueduct. (See folded map, front of book.) This unit, the command of which was transferred that day to the writer by Captain Louis J. Praeger, relieved, was designated Co. A, 1st Provisional Regiment, N. Y. Guard, Colonel Rose Commanding; Major Hodges, Battalion Commander. Captain Brodie's officers included Lieutenant Raymond L. Taft, and he, Lieutenant Richards and the N. C. O.s serving under them, exerted themselves to the utmost, together with the men, in rendering faithful and efficient duty.

The Third Battery was relieved by a detachment of the 1st Field Artillery, which "took over" the following week; and the Third, with the rest of the V. C. A., was ordered home, and marched off the Aqueduct on the afternoon of September 14th.

On October 8th, 1917, the Third Battery, V. C. A., in accordance with the Governor's command, through the Adjutant General, was assigned to the 9th Coast Artillery Corps, N. Y. G., and became the Third Company.

The Third Battery (and Company), throughout its period of activity, participated in all ordered formations of the larger commands of which it formed a part, whether reviews, parades, guards of honor to visiting foreign commissions of Allied Nations, etc.

On March 18, 1918, Captain Brodie attended his last drill with his Company, and relinquished his command to take up Government war work, being soon after placed on the Reserve List for officers. Lieutenant Arthur O. Ford, later Captain, succeeded to the command of the Company; he in turn to be followed by Captain Oscar W. G. Ericson, who is still in service with the 9th C. D. C., N. Y. N. G.

II.—The Eighth Battery (Later Eighth Company)—Forest Hills

By Captain Horace F. Pomeroy

The Eighth Battery, V. C. A., had its beginning in the early spring of 1917. A number of men, residents of Forest Hills, Long Island, formed themselves into a committee for the purpose of organizing a military company. The objects, as set forth in the first printed announcements, were:

(a) To provide thorough military training in accordance with the latest tactics.
(b) To equip so as to be ready to afford the city adequate guard duty in case of internal disturbance.
(c) To assist men to qualify for Officers Reserve Corps.
(d) To demonstrate the inclination and ability to stand by the country in time of war.

Digitized by Google

It was decided to give this military organization the name of the Forest Hills Rifle Club. The following men comprised the Recruiting Committee:

H. F. Pomeroy, Chairman	H. W. Thoms
D. C. Cary	W. G. Walker
F. L. Holmes	Arthur Wright
L. P. McGahie	H. W. Wood
Lyman Beecher Stowe	

All able-bodied men were invited to join, and within a few weeks a company of 150 men were recruited. This company was officered by ex-National Guardsmen and Plattsburg students. The first captain was A. T. Shurick, and under his capable command, the Company developed military bearing and effectiveness.

In June, 1917, at the invitation of Colonel John Ross Delafield, and because of the desire for a more useful field of endeavor, the Rifle Club enlisted in the Veteran Corps of Artillery, becoming the 8th Battery. The officers were: A. T. Shurick, Captain; R. L. Taft, First Lieutenant; H. F. Pomeroy, Second Lieutenant.

The Battery turned out a large proportion of its strength for active service with the 1st Provisional Regiment on the N. Y. Aqueduct.

In the fall of 1917 the Eighth Battery, in common with most of the other batteries of the V. C. A., enlisted in the 9th Coast Artillery Corps, N. Y. Guard, as the 8th Company, with the following officers: H. F. Pomeroy, Captain; W. D. Teague,* 1st Lieutenant; John Messenger, 2nd Lieutenant.

III.—The Fifth and Eleventh Batteries, V. C. A. (Brooklyn) (Later Machine Gun, K & I Companies, 23rd Infantry, N. Y. G.

By Captain William L. Sayers

When the Council of Administration, V.C.A., voted to authorize the Vice-Commandant to enlist members and organize additional batteries, no one realized that the spirit of war would spread to all the boroughs so rapidly. Recruiting was progressing very quickly, and there were many who answered the call from Brooklyn; so Regt'l Sergt.-Major William L. Sayers, V.C.A., was detailed to instruct them in squad formations. Their numbers grew so fast that the Council voted the formation of a separate Brooklyn Battery to be known as the 5th Battery, and Sergt. Sayers remained with it.

By good fortune, Captain Louis Jewett Praeger, a man who had served many years in the Guard in the old 23rd, was offered the Command of the Brooklyn outfit. Captain Praeger shortly secured very advantageous quarters in the 23rd Regiment Armory, Bedford and Atlantic Avenues, Brooklyn. The men now numbered about

* Promoted Captain, Jan. 30, 1919, vice Pomeroy, resigned.

Digitized by Google

three squads and the various clubs of Brooklyn were visited and the Battery soon filled its ranks. Captain Praeger recommended Sergt.-Major Sayers as Lieutenant and second in command, and he was so commissioned.

The Battery drilled twice a week and drew into its ranks men from all professions and business walks of life. All of the men were earnest and felt that they were of some use to their country. It was not uncommon to hear of men of the 5th Battery drilling with "Boyce's Tigers" just for the additional instruction.

The Battery contributed largely to the general fund raised by the Vice-Commandant of the V.C.A. and also secured for themselves, through their own officers, greatly assisted by several of the men, rifles and other equipment. Through the use of the range in the Armory, target practice was carried on, and although many of the men had not been accustomed to rifle shooting, such was the training received that later a team was made up and entered in several important matches and acquitted themselves well.

Through the efforts of the ladies of Brooklyn, a sum of money was raised and presented to Captain Praeger. A Lewis Machine-Gun was purchased for the Battery and named the "Beecher" Gun.

With the ranks of the 5th Battery overflowing and more men coming in, the 11th Battery was started, Captain Praeger supervising and commanding both.

The Brooklyn Batteries acted as escort to Lieutenant White and his famous band of Canadian Kilties (Ladies from Hell) on their visit to the Borough.

During August, 1917, both Batteries were ordered to entrain for City Island Camp, but hardly had the orders been issued when the general order for assembly at the 71st Regiment Armory was received, and the orders for the first call to duty to relieve the Federalized State forces on the water supply of the City were read.

A number of the men of the 5th and 11th volunteered at once, and were ordered on duty. Captain Praeger reported later at Headquarters that both his Batteries would go as a unit as soon as there was need for them, and received orders to divide the command in two details, one to proceed to Tuckahoe, to relieve Captain Gage, and the other to proceed to Yonkers to relieve Lieutenant Lane.

The stories of the duty on the Aqueduct have oft been told and once a year the men gather together at a dinner in Brooklyn and rehearse and exchange the experiences which they would not have missed for anything.

The list of the men of the 5th and 11th, who saw service on the Aqueduct, is set forth more fully elsewhere in this volume.

Upon the return from the service on the Aqueduct the Brooklyn Batteries resumed drill at the 23rd Armory. The State had formed the New York Guard and Major James Robb, now Brigadier-General, was in command of the 23rd Infantry, N. Y. Guard. Among the "Now it can be told" stories perhaps this one, so little known at the time, would be of interest to the V.C.A.

A representative from the Adjutant General's office, State of New York, visited

Digitized by Google

Major Robb's quarters on one of our drill nights. The Adjutant General's representative told him that the V.C.A. was to be disbanded as a unit. Major Robb invited him out on the gallery of the hall where the men of the Batteries were drilling, and said: "Do you think it fair to the State of New York and to the Borough of Brooklyn to disband a body of men like those you see before you?", at the same time expressing a desire for permission to offer to take them into the 23rd. The Adjutant General's representative had to admit that the proposed order would be a mistake, and soon after an order was issued changing the contemplated order of disbandment to one in which the members of the V.C.A. were given an option either to join the New York Guard in any regiment they desired, or remain in the V.C.A.

In October, 1917, Colonel Delafield, after witnessing the Brooklyn Batteries at drill, had them assembled in one of the rooms, and told them of the march of the New York Batteries of the V.C.A. from the 71st Regiment Armory to that of the 9th C.D.C.; that he had reserved rooms in their new Armory for the Brooklyn Batteries and hoped they would join his new Command. He then withdrew from the room, and Captain Praeger made a short speech, stating the matter was up to the men, that he and Lieut. Sayers agreed to go wherever the men voted to go. Captain Praeger and Lieutenant Sayers then joined Colonel Delafield outside.

The discussion in the room was short and all one way. During the few months the men, coming into military life from civil life, and a good percentage of them over the second draft age, and all with family or business ties that had kept them out of the United States Service, had learned what an excellent soldier and man of upright character Captain Praeger was, and they unanimously voted to ask him to take them into the 23rd.

The two Batteries, 5th and 11th, V.C.A., were assimilated into three Companies of the 23rd Regiment, Infantry, N.Y.G., Lieut. Sayers was commissioned Captain and assigned to command the Machine Gun Company; Sergeant Candee and Sergeant Wilks, after passing the usual examinations and grades, commanding Companies K and I, respectively. Captain Praeger followed Major Robb through his promotions and was commissioned Colonel of the 23rd Infantry, N.Y.G. In appointing his staff and selecting officers for other Companies, he drew from the ranks of the old Brooklyn Batteries, and the following were duly commissioned on his staff:

Sergeant Wynkoop.
Dr. Keyes
Dr. O'Brien.

in addition to eighteen other gentlemen who were commissioned and assigned to the various Companies of the 23rd.

In January, 1918, the men of the Brooklyn Batteries felt further complimented when they heard that Sergt.-Major, now Captain "Billy" Sayers, had been appointed on the staff of the Governor of the State of New York.

Digitized by Google

In looking back now we may feel that it was all play and far from the grimness of war, but who is there that would want to lose any of the friendships made, or the experiences passed through?

The history of the connection of the Artillery Service Detachment, V.C.A., S.N.Y., with the 23rd Regiment, began with the consent of Colonel Frank S. Norton to the use of the drill floor of the 23rd Regiment Armory and the assignment of a room to the 5th Battery for Company quarters. This permission was granted in May, 1917.

As told in the historical sketch of the 5th and 11th Batteries, these batteries almost unanimously voted to join the 23rd Infantry, N.Y.G., which regiment had been authorized by G.O., A.G.O., Oct. 30, 1917. Companies I and K and M. G. Co., all members of the V.C.A., were mustered in the N.Y.G. Shortly after Lieutenant Sayers was placed in command of the M.G. Co. as Captain, and Lieutenants Wilks and Candee, as Lieutenants commanding Companies I and K, respectively.

Captain Praeger was commissioned Lieutenant-Colonel of the 23rd Infantry on November 9, 1917. Colonel James Robb was in command of the Regiment at this time. It is a pleasure in this connection to recall to all members what a consistent and helpful friend Colonel Robb, now Brigadier-General, was to the 5th and 11th Batteries, and the then Commanding Officer.

Under General Orders of Nov. 19, 1917, Companies I and K were assigned to the 3rd Battalion under Major Ethelbert Green, a member of the 23rd N.G., N.Y., for many years. This assignment proved most pleasant and also satisfactory from a military standpoint.

In December, 1917, Colonel Robb was made Brigadier-General and placed in command of the 2nd Brigade, N.Y.G. Lieutenant Colonel Praeger was commissioned Colonel on December 22, 1917.

The Regiment prospered from its reorganization both in numbers and efficiency. In February, 1918, the strength of the then V.C.A. units were as follows:

M.G. Co.	45
I	63
K	35
and of the Regt.....	773

In May, 1919, increased to

M.G. Co.	65
I	75
K	75
and of the Regt.....	1120

Digitized by Google

The following members of the Artillery Service detachment, V.C.A., became Commissioned Officers in the 23rd Infantry, N.Y.G.:

Bedford, Henry E.
Campbell, Wm. M.
Candee, Willard C.*
Chittenden, J. Brace
Conover, Henry S.
Disbrow, Joseph P.
France, Melville J.
Hadden, Howard S.
Keyes, James J., M.D.
Mickelborough, Geo. W.*
Nixon, John M.
O'Brien, Henry L., D.D.S.*
Purdy, James G.
Praeger, Louis J.*
Quinn, Stanley J.
Sayers, Wm. L.
Taft, Raymond L.*
Terhune, H. K.
Wilks, W. D.
Wray, John.
Wynkoop, Hubert S.*

*Previously served in old 23rd Regt., N. G. N Y.

APPENDIX

LIST of officers and men who served in the Field and Staff and in the Provisional Batteries, VETERAN CORPS OF ARTILLERY, S.N.Y., between April 6 and October 8, 1917, with a note of their subsequent service in the New York Guard and in the Army and Navy of the United States.

Digitized by Google

This list has been compiled from the records made during the term of service of the Provisional Batteries. There were a number of men who had been elected to membership by the Council of Administration but who had failed to qualify by taking and filing the oath required. Where evidence shows this to have been an inadvertence, and an intention to serve was shown by actual service later, the name has been placed in the list.

Circulars have been addressed to all officers and men. Many were returned by the Post Office; several postals were received unsigned. These facts may explain deficiencies in the list. Great effort has been expended to make the list accurate and to give each man credit for his service.

In the answers to circulars, several have shown service in the New York Guard without indicating the organization. This service is shown by the letters "N. Y. G."

The following abbreviations have been used:

Col.	Colonel
Lt.-Col.	Lieutenant-Colonel
Maj.	Major
Capt.	Captain
Lt.	Lieutenant
Sgt.-Maj.	Sergeant-Major
Sgt.	Sergeant
Corp.	Corporal
Pvt.	Private
Bvt.	Brevet
v.	Vide (see)

Regiments in the New York Guard are designated as follows:

1st F. A.	First Field Artillery
7th Infy.	Seventh Infantry
23rd Infy.	Twenty-third Infantry
8th C. A. C.	Eighth Coast Artillery Corps
1st Cav.	First Cavalry
1st Prov.	First Provisional Regiment

Digitized by Google

VETERAN CORPS OF ARTILLERY
STATE OF NEW YORK

FIELD AND STAFF

	New York Guard	National Forces
Col. Asa Bird Gardiner (dec'd) Commandant	Bvt. Maj. General N.G.N.Y. Civil War Services	Lieut. Col., retired, U.S.A.
Lieut. Col. John Ross Delafield, Vice-Commandant	Col. 9th C.A.C. Rendered Services to the 1st Prov.	Maj., Lieut. Col., Col., Ord., U.S.A., Chairman, Board of Contract Adjustment, War Dept.; D.S.M., U.S.; C.S.C., N. Y. Col., O.O.R.C.
Maj. Charles Elliot Warren, Brigade-Major		Maj., Lieut. Col., Ord., U.S.A. C.S.C., N. Y. Col., O.O.R.C.
Capt. Paul Gibert Thebaud, Ordnance Officer	Capt., I. S. A. P. 9th C.A.C. Rendered services to the 1st Prov.	
Capt. Howard Thayer Kingsbury	Capt. (Supply Officer) 9th C.A.C. Maj., Lieut. Col. J.A.G.	
Capt. Edmund Banks Smith, Chaplain		Chaplain at Governors Island
Capt. Henry W. Hodge (dec'd)		Maj., Lieut. Col., Col., Gen. Pershing's Staff, A.E.F.
Capt. Robert H. Wilder,	Member Board to study Anti-Aircraft defense over seas Bvt. Maj. N.Y.G.-Capt. 9th C.A.C.; Acting Artillery Engineer 9th. C.D.C.	

Digitized by Google

HEADQUARTERS COMPANY

Capt. Chandler Smith, Adjutant	Rendered services to the 1st Prov.	Capt. Air Services S.C., U.S.A. C. O. 262nd Aero Squad, Wing Commander, Summary Court Officer, Survey Officer, C. O. Co. B., S. A. T.C., Valparaiso Univ. Capt. Air Service, O.R.C. U.S.A.
Bn. Sgt. Maj. Lloyd R. Stark,	1st Prov.	1st Lieut. Infy., U.S.A.
Color Sgt. George P. Montgomery		1st Lieut. U.S.A., 77th Div.
Color Sgt Charles A. Van Rensselaer	1st Prov.	
Color Sgt. George H. Shrady	Color Sgt. 9th C.A.C.	
Corps Sup. Sgt. Andrew Parker Nevin	Sgt. 9th C.A.C.	Adviser Draft Board. Served with Friends of French Wounded over seas.
Mess Sgt. John G. Dater		
Sgt. Alexander R. Thompson (Deceased)	Sgt., 2nd Lieut., Regt'l Historian 9th C.A.C.-Rendered services to 1st Prov.	Legal Adviser, Draft Board.
Corp. Paul Tillinghast	Corp., Sgt., Bn. Sgt. Maj., Regt'l Sgt. Maj., 2nd Lieut. 1st Lieut., 9th C.A.C., Capt., 9th C.D.C., N.G.N.Y.	
Pvt. Gordon, John		1st Lieut. Aviation, U.S.A.
Pvt. Sherman, P. Tecumseh	Pvt. 9th C.A.C.	

HEADQUARTERS COMPANY—FIELD MUSIC

Drum Maj. James A. Hogan		
Band Sgt. Edwin N. Clapp		
Band Sgt. Robert J. Thompson	Sgt. 71st Infy. 1st Prov.	
Band Corp. John Clapp		
Musician, Edward M. Dunham	N.Y.G.	U.S.R.R., Adm.
Musician, Philip H. Eckardt		
Musician, Victor Dorsh		
Musician, John Gillespie		
Musician, William Pritchett		
Musician, John Auer		

Digitized by Google

SUPPLY COMPANY

Capt. Benjamin Rush Lummis, Commissary	Rendered services to the 1st Prov.	
Capt. Norman Bentley Gardiner, Quartermaster		
1st Sgt. Mortimer Delano (deceased)		
Corps Sup. Sgt. H. Schieffelin Sayers		
Corps Sup. Sgt. William R. Corwine		
Corps Sup. Sgt. Alexander H. Spencer		Chairman, Draft Board.
Sgt. of Artificers Thomas Riley Murray	1st Prov.	Service in Civil War
Mess Sgt. Raymond Newton Hyde	1st Prov. Regt. Sup. Sgt., 1st Sgt., 9th C.A.C.; 2nd Lieut., 9th C.D.C.	
Pvt. Candler, Duncan	Rendered services to the 1st Prov.	
Pvt. McCahill, Thomas J.		
Pvt. Marvin, Charles I.		

MEDICAL DEPARTMENT

Capt. Jerome Kingsbury, Surgeon	1st Prov.-Capt. 9th C.A.C.	Capt., M.C.-U.S.A.
1st Lieut. Charles Alexander Clinton, Asst. Surgeon	1st Prov.-Maj. M. C. 9th C.A.C.-C. O. Field Hosp. 2-1st Prov.	
1st Lieut. Stafford B. Smith (deceased), Asst. Surgeon	Capt. M. C.-9th C.A.C.	Capt., M.C., U.S.A.
Sgt. Theodore R. Pell	1st Prov.	

Digitized by Google

FIRST BATTALION

Maj. Edward Coleman Delafield	Maj., Lieut. Col. 9th C.A.C.-Rendered services to 1st Prov.	
Capt. George W. Burleigh, Bn. Adj.	Capt., Lieut.-Col., Col. 9th C.A.C.-Lieut. Col. I. G. D. Div. Staff N. Y. G.-Lieut. Col. J.A.G. Div. Staff 27th Div.-Rendered services to 1st Prov.	Cross of Legion of Honor—France, Comm. Crown of Italy; C.S.C., N.Y. Col., J.A.G. Dept., O.R.C.

FIRST BATTERY

Capt. Arthur T. Chester		Lieut. Comdr. U.S.N.R.F.
Capt. Henry Sillcocks	1st Prov. Capt. 9th C.A.C.	
1st Lieut. Clarence H. Eagle	Capt., Maj., 7th Infy.; Maj., Home Defense.	
1st Lieut. Alfred I. Scott	1st Prov. 1st Lieut.-Capt. 9th C.A.C.	
2nd Lieut. Ethelbert I. Low	1st Prov. 2nd Lieut.-1st Lieut., Capt. 9th C.A.C.	Pvt. F. A. Camp Zachary Taylor, R.O.T.C., Capt., F.A., U.S.R.C.
Sup. Sgt. Norman F. Cushman	1st Prov. Pvt., Corp., Sgt. 69th Infy.	
Sgt. Raymond F. Barnes	1st Prov.	Served Q.M.D., U.S.A., Civilian Capacity—Rec'd thanks Brig. Gen. Littell.
Sgt. Francis Johnstone Hopson	1st Prov. Sgt. 9th C.A.C. 2nd Lieut., 1st Lieut., Capt. 1st F. A.	
Sgt. Harvey Klapp Lines	1st Prov. 1st Lieut., Bn. Adjt. 9th C.A.C.	
Sgt. Walter L. Richard	1st Prov. Sgt., 2nd Lieut. 9th C.A.C.	
Sgt. Louis Watjen	1st Prov. Sgt., 1st Sgt., 2nd Lieut., 1st Lieut., Capt., Adjt. 9th C.A.C.	
Corp. John W. F. Bennett		Maj. Const. Div., Q.M.C., U.S.A.
Corp. Alfred J. Chatillon	1st Prov. Corp. 9th C.A.C.	Lieut. Chemical Warfare Service, U.S.A.

Digitized by Google

Corp. Howard K Coolidge	1st Prov. 1st Sgt., 1st Lieut., Capt. 9th C.A.C.	Commissioned 1st Lieut. A.G.C. Not accepted armistice being signed.
Corp William C. Dornin	1st Prov. Sgt. 9th C.A.C.	
Corp. Reginald C. Knickerbocker	1st Prov. Sgt., Sup. Sgt., 1st Sgt., 2nd Lieut. 9th C.A.C.-Capt. 1st F. A.-Capt. 1st M. G. Bn.	
Corp. L. Alexander Mack	Sgt. Mess Sgt. 9th C.A.C.	
Corp. Archibald Douglas	1st Prov.	
Corp. Harold W. Slauson		
Pvt. Adams, Dunbar W.	1st Prov.	Sgt., 61st Pioneer Infy., R.O. T.S., Camp Gordon.
Pvt. Aubeck, Peter	9th C.A.C.	
Pvt. Baldwin, L. P.	1st Prov.	
Pvt. Barnewall, A. V. R.		Capt., Q.M.C., U.S.A.
Pvt. Booth, Walter Cowles		
Pvt. Brugler, Rev'd Charles E.	1st Prov. 9th C.A.C.	
Pvt. Case, Charles E.	1st Prov. 9th C.A.C.	
Pvt. Cavanaugh, Clarence F.	1st Prov. 9th C.A.C.-1st Lieut. 1st F.A.	
Pvt. Chapin, Robert S.	1st Prov. 9th C.A.C.	
Pvt. Claiborne, Robert W.		U.S.N.
Pvt. Class, John L.		Sgt. Ambulance Co., No. 34.
Pvt. Coryell, Charles Mayer	1st Prov. Corp. 9th C.A.C.	
Pvt. Darlington, Clinton P.		Troop A, Squad A, 1st Lieut., Capt., S. C. Riding Instruction, Camp Greenleaf, Signal Officer, Ft. Oglethorpe.
Pvt. Darte, George L.	1st Prov. 9th C.A.C.	Capt. Military Intelligence Div., G.S.C., Capt., O.R.C.
Pvt. Davis, William H.	9th C.A.C.	Ordnance Member, Legal Adviser, Claims Board War Dept.
Pvt. Dean, Philip S.	1st Prov.	
Pvt. de Forest, Louis E.		Capt., O.M.C., 87th Div.
Pvt. Dickinson, W.V.	1st Prov.	
Pvt. Dupignac, Dudley	1st Prov. N.Y.G.	
Pvt. Durand, John S.	1st Prov. 9th C.A.C.	

Digitized by Google

Pvt. Dwight, Henry R.	1st Prov. 9th C.A.C.	
Pvt. Easton, Gerald		U.S.N.
Pvt. Emmet, Richard S.	1st Prov. 9th C.A.C.	
Pvt. Fleming, William J.	1st Prov. 9th C.A.C.	
Pvt. Fish, Rutgers		Squad A, 1st Class Pvt., 105th M.G. Bn.
Pvt. Gallaher, H. Palmer	1st Prov. Corp., Sgt., Bn. Sgt. Maj., 1st Lieut., Bn. Adjt., Capt., Adjt., 9th C.A.C.	
Pvt. Gardiner, Bentley	9th C.A.C.	
Pvt. Gould, Ormond V.	1st Prov. 9th C.A.C.	Seaman, Quartermaster, Ensign, U.S.N.R.F.
Pvt. Greenfield, Sidney	1st Prov. 9th C.A.C.	
Pvt. Harrold, Bishop S.		Gas Defense Services, U.S.A., State Dept. Service.
Pvt. Holmes, Lester A.	Sgt. Squad. A.	
Pvt. Holzworth. John M.		2nd Lieut., F.A., A.E.F.
Pvt. Howard, George R.		1st Lieut., Capt., Ord., U.S.A.,
Pvt. Huntting. Gilbert N.	1st Prov.	
Pvt. Irwin, John V.		
Pvt. Jones, Samuel B.		
Pvt. Kimball, Ingalls	9th C.A.C.	
Pvt. Kissam. Coleman E.	1st Prov. Sgt., Sup. Sgt. 9th C.A.C.	
Pvt. Lane, Alfred I.	1st Prov. Sgt., 1st Sgt., 1st Lieut. 9th C.A.C.	
Pvt. Lewis, Charles A.	1st Prov. 9th C.A.C.	U.S.N.R.F.
Pvt. Lorentzen. Julius C., Jr.	Bn. Sup. Sgt., 1st Lieut. 9th C.A.C.	
Pvt. Ludwig, Alfred		
Pvt. Mackenzie, Herbert C.	1st Prov. 9th C.A.C.	
Pvt. Mann, Walter L.	1st Prov. 9th C.A.C.	
Pvt. Manning, Clarence A.	1st Prov. 9th C.A.C.	42nd Infy., U.S.A., Div. of Military Intelligence, Sgt. Corps of Intelligence Police.
Pvt. Mapes, S. Herbert		Capt. Air Service, C. O. Squad's 380, 66, 132, Adj., Kelly Field, San Antonio, Texas.

Digitized by Google

Pvt. Mason, John F.	1st Prov.	
Pvt. Mattox, E. Tilden	1st Prov. 9th C.A.C.	
Pvt. Montgomery, James Mortimer		
Pvt. Montgomery, William J.	1st Prov.	
Pvt. Neary, Edward J.	1st Prov.	Lieut. (J.G.) U.S.N.R.F.
Pvt. Olyphant, Donald		2nd Lieut. Air Service, U.S.A.
Pvt. Oswald, John Clyde	1st Prov. Corp., Sgt. 9th C.A.C.	
Pvt. Parker, Morris K.		Squad A, N.G.N.Y.
Pvt. Parsons, Frederic T.	1st Prov. Corp., Sgt. 9th C.A.C.	Capt., Ord., U.S.A.
Pvt. Pell, S. H. P.		S.S.N. 696, U.S.A.A.S., Oct. 5-17, June 13-19. Before Oct. 5 in Ambulance Service French Army, Croix de Guerre (Army Corps citation.)
Pvt. Perry, Egbert B.	9th C.A.C.	
Pvt. Pierrepont, Robert L.	1st Prov. Corp., Sgt. 9th C.A.C.	
Pvt. Reed, Dayton F.	1st Prov. 9th C.A.C.	
Pvt. Rhinelander, T. J. Oakley	1st Prov. Color Sgt., 2nd Lieut. 9th C.A.C. Capt., Maj., 9th C.D.C.	
Pvt. Richardson, C. Tiffany	9th C.A.C.	
Pvt. Root, Louis D.	1st Prov. 9th C.A.C.	Govt. Service, Washington, D. C.
Pvt. Sampson, Walter C.	1st Prov. Bugler 9th C.A.C.	
Pvt. Schwab, Gustav	1st Prov. Corp., Sgt., Mess Sgt., 2nd Lieut. 9th C.A.C.	
Pvt. Sewall, Frederick B.	1st Prov. N.Y.G.	
Pvt. Slauson, Kinsley W.		
Pvt. Spalding, H. Boardman	1st Prov. Corp., Sgt., 1st Sgt. 9th C.A.C.	
Pvt. Stokes, J. G. Phelps	Sgt., 1st Sgt., 2nd Lieut., 1st Lieut. 9th C.A.C. Capt. Adjt. 9th C.D.C.-Rendered services to 1st Prov.	
Pvt. Story, Allen L.	9th C.A.C.	1st Lieut. Ord., U.S.A.

Digitized by Google

Pvt. Tatham, Edwin	1st Prov. Corp., Sgt. 9th C.A.C.	
Pvt. Taylor, John		1st Lieut. Aviation, A.E.F.
Pvt. Terhune, Ten Broeck Munroe	1st Prov.	Capt., Ord., U.S.A.
Pvt. Thacher, Lothrop	1st Prov. 9th C.A.C.	
Pvt. Vibbert, Aubrey D. (deceased)	Corp., Sgt. 9th C.A.C.	
Pvt. Wade, John O.	1st Prov.	
Pvt. Ward, Chester D.		Pvt. to 1st Lieut., Remount Service, Field Remount, Squad 326, A.E.F.
Pvt. Wardrop, James J.	1st Prov.	
Pvt. Wainwright, William P.	1st Prov. 9th C.A.C.	
Pvt. Wemple, William L.	1st Prov.	Chairman, Draft Board.
Pvt. Westervelt, Leonidas	1st Prov.	
Pvt. Wood, Joseph LuVerne	1st Prov.	
Pvt. Yalden, Percy A.	1st Prov. Sup. Sgt., M.G. Co., 9th C.A.C.	
Pvt. Zabriskie, George A.	1st Prov.	Chairman, Sugar Board.

THIRD BATTERY

Capt. Orrin L. Brodie	1st Prov. 9th C.A.C.	
1st Lieut. George S. Richards, Jr.	1st Prov. 1st Lieut. 9th C.A.C.	
Sgt. Arthur Oakley Ford	1st Prov. 1st Sgt., 1st Lieut. Capt. 9th C.A.C.	
Sgt. Thomas P. Cummings	1st Prov.	
Sgt. Oscar W. G. Ericson	1st Prov. Sgt., 1st Sgt., 2nd Lieut., 1st Lieut., Capt. 9th C.A.C., Capt., 9th C.D.C., N.G.N.Y.	
Sgt. Edmund L. Judson, Jr.	Sgt., 2nd Lieut. 9th C.A.C.	2nd Lieut., Motor Transport Reserve.
Sgt. Clarence Luce, Jr.	1st Prov. Sgt. 9th C.A.C.	
Sgt. Alan B. Thomas		Corp., 21st Engineers, U.S.A., A.E.F.
Corp. Roland Gerry Brown	1st Prov.	
Corp. Leon V. Duchemin		
Corp. John B. Eccleston, Jr.		Co. C, 105th M. G. Bn., 27th Div.

Digitized by Google

Corp. Edward L. Godfrey	1st Prov. Corp., Sgt. 9th C.A.C.	
Corp. John A. Guion		
Corp. George Laing, Jr.	1st Prov. Corp. 9th C.A.C.	2nd Lieut., C.O.C., 326th Bn., U. S. Tank Corps.
Corp. John Leroy Mann		
Corp. Arthur H. Pogson	1st Prov. Corp., Regt'l Sgt. Maj. 9th C.A.C.	
Corp. George S. Scofield	1st Prov. Corp., Sgt. 9th C.A.C.	
Corp. Henry G. Steinmeyer	1st Prov. Corp., Sgt., 1st Sgt., 1st Lieut., 9th C.A.C.	
Corp. Herbert S. Tenney	1st Prov.	
Corp. Arthur G. Thompson	1st Prov.-9th C.A.C.	
Corp. Gerard Van der Zee	1st Prov. Corp. Mess Sgt. 9th C.A.C.	
Corp. J. Russell White	1st Prov. Corp. Sgt. 9th C.A.C.	Sgt. 1st Class, U.S.A., Chemical Warfare Service.
Pvt. Andreson, Elliot G.	9th C.A.C.	
Pvt. Baeszler, William		Pvt., Co. I, 2nd Pioneer Infy., U.S.A.
Pvt. Baldwin, Ernest L.	1st Prov. 9th C.A.C.	
Pvt. Bale, William W.	1st Prov.	
Pvt. Barker, Confred W.	1st Prov. 9th C.A.C.	
Pvt. Barker, Frederick W.	9th C.A.C.	
Pvt. Batz, George W.	1st Prov.	
Pvt. Bayne, Howard R.	1st Prov. 9th C.A.C.	Board of Contract Adjustment, War Dept.
Pvt. Bernasconi, Adolph		
Pvt. Bohn, Charles A.	1st Prov.	
Pvt. Bradford, William J.		
Pvt. Bramall, Rowland		
Pvt. Bugbird, Herbert C.	1st Prov. 9th C.A.C.	
Pvt. Butcher, Walter F.	1st Prov. Corp. 9th C.A.C.	
Pvt. Clapp, Faber F.	1st Prov. Co. Clk. 3rd Co. 9th C.A.C.	Co. I, 2nd Pioneer Infy., A. E. F., Special Service, Camp Pantanezan, France.
Pvt. Clarke, John D.		
Pvt. Clauson, Andrew G., Jr.		Naval Militia, N.Y.
Pvt. Coffenberg, Peter		
Pvt. Creager, R. C.		
Pvt. Crystal, Francis J.		
Pvt. Curtis, John W.	1st Prov.	
Pvt. Dix, Samuel M.		
Pvt. Dougherty, Henry H.	1st Prov. 9th C.A.C.	
Pvt. Dupont, Charles P.	9th C.A.C.	
Pvt. Dusold, Charles	9th C.A.C.	
Pvt. Eaton, John P.	9th C.A.C.	
Pvt. Eglington, A. Lincoln		
Pvt. Elmore, J. B.		
Pvt. Evans, Walter L.	1st Prov.	
Pvt. Eyre, Beverly Montague	1st Prov.	

Digitized by Google

Pvt. Eyre, Henry N.	1st Prov.	
Pvt. Farrar, Percy S.		
Pvt. Fetherston, William T.	1st Prov.	
Pvt. Fredericks, Walter		
Pvt. Funk, Charles E.	1st Prov. Corp., Sgt. 9th C.A.C.	
Pvt. Gardner, Robert W.	1st Prov. 9th C.A.C.	
Pvt. Goldsborough, Robert L.	1st Prov.	
Pvt. Guilbert, Georges	Corp. 9th C.A.C.	
Pvt. Guidin, Louis A.		
Pvt. Harding, Edward	1st Prov.	
Pvt. Harding, John A.	1st Prov.	
Pvt. Harson, Harry		
Pvt. Hartung, Louis W.	1st Prov.	
Pvt. Haskins, Bradley		
Pvt. Hine, Charles Gilbert		
Pvt. Jackson, Edward W.	1st Prov. 9th C.A.C.	
Pvt. Jackson, William H.		
Pvt. Jensen, Oswald	1st Prov.	
Pvt. Jones, H. Miller		9th Coast Arty, U.S.A.
Pvt. Kaufmann, Louis W.	1st Prov.	
Pvt. Kane, Michael J.	1st Prov.	
Pvt. Kimmerer, George F.		Troop A, 1st Cav., N.Y.N.Y.
Pvt. King, Eric T.		Capt., Eng. Res., U.S.A., Cantonment D. W. Maj. Construction Div., U.S.A.
Pvt. Lejeune, Ernest	1st Prov.	
Pvt. Lunn, Morris A.		
Pvt. McCleary, William	1st Prov. Corp., Sgt., Sup. Sgt., 1st Sgt. 9th C.A.C.	
Pvt. McMaster, William S.	1st Prov. 9th C.A.C.	Corp., Co. I, 1st Pioneer Infy, U.S.A.
Pvt. Magruder, Herbert T.	1st Prov.	Appointed to C.O.T.S., Camp Zachary Taylor.
Pvt. Magruder, Robert, Jr.	1st Prov. Corp. 9th C.A.C.	C.O.T.S., Camp Lee, Va.
Pvt. Mecke, Henry E.	1st Prov. Corp. 9th C.A.C.	
Pvt. Medway, Albert E.	1st Prov. 9th C.A.C.	
Pvt. Mooney, W. H.		
Pvt. Nellis, Ray A.	Ord. Sgt. 9th C.A.C.	
Pvt. Nelson, Alexander	1st Prov.	
Pvt. Nicol, Norman	1st Prov.	Pvt. 1st Cl. Med. Corp.
Pvt. Noble, Charles J.		
Pvt. Origet, Charles		
Pvt. Origet, Maurice		
Pvt. Palmele, Edward A.		Pvt., 3rd Class, Electrician, Radio, U.S.N.R.
Pvt. Pearson, Hugh W.	9th C.A.C.	
Pvt. Peteler, E. W.		
Pvt. Rabey, Harry	1st Prov.	
Pvt. Randall, Kennedy		
Pvt. Reardon, Michael F.		
Pvt. Rice, Philip	1st Prov. 9th C.A.C.	
Pvt. Richards, George E.	1st Prov. Corp. 9th C.A.C.	

Digitized by Google

Pvt. Roberts, Julian G.	1st Prov. 9th C.A.C.	Red Cross Service Overseas.
Pvt. Rogers, William W.		
Pvt. Saffer, Frank P.		
Pvt. Scheffer, Eugene W.		
Pvt. Schroeder, William O.	1st Prov. Corp. 9th C.A.C.	
Pvt. Schutzendorf, Chas. W.		
Pvt. Seaman, William I.	1st Prov. Corp. 9th C.A.C.	
Pvt. Siegel, Morris E.	1st Prov. 9th C.A.C.	
Pvt. Tefft, Charles Eugene	1st Prov. 9th C.A.C.	
Pvt. Theobald, Samuel, Jr.	1st Prov. 9th C.A.C.	
Pvt. Thompson, James H.		
Pvt. Thorne, Charles W.	1st Prov. Corp. 9th C.A.C.	
Pvt. Tisnee, Edmond		
Pvt. Tompkins, Willard J.	1st Prov.	Capt. Air Service, U.S.A., A.E.F.
Pvt. Townsend, Frederick C.		
Pvt. Trussell, Arthur Jewett	1st Prov. 9th C.A.C.	
Pvt. Turner, John Charles	1st Prov.	
Pvt. Venn, Archibald C. R.	1st Prov.	
Pvt. Von Dannenberg, Otto C.		
Pvt. Voss, August		
Pvt. Walker, H. E., Jr.		
Pvt. Wilson, Thomas S.	1st Prov. Capt. 9th C.A.C.	
Pvt. Zorn, Adolph		

FOURTH BATTERY

Capt. Thatcher T. P. Luquer	C.S.C., N.Y.	Col., 306th Engineers, U.S.A., A.E.F.
Capt. John Moore Perry	1st Prov. Capt. 9th C.A.C. Capt., Maj., 9th C.D.C., N.G. N.Y.	1st Lieut. Ord., U.S.A.
1st Lieut. Louis Hays Dos Passos	1st Lieut., Bn. Adjt., Capt., Sup. Off. 9th C.A.C.; Capt. Sup. Off., 9th C.D.C	
2nd Lieut. Electus T. Backus	1st Prov.	
1st Sgt. Albert H. Hastorf, Jr.,	1st Prov. 1st Sgt. 9th C.A.C.	Capt., Air Service, U.S.A.
Sup. Sgt. Arista M. Ferguson	1st Prov.	
Sgt. Henry D. Brandyce	1st Prov. Sgt., Bn. Sgt. Maj., 1st Lieut., Asst. I. S. A. P. 9th C.A.C.-Capt. I. S. A. P. 8th C. A. C.	
Sgt. Ferdinand S. Crosley	1st Prov. Sgt., Mess Sgt., 1st Sgt. 9th C.A.C.	
Sgt. Safford A. Crummey	1st Prov. Sgt. Mess Sgt., Sup. Sgt. 9th C.A.C.	
Sgt. Willoughby J. Kingsbury	1st Prov. 1st Sgt., 1st Lieut., Capt. 9th C.A.C.	
Sgt. William E. Lowther	1st Prov. Sgt., 2nd Lieut., 1st Lieut. 9th C.A.C.	

Digitized by Google

Sgt. Lawrence G. Meads		Capt., Co. D, 310th Infy, N.A., A.E.F., St. Mihiel, Argonne, Wounded, Com. Sch. for Candidates for West Point in France.
Sgt. James H. Pinckney	1st Prov. Sgt., Bn. Sgt. Maj. 9th C.A.C. Pvt. K. Co. 7th Infy.	
Sgt. T. O'C. Sloane, Jr.	1st Prov. Sgt., 1st Sgt., Bn. Sgt. Maj., 2nd Lieut. 9th C.A.C.-Capt. 9th C.D.C.	
Sgt. Frederick E. Underhill		
Corp. Gabr. F. Cazell	1st Prov.	
Corp. William F. Howard	1st Prov. Sgt., Sup. Sgt., 2nd Lieut., 1st-Lieut. 9th C.A.C.	
Corp. George R. Hotaling	1st Prov. Corp. 9th C.A.C.	F.A.T.C., Sept.-Dec., '18.
Corp. Philip de St. Erne		
Pvt. Alford, A. K.	1st Prov.	
Pvt. Allien, Frederick	9th C.A.C.	
Pvt. Anderson, P. Lewis	1st Prov.	
Pvt. Ayer, Dr. James C.	1st Prov. Corp. 9th C.A.C. Capt., M.C., 9th C.D.C., N G.N.Y.	
Pvt. Baukhage, Hilmar R.	1st Prov. 9th C.A.C.	54th Regt., U. S. Coast Art'y, A.E.F., 2nd Lieut. U.S.F.A., attached G.H.Q., G2D.
Pvt. Beebe, Dr. S. P.	1st Prov. N.Y.G.	
Pvt. Bevin, Sydney	9th C.A.C.	Capt., Ord., U.S.A.
Pvt. Bowler, R. B.	1st Prov.	
Pvt. Bright, Robert A.	1st Prov. 9th C.A.C.	Govt. Inspector, Dept. of Justice, Du Pont Works, Pompton, N.J.
Pvt. Bromley, Chester M.		Squad A, N.G.N.Y.
Pvt. Brown. Russell	1st Prov.	
Pvt. Carnrick, Edgar M.		
Pvt. Cass, William B.	1st Prov. Corp., Sgt. 2nd Lieut. 9th C.A.C.	
Pvt. Champlin, John D., Jr.	1st Prov. Sgt., Bn. Sup. Sgt. 9th C.A.C.	
Pvt. Colton, Wendell P.	1st Prov. 9th C.A.C.	
Pvt. Colyer, Joseph Henry, Jr.		U. S. Service.
Pvt. Coulston, W. Ivan		
Pvt. Crofts, Frederick S.	1st Prov.	Military Relief, A.R.C.
Pvt. Crook, Edward K.	1st Prov. 9th C.A.C.	
Pvt. Doughty, John T. L.	1st Prov. Corp. Sgt., Bn. Sup. Sgt. 9th C.A.C.	
Pvt. Davenport, McHarg		Signal Corps, U.S.R.C.
Pvt. Dimond, John A.	1st Prov.	
Pvt. Drayton, H. C.		Interpreter in U.S.O.R.C.
Pvt. Ellard, Chas. H.	1st Prov. Sgt., 1st Sgt., 2nd Lieut., 1st Lieut. 9th C.A.C. Capt. 9th C.D.C.	
Pvt. Elliott, Robert B. W.	1st Prov. Corp., Sgt., Mess Sgt. 9th C.A.C.	

Digitized by Google

Pvt. Ford, George H.	1st Prov.	
Pvt. Gaillard, E. P.		
Pvt. Geer, Danforth, Jr.	1st Prov. Corp. 9th C.A.C.	2nd Lieut., U. S. A., Gen'l Staff Operative Div.
Pvt. Gehrung, A. E.		Ex. of L. L. organization.
Pvt. Gilroy, Vincent		
Pvt. Graham, George W.		
Pvt. Hill, Frank H. (dec'd)	1st Prov.	
Pvt. Hopping, Howard H.		Sgt., 302nd Sup. Train, 77th Div.
Pvt. Hopping, Spencer B.	1st Prov.	Pvt., Medical Corps, Camp Greenleaf.
Pvt. Howard, Harold	1st Prov. 9th C.A.C.	U. S. Transport Service.
Pvt. Kane, Edward A.	1st Prov.	
Pvt. Kene, Cornelius E.	1st Prov. 9th C.A.C.	Corps Hqs. Co., 43rd Brigade Coast Art'y, U.S.A.
Pvt. Kent, W. Irving	1st Prov. 9th C.A.C.	
Pvt. Larkin, John	1st Prov.	
Pvt. Léon, Albert J.	1st Prov. 9th C.A.C.	
Pvt. Lloyd, Francis G. (dec'd)	1st Prov. 1st Lieut., Capt. 9th C.A.C.	
Pvt. Lovell, Arthur		
Pvt. Martin, Alfred N.		
Pvt. Miller, Leverett S.	1st Prov. 9th C.A.C.	
Pvt. Minor, F. J.	1st Prov.	
Pvt. Mohr, Edward H.	1st Prov. 9th C.A.C.	
Pvt. Mohr, Louis F.	1st Prov. 9th C.A.C.	
Pvt. Montgomery, Leighton K.		Naval Reserve Hospital Unit.
Pvt. Moore, Charles H.	1st Prov.	
Pvt. Morgan, David Percy	1st Prov. 9th C.A.C.	
Pvt. Palmer, George T.		1st Lieut., San. Corps., U.S.A.
Pvt. Rees, Gomer H.	1st Prov.	
Pvt. Reeves, George H.	9th C.A.C.	Sgt., 17th Co., Infy. Training School, Camp Gordon, Ga.
Pvt. Sand, Henry A. L.	1st Prov. 9th C.A.C.	
Pvt. Schneider, George G.		
Pvt. Sherman, Charles A.	1st Prov. Corp., Sgt. 9th C.A.C.	
Pvt. Shope, Julian B.	1st Prov. 9th C.A.C.	
Pvt. Skerry, C. E.	1st Prov.	
Pvt. Smith, George C., Jr.	1st Prov. 9th C.A.C.	Corp., E.O.C., U.S.A.
Pvt. Smith, James H. A.	1st Prov.	
Pvt. Storm, Charles Milton		2nd Lieut., Military Intelligence and Motor Transport Corps, U.S.A.
Pvt. Strong, Thomas S.	1st Prov. 9th C.A.C.	
Pvt. Sweet, James A.	1st Prov. 9th C.A.C.	
Pvt. Taft, Theodore M.		
Pvt. Tannock, Thomas W.	1st Prov. Corp., Sgt. 9th C.A.C.	
Pvt. Vietor, Ernest G.	1st Prov. Corp. 9th C.A.C.	
Pvt. Ward, Charles Montague	Sgt. 9th C.A.C.	
Pvt. Wedge, Alfred H.	Corp. 9th C.A.C.	
Pvt. Wilson, Louis B.	1st Prov. Corp. 9th C.A.C.	

Digitized by Google

SECOND BATTALION

Maj. Francis Russell Stoddard, Jr.	Member of Bd. to Study Anti-aircraft overseas; Major 9th C.A.C.	Maj., Lieut. Col., Ord., U.S.A.
Capt. Frank E. Davidson	1st Prov. Capt., Adjt., 9th C.A.C.	

SECOND BATTERY

Capt. S. Edson Gage	1st Prov. Capt., Maj. 9th C.A.C.	Passed Ex. for U.S. Com. when Armistice was signed.
1st Lieut. Douglas Campbell	1st Prov. 1st Lieut. 9th C.A.C.	Abroad on Special Mission for Government.
2nd Lieut. John S. Rogers	1st Prov. 2nd Lieut., 9th C.A.C.	Abroad Y.M.C.A. at front in France, Capt. Intelligence Div., U.S.A.
1st Sgt. Francis I. Woodburn	1st Prov. 1st Sgt., 2nd Lieut. 9th C. A. C.	2nd Lieut. Infy., U.S.A.
Ord. Sgt. W. Douglas Owens	See 6th Battery	
Sup. Sgt. Walter C. Morrill	1st Prov.	
Sgt. Allen T. Hopping		
Sgt. Elmer R. Hollander	1st Prov. Sup. Sgt., 1st Lieut. 9th C. A. C.	
Sgt. Walter R. Jones	1st Prov.	Pvt., Ord., U.S.A. (Limited Service).
Sgt. Charnley L. Murray	1st Prov. Sgt., 2nd Lieut., 1st Lieut., Capt. 9th C.A.C.	
Sgt. Wilfred W. Mack	1st Prov. Mess Sgt., 1st Sgt., 2nd Lieut. 9th C.A.C.	Capt. Quartermasters Corps, U.S.A., Capt. U.S.R.
Corp. Andrew A. Bibby	1st Prov. Corp. 9th C.A.C.	Abroad Y.M.C.A.
Corp. Harvey E. Fisk, Jr.	1st Prov. Corp., Sgt. 9th C.A.C.	Chief Yeoman, Ensign, U.S.N., Pay Corps, U.S.S. Leviathan Asst. to Sup. Officer.
Corp George L. Genung		
Corp. Orlando P. Metcalf	1st Prov. Corp., Sgt. 9th C.A.C.-2nd Lieut. 12th Infy.	
Corp. Ernest M. Murray	9th C.A.C.	Ch. B. M., U.S.N.R., Civilian with 18th Eng. O.T.S., Pelham Bay.

Digitized by Google

Corp. D. Chester Noyes	1st Prov. Sgt., Mess Sgt. 9th C.A.C.	1st Lieut., Ord., U.S.A.
Corp. Lester H. Riley (dec'd)	1st Prov. Sgt., 1st Sgt. 9th C.A.C.	
Corp. Alfred P. W. Seaman		
Corp. Clifford V. Smith	1st Prov.	
Corp. Harold V. Story	1st Prov. Corp., Sgt. 9th C.A.C.	B. M., U.S.N.R.
Corp. Sterling P. Story	1st Prov. 9th C.A.C.	2nd Lieut. Motor Transport Corps, U.S.A.
Corp. Clarence H. Young	1st Prov.	1st Lieut. Air Service, 132nd Air Squad, C. O. 619th Aero Squad. Staff duty Washington, D.C.
Pvt. Andrew, Henry H.	1st Prov. 9th C.A.C.	Capt. A.R.C., France. Apptd. 1st Lieut. Q.M.C. too late to be commissioned.
Pvt. Badgley, Henry C.	1st Prov.	
Pvt. Badgley, W. W.	1st Prov.	
Pvt. Bailey, J. Trowbridge		
Pvt. Bawn, Thomas N.	1st Prov. 9th C.A.C.	
Pvt. Bellows, Charles	Special duty training Home Defense N. H. and Nurses & registrants in draft.	Prior to April, '17 had carried messages for British Army in France.
Pvt. Brannan, John W., M.D.	1st Prov. Capt. M. C. 9th C.A.C.	
Pvt. Burnam, Hubert K.	1st Prov. Corp. 9th C.A.C.	
Pvt. Butterfield, Leon C.	1st Prov.	
Pvt. Carnahan, Robert O.	1st Prov. 9th C.A.C.	
Pvt. Callingham, Bernard A.	1st Prov. Corp., Sgt., 2nd Lieut, 1st Lieut. 9th C.A.C.	
Pvt. Claussen, M. B.		
Pvt. Crouse, J. Aubrey		
Pvt. Davis, Pierpont	1st Prov. Corp. 9th C.A.C.	
Pvt. Delmonico, Charles C.		
Pvt. Delmonico, Gardiner C.	Corp., Sgt., Mess Sgt. 9th C.A.C.	
Pvt. Demorest, William J.		Metallographist U. S. Armory, Springfield, Mass.

Digitized by Google

Pvt. Dewey, Charles A.	1st Prov.	
Pvt. Douglas, William E.	1st Prov.	
Pvt. Dunning, Clarence	1st Prov.	
Pvt. Driggs, Lawrence L.		Visited front 1916 and 1918 as Aviation Expert for British Government.
Pvt. Dunsmore, John Ward	1st Prov. 9th C.A.C.	Maj., Field Director A.R.C., Ft. Ontario and Fox Hills, Staten Island.
Pvt. Dutton, Walter	1st Prov. Corp. 9th C.A.C.	
Pvt. Elder, Thomas L.	1st Prov. Corp., Sgt., Mess Sgt. 9th C.A.C.	
Pvt. Elliott, Robert H. E.	1st Prov. Corp., Sgt., Sup. Sgt. 9th C.A.C.	
Pvt. Ells, Alfred E.		Capt., Ord., U.S.A.
Pvt. Elmer, Charles H.		
Pvt. Evans, William E.	1st Prov. Corp., Sgt. 9th C.A.C.	
Pvt. Fairchild, Arthur E.		
Pvt. Fullmer, Curtis S.	1st Prov.	
Pvt. Greene, Nelson	9th C.A.C.	
Pvt. Greene, Phillipse E.		
Pvt. Hart, Charles S.	1st Prov.	
Pvt. Hedden, James S.	1st Prov. Sgt., Co. F., 23rd Infy.	
Pvt. Henry, Douglas	9th C.A.C.	
Pvt. Higgins, Alvin M.	1st Prov. Corp., Sgt., Sup. Sgt., 9th C.A.C.	
Pvt. Holmes, Artemas	1st Prov. N.Y.G.	1st Lieut., Capt., Ord., U.S.A., Maj., O.R.C.
Pvt. Hopkins, Sheldon	1st Prov.	
Pvt. Hovey, Robert LeC.	1st Prov. 9th C.A.C.	
Pvt. Kimball, Samuel E.		
Pvt. Kloeber, Charles E.		
Pvt. Knap, Edgar Day	1st Prov.	Capt. 23rd Engineers, U.S.R. C.O.-Wagon Co. 5, 23rd Engineers, 7 mos. with A.E.F. as Y.M.C.A. Sec.

Digitized by Google

Pvt. Knap, Joseph Day	N.Y.G.	
Pvt. Koop, Eugene J.	1st Prov. 9th C.A.C.	
Pvt. Laing, James S.	1st Prov. 9th C.A.C.	
Pvt. Latting, Emerson	1st Prov. 9th C.A.C.	War Trade Board, Washington, D.C.
Pvt. Lawrence, Herbert R.	1st Prov.	Maj. A.S.M., A.R.M.A., Air Service 12 months.
Pvt. Leeper, Dwight C.	1st Prov.	
Pvt. Lockwood, Herbert W.	1st Prov.	
Pvt. McIntosh, George M.		
Pvt. Mallaby, Oliver W. (deceased)	1st Prov. 9th C.A.C.	
Pvt Mapes, Augustus C.	9th C.A.C.	
Pvt. Mellor, Sigourney	1st Prov.	
Pvt. Moon, George T.	1st Prov. Corp., Sgt., Bn. Sgt. Maj. 9th C.A.C., Lieut., 1st Lieut., 1st F.A., Lieut. M.G. Bn., N.Y.G.	Was accepted to attend 2nd O.T.C., Camp Fremont, Cal.
Pvt. Morford, Thomas E.	1st Prov. Corp. 9th C.A.C.	
Pvt. Morgan, Edward A., Jr.		
Pvt. Morrill, Henry Heywood	1st Prov.	
Pvt. Mottelay, Paul S.	1st Prov. 9th C.A.C.	
Pvt. Mould, Raymond D.	1st Prov.	
Pvt. Nason, Henry E.	1st Prov. Sup. Sgt.-Regl. Sgt. Maj. 9th C.A.C.	
Pvt. Neumuller, Walter	Corp., Sgt., 2nd Lieut. 9th C.A.C.	
Pvt. Oakes, Charles		
Pvt. Pellet, William W.	1st Prov.	
Pvt. Physioc, Jos. A., Jr.		U.S.A., A.E.F.
Pvt. Powell, Stephen A., Jr.		
Pvt. Post, Henry M.	1st Prov. Drilled with 9th C.A.C.	Asst. Field Director Debarkation Hospital No. 5, A.R.C.
Pvt. Provost, David		
Pvt. Rogers, Hamilton	1st Prov.	
Pvt. Sackett, Henry W.		
Pvt. Schroeder, Hugh A.		

Digitized by Google

Pvt. Scott, Stanley De Forest		1st Sgt. Hospital Corps, U. S. A., 78th Div., A.E.F.
Pvt. Sedgwick, Robert	Sup. Sgt., 2nd Lieut. 9th C.A.C.	
Pvt. Semple, Oliver C.		
Pvt. Singer, Sidney K.	1st Prov. Sgt., 1st Sgt., 2nd Lieut. 23rd Infy-2nd Lieut., 22nd Eng.; 2nd Lieut., 1st M. G. Bn. N.Y.G.	
Pvt. Smith, A. Parker-	1st Prov. Mess Sgt. 9th C.A.C.	
Pvt. Stegmann, George H.	1st Prov. 9th C.A.C.	
Pvt. Swift, Frederick	1st Prov. 9th C.A.C.	
Pvt. Tappan, Archibald D.	1st Prov. Corp., Sup. Sgt. 9th C.A.C.	
Pvt. Thompson, Alfred D.		
Pvt. Tileston, Thomas, 2nd (dec'd)	1st Prov. 9th C.A.C.	
Pvt. Tracy, Horace Derby	1st Prov. 9th C.A.C.	
Pvt. Trax, H. A.		1st Lieut., Capt., Signal Corps, U.S.A.
Pvt. Van Renssaelaer, Bernard		
Pvt. Verdin, Eugene R.	1st Prov. Sgt., Sup. Sgt. 9th C.A.C.	
Pvt. Vickers, H. Mountague	1st Prov. 9th C.A.C.	Deputy Director, British Mission.
Pvt. Wagstaff, Oliver C.	1st Prov. Corp., Sgt. 9th C.A.C.	
Pvt. Wardner, William K.	9th C.A.C.	
Pvt. Weld, J. Edward	Bn. Sup. Sgt. 9th C.A.C.	
Pvt. Werner, Carl Avery	1st Prov. 9th C.A.C. Sgt., 2nd Lieut., 1st Lieut. 13 C.A.C.	
Pvt. Whedon, Burt D.		
Pvt. White, George C.		Quartermasters Dept., U.S.A.
Pvt. White, Melvin L.	1st Prov. 9th C.A.C.	
Pvt. Williams, Charles A.		1st Lieut., Ord., U.S.O.R.
Pvt. Wilson, Kenneth Tuckers	1st Prov. Corp. 9th C.A.C.	
Pvt. Woodburn, Lewis H.	1st Prov. 9th C.A.C.	

Digitized by Google

FIFTH BATTERY

Capt. Louis Jewett Praeger	1st Prov. Lieut. Col.,-Col. 23rd Infy.	
1st Lieut. William L. Sayers	1st Prov. Capt. 23rd Infy.	
1st Sgt. George M. Curtis, Jr.	1st Prov.	
Sup. Sgt. Hubert S. Wynkoop	1st Prov. 1st Lieut., Bn. Adjt. 23rd Infy.	
Mess Sgt. Philip L. Watkins	1st Prov. Sgt. 23rd Infy.	
Sgt. Henry E. Bedford	1st Prov. Capt. K Co. 23rd Infy.	
Sgt. Willard C. Candee	1st Prov. 1st Sgt., 1st Lieut., Capt. 23rd Infy.	
Sgt. Melville J. France	1st Prov. 2nd Lieut 23rd Infy.	
Act'g Sgt. Charles Harwood	1st Prov. Corp., Sgt. 23rd Infy.	
Sgt. James G. Purdy	1st Prov. 1st Sgt., 2nd Lieut. 23rd Infy.	
Sgt. Stanley J. Quinn	1st Prov. 1st Lieut. 23rd Infy.	
Act'g Sgt. Frederick H. Van Houten		
Sgt. Robert F. Volentine	1st Prov. 23rd Infy.	
Corp. J. B. Clark	1st Prov. Sgt. 23rd Infy.	
Corp. Lewis E. A. Drummond	1st Prov. 23rd Infy.	
Corp. Ernest A. Ebel	1st Prov. Corp. 23rd Infy.	Song Leader, U.S.N.
Corp. John Enequist, Jr.	23rd Infy.	
Corp. Charles A. Freeburn	1st Prov. 23rd Infy.	
Corp. J. Lloyd Prince	1st Prov. 23rd Infy.	
Corp. William A. Strout	1st Prov. 23rd Infy.	
Corp. Harry K. Terhune	1st Prov. 2nd Lieut. 23rd Infy.	
Corp. John Wray	1st Prov. Corp., Sgt., 2nd Lieut. 23rd Infy.	
Pvt. Allison, George F.	23rd Infy.	
Pvt. Andrews, John H.	1st Prov. 1st Sgt. 23rd Infy.	1st Lieut., Quartermasters Corps, U.S.A.
Pvt. Aston, William A.	1st Prov. Mess Sgt. 23rd Infy.	
Pvt. Babbidge, Harold J.	1st Sgt. 23rd Infy.	
Pvt. Beardsley, C. B.	23rd Infy.	
Pvt. Boyd, Francis Thurber		
Pvt. Brooks, Edward B.	23rd Infy.	
Pvt. Butz. C. E.	1st Prov. 23rd Infy.	
Pvt. Byers, Mortimer W.	1st Prov. Sgt. 23rd Infy.	
Pvt. Campbell, William M.	1st Prov. 23rd Infy.	
Pvt. Chittenden, J. Brace	1st Prov. 1st Lieut. 23rd Infy.	
Pvt. Chittick, Richard O.	1st Prov. 23rd Infy.	
Pvt. Clark, Harry H.	23rd Infy.	
Pvt. Cole, Richard F.	1st Prov. 23rd Infy.	
Pvt. Collette, Clay G.	1st Prov. Sgt., Sup. Sgt. 23rd Infy.	
Pvt. Cox, Edwin S.	1st Prov.	
Pvt. Cunningham, Joseph T.	1st Prov. Mess Sgt. 23rd Infy.	
Pvt. Dearborn, Frank W.	1st Prov.	
Pvt. Dempsey. Edward T.	1st Prov.	
Pvt. Dewey, William H.	1st Prov. 23rd Infy.	

Digitized by Google

Pvt. Ely, Morris N.		
Pvt. Foster, George H. D.	1st Prov.	
Pvt. Fox, William Henry	1st Prov. 23rd Infy.	
Pvt. Gault, Elmer D.	1st Prov. 23rd Infy.	
Pvt. Goodbody, Wilson	1st Prov. 23rd Infy.	
Pvt. Greene,Bartholomew A.	1st Prov.	
Pvt. Grooms, Leroy E.	1st Prov. N.Y.G.	
Pvt. Gunnison, Stanley E.	23rd Infy.	
Pvt. Hadden, Howard S.	1st Prov. 1st Lieut. 23rd Infy.	
Pvt. Hanna, George H.	1st Prov. 23rd Infy.	
Pvt. Henshaw, G. Herbert	1st Prov. Corp., Act'g Sgt. 23rd Infy.	
Pvt. Hewlett, George	1st Prov. 9th C.A.C., 23rd Infy.	
Pvt. Higgins, George W. M.	1st Prov. 23rd Infy.	
Pvt. Holden, George H.	1st Prov. Sgt. 23rd Infy.	
Pvt. Hunt, Arthur Lincoln	Mechanic 23rd Infy. 100 per cent record.	
Pvt. Hyatt, Frank S.		
Pvt. James, H. M.	1st Prov.	
Pvt. Johnson, Charles Chamberlain		
Pvt. Kendig, Philip M.	1st Prov. 23rd Infy.	
Pvt. Keyes, James J., M.D.	Maj. M.C. 23rd Infy.	Medical Director, Draft Board.
Pvt. Kunze, J. V. (dec'd)		
Pvt. Lahm, Paul F.	1st Prov. 23rd Infy.	
Pvt. Lane, Nathan, Jr.	1st Prov. 23rd Infy., 2nd F.A.	
Pvt. McKendrick, James	23rd Infy.	
Pvt. McRea, Dorus R.	1st Prov. 23rd Infy.	
Pvt. Mathews, H. N.	1st Prov. 23rd Infy.	
Pvt. Mead, John J.		
Pvt. Morgan, John Hill	1st Prov. 23rd Infy.	
Pvt. Napier, A. Milton	1st Prov. 23rd Infy.	
Pvt. O'Brien, Henry L., DDS.	1st Prov. Capt. M.C., N.Y.G.	U.S.O.R.C.
Pvt. O'Keefe, Arthur J.		
Pvt. Olafson, Stanley T.		Sgt., Ord., U.S.A., A.E.F.
Pvt. Palmer, William H.	1st Prov. 23rd Infy.	
Pvt. Patterson, William M.	23rd Infy.	
Pvt. Phillips, William A.	1st Prov.	
Pvt. Porter, William F.		
Pvt. Powell, Edward P.	1st Prov. 23rd Infy.	
Pvt. Power, James M.		
Pvt. Rambusch, Harold W.	23rd Infy.	
Pvt. Rickerson, Charles E.	1st Prov.	
Pvt. Riese, Ottomar H.	1st Prov.	Sgt., 3rd Div., Bn. 151st Depot Brig., Camp Devens Mass.
Pvt. Rollins, Edward A.	1st Prov. 23rd Infy.	
Pvt. Ruscoe, John Drake	1st Prov.	
Pvt. Seaton, Robert W.	23rd Infy.	
Pvt. Smith, G. Furman	1st Prov. Color Sgt. 23rd Infy.	
Pvt. Steele, John		

Digitized by Google

Pvt. Stiner, Munroe	23rd Infy.	
Pvt. Stoecker, Walter H.	1st Prov. 23rd Infy.	
Pvt. Story, Harry Powers	1st Prov. 23rd Infy.	
Pvt. Sweeney, Alvin C.	1st Prov.	
Pvt. Taylor, Horatio F.	23rd Infy.	
Pvt. Tobey, Henry E.	1st Prov. 23rd Infy. Sgt., 2nd Lieut. 13th C.A.C.	
Pvt. Tompkins, Charles E.	1st Prov. 23rd Infy.	
Pvt. Treiss, Herman G.	1st Prov. Corp. 23rd Infy.	2nd Lieut., Infy, U.S.A.
Pvt. Van Brunt, Mervin S.		Aviation Corps, U.S.A.
Pvt. Vosseler, Edward A.		107th U. S. Infy, 60th U. S. Infy, 1st Lieut., R.A., Capt, O.R.C.
Pvt. Walkley, J. H.	1st Prov. 23rd Infy.	
Pvt. Werner, William H.	1st Prov. 23rd Infy.	
Pvt. White, Francis J.	1st Prov. Corp. 23rd Infy.	
Pvt. Wilson, Richard J.	1st Prov. Squad C.	
Pvt. Wood, J. Scott		
Pvt. Woodall, G. Herbert	1st Prov. 23rd Infy.	

SIXTH BATTERY

1st Lieut. Bryce Metcalf		
1st Lieut. James Clark McGuire		Maj., Eng., U.S.O.R.C.
2nd Lieut. Barrett Putnam Smith	1st Prov. Capt. 9th C.A.C.	1st Lieut., Air Service, 1st Lieut., Capt., 71st Infy, U.S.A.
Sgt. William Douglas Owens	1st Prov. 1st Sgt., 2nd Lieut., 1st Lieut., Capt. 9th C.A.C.	
Sgt. Jarvis P. Carter	1st Prov. Sgt., 2nd Lieut., 1st Lieut., 9th C.A.C.	
Sgt. George E. Cruse	1st Prov. Sgt., 1st Lieut., Capt. 9th C.A.C.	U. S. Employment Service, Dept. of Labor.
Sgt. Ralph S. Dunne	1st Prov. Sgt 9th C.A.C.	
Sgt. Daniel J. Turner		
Corp. Mortimer P. Arnold	1st Prov.	
Corp. Kingsley Ballou (dec'd)	1st Prov.	
Corp. George T. Brokaw	1st Prov. Corp., Sgt. 9th C.A.C., 2nd Lieut. 71st Infy.	
Corp. Frederick G. Clapp	1st Prov. Special Service, prepared Maps of Aqueduct.	
Corp. Walter F. Dyett	1st Prov.	Capt., Infy, U.S.A.
Corp. Daniel D. Jackson	1st Prov.	Com. on Camp Utilities, School of Photography, School of Explosives. Certificate for Notable Civilian Service.
Corp. Effingham N. Lawrence	1st Prov. Sgt. 9th C.A.C., 1st Lieut. 1st F.A.	
Corp. Harry H. Leonard	1st Prov. 1st Sgt. 9th C.A.C	Sgt., Reg. Army, U.S. detached.
Corp. John T. Maffett	1st Prov. Sgt. 9th C.A.C.	1st Lieut., Air Service, A.E.F.
Corp. Clarence A. Sparks		
Corp. John C. Travis	1st Prov.	

Digitized by Google

Pvt. Aspinwall, Lane	1st Prov. 9th C.A.C.	
Pvt. Baird, Howard C.	9th C.A.C.	Worked for War Dept., Civilian capacity.
Pvt. Ball, Jack	1st Prov. 9th C.A.C.	
Pvt. Bandler, Harry S.	1st Prov. 9th C.A.C., Rgt. Sgt. Maj., 2nd Lieut. 22nd Eng.	
Pvt. Barnewell, E. Percy		
Pvt. Beekman, Henry R.	9th C.A.C.	
Pvt. Beekman, William F.	1st Prov. 9th C.A.C.	
Pvt. Bennett, Frank E.	Corp. 9th C.A.C.	
Pvt. Bloodgood, William D.	1st Prov.	
Pvt. Bradbury, Charles B.	1st Prov. Corp. 9th C.A.C.	162nd Infy, U.S.A., Casual on Clerical duty.
Pvt. Brainerd, Ira H.	1st Prov.	
Pvt. Chapin, Louis W.	1st Prov. 9th C.A.C.	
Pvt. Chapman, D. B. R.	1st Prov.	
Pvt. Clarke, Harry E.	1st Prov.	
Pvt. Coghlan, Raymond C.	7th Infy., Squad A.	
Pvt. Coleman, J. Henry	1st Prov. 9th C.A.C.	
Pvt. Coleman, Royal C.	1st Prov.	
Pvt. Colgate, Lathrop	1st Prov. 9th C.A.C.	Q.M.C., U.S.A., A.E.F.
Pvt. Cutler, Colman W.		
Pvt. Doremus, D. Parker	1st Prov.	
Pvt. Doty, Douglas Z.	1st Prov.	
Pvt. Drullard, Alfred B.	1st Prov. 9th C.A.C.	Quartermaster, Ensign, Lieut., (JG), U.S.N.
Pvt. Emmons, Earl H.	1st Prov. Corp., Sgt., 1st Sgt., 2nd Lieut. 9th C.A.C.	
Pvt. Ewen, John	1st Prov. 9th C.A.C.	
Pvt. Gallagher, Frank H.	1st Prov. 9th C.A.C.	
Pvt. Gardiner, Curtis C.		
Pvt. Goodrich, George S.		
Pvt. Gregory, Edward B.	1st Prov. 9th C.A.C.	
Pvt. Haines, Edwin I.	1st Prov. 9th C.A.C.	
Pvt. Hall, Irving K.	1st Prov. 9th C.A.C.	
Pvt. Hamilton, Schuyler	1st Prov. Sgt., 23rd Infy.	2nd Lieut., Motor Transport Corps., U. S. A.
Pvt. Handy, Albert		
Pvt. Henderson, George S.		
Pvt. Hodges, Edwin J.	1st Prov. 9th C.A.C.	U. S. Infy, 2nd Lieut., 71st Co., 18th Training Bn., 153rd Depot Brig.
Pvt. Holstein, Mark G.	1st Prov. N.Y.G.	Govt. Appeal Agt., Local Board 161.
Pvt. Horton, Daniel H.	1st Prov.	
Pvt. Howe, Ernest A.	1st Prov. 9th C.A.C.	
Pvt. James, Robert Howard		
Pvt. Jones, Charles L.	1st Prov. 9th C.A.C.	Y.M.C.A. in France with 3rd Bn., 6th Marines, Belleau and Soissons with 15th Arty in trenches
Pvt. Kaplan, Jacob S. (dec'd)		
Pvt. Kavanagh, Dr. F. Edge	1st Prov. 9th C.A.C.	
Pvt. Knight, Charles W.	1st Prov. Co. Clk., 6th Co., 9th C.A.C.	
Pvt. Kohler, F. Dudley		P.O., U.S.N.

Digitized by Google

Pvt. Lavender, John G.	1st Prov.	
Pvt. Leach, Rev. Floyd S.	1st Prov.	
Pvt. Lyall, Arthur V.	1st Prov. Sup. Sgt. 9th C.A.C. 1st Lieut. N.Y.G.	
Pvt. McClenthen, Herrick	1st Prov. 9th C.A.C.	
Pvt. McKee, Robert T.		Ran Soldier's Club in Paris one year.
Pvt. Moulton, Herbert G.		
Pvt. Nast, Cyril	1st Prov. Corp., Sgt., 1st Sgt. 9th C.A.C.	Camouflage Dept., U. S. Shipping Board.
Pvt. Owens, Malcolm W.		
Pvt. Pape, John C.	1st Prov.	
Pvt. Parker, Paul P.		Corp., 336th Heavy F. A., U.S.A.
Pvt. Redfield, E. P.		
Pvt. Reed, Robert R.		Harvard R.O.T.C., 1918.
Pvt. Richards, Harold E.	1st Prov. Corp. 9th C.A.C.,	
Pvt. Richardson, Frank W.	1st Prov.	
Pvt. Romagna, Anthony	1st Prov. 9th C.A.C.	
Pvt. Severance, H Craig	1st Prov. 9th C.A.C.	
Pvt. Sidman, Edward A.		
Pvt. Smith, George Elmer		13th Co., Signal Corps, 31st Div., Sgt. 1st Class.
Pvt. Smith, William Henry	1st Prov.	
Pvt. Sofio, John Richard		
Pvt. Somerville, William L.	1st Prov. Corp., Sgt., 9th C.A.C.	
Pvt. Stage, Wallace B. (dec'd.)	1st Prov.	
Pvt. Stearns, Douglas C.	1st Prov.	
Pvt. Stevens, Richard T.	1st Prov. 9th C.A.C.	Went to Japan for Ord. Dept., U.S.A.
Pvt. Stringham, Harry H.		N.Y.U., Med. Corps, France.
Pvt. Swinton, Loudon	1st Prov. Corp., Sgt., 9th C.A.C.	Seaman, 1st Class, U.S.N., Aide for Information, Naval Intelligence.
Pvt. Tatnall, Edward C.		
Pvt. Thompson, Pell	1st Prov.	Advice U. S. Authorities in real estate matters.
Pvt. Timlin, William B.	1st Prov.	
Pvt. Trask, Frederick K.	1st Prov.	
Pvt. Trowbridge, Alexander B.	1st Prov. 9th C.A.C. 1st Lieut. Staff Inspector Gen., N.Y.G.	
Pvt. Van Doren, Louis O.	1st Prov. 9th C.A.C.	Lieut., Am. Protective League.
Pvt. Van Loan, Joseph T.	1st Prov. 9th C.A.C.	
Pvt. Waugh, Theodore L.		
Pvt. Wheeler, Edward J.		
Pvt. Whisler, Howard F.	1st Prov. Corp., Sgt. 9th C.A.C. Range Officer.	
Pvt. Whitehouse, Norman de R.	1st Prov.	
Pvt. Williams, George King		
Pvt. Wills, William Henry		
Pvt. Wilsey, Frank D.		
Pvt. Wyman, Walter C.	1st Prov. 9th C.A.C.	

Digitized by Google

SEVENTH BATTERY

1st Lieut. Theodore T. Lane (dec'd)	1st Lieut., Capt., 1st Prov. Capt. 9th C.A.C.	
2nd Lieut. H. Pushee Williams	1st Prov. 1st Lieut., Capt. 9th C.A.C.	Capt., C.M.G., O.T.S., U.S.A.
1st Sgt. John T. Harrison	1st Prov. 1st Lieut., Capt., 9th C.A.C.	Lieut. (JG), U.S.N., Transportation Service.
Sup. Sgt. Herbert R. Peck	1st Prov. Sup. Sgt., 1st Sgt., 9th C.A.C.	
Sgt. Henry E. Crawford	1st Prov. Sgt., 2nd Lieut., 1st Lieut., 9th C.A.C.	
Sgt. William M. Smith	1st Prov. 1st Sgt., 2nd Lieut., 9th C.A.C.	
Pvt. Adenaw, Arthur P. F.	1st Prov. 9th C.A.C.	
Pvt. Bleecker, William Hill	1st Prov.	
Pvt. Breed, Nathaniel P., M.D.		Capt., M.C., U.S.A.
Pvt. Bowne, Frederick, Jr.	1st Prov.	
Pvt. Breck, George W. (dec'd.)	1st Prov. 9th C.A.C.	
Pvt. Brown, W. Harman, Jr.	1st Prov. 9th C.A.C.	
Pvt. Brundage, Wilbur	1st Prov., N.Y.G.	2nd Lieut., Air Service, Hdqs., A.E.F.
Pvt. Bunting, James E.		
Pvt Chase, Joseph C	1st Prov. Corp., 9th C.A.C.	Accredited Portrait Painter, A.E.F.
Pvt, Clark, Thomas	1st Prov. Corp., Sup. Sgt., 9th C.A.C.	
Pvt. Cocklin, A. B.		
Pvt. Coxe, George S.	1st Prov.	
Pvt. Crittenden, J. P.		Served under Director of Draft.
Pvt. De Forest, Norman S.	1st Prov. 9th C.A.C.	
Pvt. De Novellis, Bert	1st Prov. Sgt., 1st Sgt. 9th C.A.C.	
Pvt. de Raismes, Robert Embree	1st Prov. 9th C.A.C.	Export Division, War Trade Board.
Pvt. Dufloq, Milton F.	1st Prov. 9th C.A.C.	
Pvt. Eldredge, Arthur	1st Prov.	
Pvt. Gould, Charles F.	1st Prov. 9th C.A.C.	
Pvt. Green, Frederick L.		
Pvt. Guillaudeu, Emile		
Pvt. Harwood, William Bradford	1st Prov. 9th C.A.C.	
Pvt. Hunt, Ernest C.	1st Prov. 9th C.A.C.	
Pvt. Hunter, Richard Finley	1st Prov. Corp., Sgt., 9th C.A.C.	
Pvt. Kent, Charles N.	9th C.A.C.	
Pvt. Knowles, C. E.		
Pvt. Knowles, William Wells	1st Prov. 9th C.A.C.	2nd Lieut., 312th Labor Bn., Q.M.C., A.E.F.
Pvt. La Cour, Lauritz U.	1st Prov. 9th C.A.C.	
Pvt. Laighton, Alfred P.	1st Prov.	

Digitized by Google

Pvt. Leach, Arvine C.	1st Prov. Bn. Sgt. Maj., 9th C.A.C.; 1st Lieut., Bn. Adjt., Capt. 9th C.D.C.	
Pvt. Moore, William J.		
Pvt. Munds, L. de Aigle		Ensign, U.S.N.R.
Pvt. Nesmith, Charles A.	1st Prov. 9th C.A.C.	
Pvt. Nichols, Frederick W.	1st Prov. 9th C.A.C.	
Pvt. Oates, Edward Frederick	1st Prov.	1st Lieut., Q.M.C., N.A,
Pvt. Parsons, Robert E.	1st Prov. 9th C.A.C.	
Pvt. Plummer, Walter P.	1st Prov. Sgt., Bn. Sup. Sgt., 2nd Lieut., Asst. Sup. Off., 9th C.A.C.	
Pvt. Rathgeber, Emile E.	1st Prov. Corp., 9th C.A.C.	
Pvt. Roberts, Charles C.	1st Prov. Mess Sgt. 9th C.A.C.	
Pvt. Roberts, William G.	1st Prov. 9th C.A.C.	
Pvt. Rossiter, Frank H.	1st Prov. Corp. 9th C.A.C.	Corp., Sgt., C.O.B., 304th Bn. Tank Corps., U.S.A.
Pvt. Smith, H. L.	1st Prov. 9th C.A.C.	
Pvt. Smith, Harold Wallace		
Pvt. Stanfield, Julius J.	1st Prov. 9th C.A.C.	
Pvt. Sterling, Richard		
Pvt. Struthers, C. B.		
Pvt. Todd, Harry D.		
Pvt. Turton, John	1st Prov.	
Pvt. Wangler, Albert M.	1st Prov. 9th C.A.C.	1st Lieut., Gas Defense Div., U.S.A.
Pvt. Welch, James Hart	Ch. Mechanic Hdqs. Staff, 1st Prov. Corp., Sgt. Sup. Co., 9th C.A.C.	1st Lieut., Motor Transport Corps.
Pvt. Whipple, Julian V.	1st Prov. 9th C.A.C.	
Pvt. Whitman, Addison S.		
Pvt. Willets, Morris L.	1st Prov. Sgt. 9th C.A.C.	
Pvt. Williams, Remsen T.	1st Prov. 9th C.A.C.	
Pvt. Willis, John Davenport	1st Prov. Corp., Sgt. 9th C.A.C.	
Pvt. Wooster, William H.	1st Prov. 9th C.A.C.	

Digitized by Google

THIRD BATTALION

Maj. William L. Hodges	Maj. 1st Bn. 1st Prov. One year. Maj. 9th C.A.C.	
1st Lieut. Cabot Ward	Bn. Adjt., 1st Lieut., Capt. 9th C.A.C.	Maj., Lieut. Col., Asst. Chief of Staff, G 2, S.O.S., A.E.F., D.S.M., Legion of Honor, British D.S.M.

EIGHTH BATTERY

Capt. Adam T. Shurick	1st Prov.	Capt., Co. A, Replacement Engineers, also Co. D, 209th Engineers, U.S.A.
2nd Lieut. Horace F. Pomeroy	1st Prov. Capt. 9th C.A.C.	
Pvt. Allen, Frank J.	1st Prov. Sgt., Mess Sgt., 1st Sgt. 9th C.A.C.	
Pvt. Angell, Rufus G. (dec'd)		
Pvt. Bruce, William W.	1st Prov. 9th C.A.C.	
Pvt. Burt. L. Millens		
Pvt. Carr, Gene	1st Prov. 9th C.A.C.	
Pvt. Colwell, Madison Worth	1st Prov. 9th C.A.C.	
Pvt. Cox, Harold N.	1st Prov. 9th C.A.C.	
Pvt. Davenport, Dr. Sebert Ellsworth, Jr.	1st Prov.	1st Lieut., Dental Corps, U. S. A.
Pvt. Earl, George Le C.		
Pvt. Fancy, Clarence B.	1st Prov. 9th C.A.C.	Project Engineer, U. S. Shipping Board.
Pvt. Farrington, Robert M.	1st Prov.	
Pvt. Gates, Albert N.	1st Prov. 9th C.A.C.	
Pvt. Gronbeck, Carl P.	1st Prov. 9th C.A.C.	
Pvt. Guiler, Hugh C.	1st Prov. Sgt., Sup. Sgt. 9th C.A.C.	
Pvt. Harriss, William Leslie	9th C.A.C.	303rd Stevedore Regt., Q.M.C.
Pvt. Harriss, Robert M.	1st Prov.	
Pvt. Harvey, John Vance		
Pvt. Hewitt, John V.	1st Prov.	
Pvt. Hommann, Charles C., Jr.	1st Prov.	
Pvt. Hooper, Will Phillip	9th C.A.C.	
Pvt. Johnson, Charles W.	1st Prov. 9th C.A.C.	Corp., Battery F, 59th Heavy F.A.
Pvt. Johnson, George W.	1st Prov.	Field Arty, U.S.A.
Pvt. Kirchwey, Karl W.	1st Prov. 9th C.A.C.	
Pvt. Lamont, Guy N.	1st Prov.	
Pvt. Mandeville, H. Raymond	1st Prov. 9th C.A.C.	Corp., M. G. Co., 106th Infy, U.S.A.
Pvt. Mantle, Robert Burns	9th C.A.C.	
Pvt. Mayer, Thomas W.	Bn. Sgt. Maj. 9th C.A.C.	
Pvt. Messenger, John	1st Prov. 2nd Lieut., 1st Lieut. 9th C.A.C.	

Digitized by Google

Pvt. Messenger, Leslie A.	1st Prov. Sgt., 1st Lieut., Bn. Adjt. 9th C.A.C.	
Pvt. Moir, Edward H.	1st Prov. Sgt., 1st Sgt. 9th C.A.C.	Pvt., 28th Co., O.T.S., Camp Lee, Va.
Pvt. Rountree, Herman B.	1st Prov. 9th C.A.C.	
Pvt. Sarkisian, Dikran M.	1st Prov. Sgt., 9th C.A.C.	U. S. Ord. Dept., 2 mos., U.S.A.
Pvt. Serlen, Louis	9th C.A.C.	
Pvt. Seward, Frederic K.	1st Prov. Sgt., Sup. Sgt., 2nd Lieut., Capt., 9th C.A.C.	
Pvt. Stowe, Lyman Beecher	9th C.A.C.	
Pvt. Teague, Walter D.	1st Prov. 1st Lieut., Capt. 9th C.A.C.	
Pvt. Thoms, Henry W.	1st Prov. 9th C.A.C.	
Pvt. Van Wagenen, Edward	1st Prov. 9th C.A.C.	
Pvt. Walker, William G.	1st Prov.	
Pvt. Whyte, Robert	1st Prov.	
Pvt. Wilson, Edward Bird	9th C.A.C.	
Pvt. Wye, Ernest F. M.	1st Prov. Sgt., Sup. Sgt., 1st Sgt., 9th C.A.C.	
Pvt. Wylie, Robert, Jr.	1st Prov. Corp., Sgt., 9th C.A.C.	

NINTH BATTERY

1st Lieut. Raymond Leonard Taft	1st Prov. Capt. 23rd Infy.	
Pvt. Adams, Charles J.	1st Prov.	
Pvt. Ahlers, Carl	1st Prov.	2nd Lieut., F.A., 77th Div., 2nd Div., 30th Div., U.S.A.
Pvt. Ahlers, John G.	1st Prov.	
Pvt. Armstrong, John D.	1st Prov. 23rd Infy.	Candidate T. C., Camp Gordon.
Pvt. Beck, Harry	1st Prov.	
Pvt. Best, Harry S.		1st Lieut., Infy., U.S.O.R.C.
Pvt. Boecklin, Werner	1st Prov. 23rd Infy.	
Pvt. Bunn, Albert C.	1st Prov.	
Pvt. Carter, William A. (decd)	1st Prov. 23rd Infy.	
Pvt. Cauchois, Frederic	1st Prov.	
Pvt. Childs, Richard T.	1st Prov.	
Pvt. Clarke, George C.	23rd Infy.	
Pvt. Cummings, John L.		
Pvt. Daggett, Griswold T.	1st Prov. 23rd Infy.	
Pvt. Disbrow, Joseph Pell	1st Prov. 23rd Infy.	
Pvt. Dowse, Edwin H.	1st Prov.	
Pvt. Edgerton, Rollin E.	1st Prov.	
Pvt. Floyd, George F.	1st Prov.	
Pvt. Gillespie, E. Curtis	1st Prov. 23rd Infy.	
Pvt. Goodwin, Joseph W.	1st Prov.	
Pvt. Graves, O. W.	1st Prov. Sgt. 23rd Infy.	
Pvt. Henno, August F.		
Pvt. Hernon, William S.		Ensign, U.S.N.R.
Pvt. Herring, Thomas O.	1st Prov.	

Digitized by Google

Pvt. Ives, Henry W.	1st Prov.	
Pvt. Jones, William A., Jr.		
Pvt. Kochendorfer, John	Capt. 23rd Infy.	
Pvt. Kooser, James E.	1st Prov.	
Pvt. Lambert, Howard G.	1st Prov	Capt., Ord. Dept., Ammunition Service, 1st Army, A.E.F., 52nd Pioneer Infy.
Pvt. Lamont, Guy N.	1st Prov.	
Pvt. Larkin, Everett P.	1st Prov. Corp., Sgt. 9th C.A.C.	
Pvt. Lauer, F. J.		106th M. G. Bn., 27th Div., A.E.F.
Pvt. Lockwood, Lester C.	1st Prov. 9th C.A.C. 23rd Infy.	
Pvt. Lord, Floyd M.	1st Prov.	
Pvt. Man, Alrick H.		
Pvt. Marcus, E.		
Pvt. Marks, William A.	23rd Infy.	Civilian U.S.Q.D., Clothing Div.
Pvt. Moffat, Henry Brewster	1st Prov. 23rd Infy.	
Pvt. Molby, E. C.	1st Prov. 23rd Infy.	
Pvt. Naughton, William R.		2nd Lieut., 302nd Engineers, 77th Div.
Pvt. Norton, R. A.		Corp., 22nd Infy, U.S.A.
Pvt. Paine, Thomas	1st Prov. N.Y.G.	
Pvt. Palmer, Frederick L. W.	1st Prov.	
Pvt. Phillips, Frank E.	1st Prov.	
Pvt. Pitou, Eugene	1st Prov.	1st Lieut., Ord. Dept.
Pvt. Portong, Ludolf		
Pvt. Reed, Arthur L.		
Pvt. Reimer, John B.	1st Prov. 23rd Infy.	
Pvt. Rich, Elisha R.	1st Prov.	
Pvt. Richmond, William T.	1st Prov. Sgt. 23rd Infy.	
Pvt. Ring, Walter F.	1st Prov. 23rd Infy.	
Pvt. Rising, Albert E.		
Pvt. Roberts, Walter		
Pvt. Roemer, C. F.	1st Prov. Corp. 23rd Infy.	Pvt., Corp., Sgt., 2nd Lieut., F.A., U.S.A., Lieut., Instructor Signal Service, O.T.S.
Pvt. Roemer, A. William	23rd Infy.	
Pvt. Ruyl, James P.	1st Prov.	
Pvt. Saalburg, Charles U.		
Pvt. St. John, Frank C.	1st Prov. 23rd Infy.	
Pvt. Schier, Helwig		
Pvt. Shipman, Elliott W., M.D.	1st Prov. 23rd Infy.	
Pvt. Siegel, R. W.	1st Prov.	
Pvt. Slensby, Joseph P.	1st Prov.	
Pvt. Smith, Charles R.	1st Prov.	
Pvt. Smith, Edgeworth	1st Prov. 23rd Infy.	
Pvt. Smith, Rufus D.	1st Prov.	
Pvt. Stephens, Edward Martin	1st Prov. 23rd Infy.	
Pvt. Sterling, Raymond K.	1st Prov.	Co. A, 112th M. G. Bn., 29th Div., A.E.F.
Pvt. Stillman, Horace R.		
Pvt. Storms, Edgar, Jr.		
Pvt. Timpson, Allen G.	1st Prov. N.Y.G.	

Digitized by Google

Pvt. Tressler, J. C.	1st Prov.	
Pvt. Turton, John K.	1st Prov.	
Pvt. Vitt, William		
Pvt. Vosburgh, Charles H.	1st Prov.	
Pvt. Wade, Durlyn, Jr.	1st Prov. 23rd Infy.	
Pvt. Wade, Wilbur	1st Prov. 23rd Infy.	
Pvt. Wicke, George H.	1st Prov.	
Pvt. Wood, Elbert E.	1st Prov. Cook, Co. F, 23rd Infy., 16 mos., 100 per cent.	
Pvt. Wright, Arthur	1st Prov. Mess Sgt., Sup. Sgt. 9th C.A.C.	
Pvt. Wright, Harry K. T.	1st Prov.	
Pvt. Youngs, Frederick T.		
Pvt. Youngs, Frederick, J., Jr.	1st Prov.	

TENTH BATTERY

Act'g 1st Sgt. George M. Wilde	1st Prov. 1st Sgt., 1st Lieut. 13th C.A.C.	
Pvt. Annett, F. A.	1st Prov. 13th C.A.C.	1st Lieut., U.S.A.
Pvt. Basson, Howard M.	13th C.A.C.	
Pvt. Brown, Dr. William E.	1st Prov. 1st Lieut. M.C. 13th C.A.C.	
Pvt. Callaghan, Daniel M.		
Pvt. Carr, Arthur N.	1st Prov. Squad C.	
Pvt. Carr, Raymond	1st Prov. 13th C.A.C.	
Pvt. Collins, Donald Wilson	1st Prov. 13th C.A.C.	
Pvt. Corkett, Albert E.	1st Prov. Corp. 13th C.A.C.	
Pvt. Corry, George S.	1st Prov. 13th C.A.C.	
Pvt. Coulthart, Andrew	1st Prov. 13th C.A.C.	
Pvt. Curtin, James F.		
Pvt. Cushing, William T.	1st Prov. Corp. 13th C.A.C.	
Pvt. Dalton, Schuyler N.	2nd Lieut. 13th C.A.C.	Pvt., Sgt., U.S.A., 2nd Lieut., O.R.C.
Pvt. Davies, George H.	1st Prov. 13th C.A.C.	
Pvt. Davis, T. B.	1st Prov.	
Pvt. Dean, Harry	13th C.A.C.	
Pvt. Duffy, John	13th C.A.C.	
Pvt. Dutcher, C. R.	1st Prov. 2nd Lieut., 1st Lieut., Capt. 13th C.A.C.	
Pvt. Edgerton, Reed M.	1st Prov. 13th C.A.C.	Pvt., 302nd, 303rd, 306th Brigades, U. S. Tank Corps.
Pvt. Egan, Joseph D.	1st Prov. Sgt. 13th C.A.C.	
Pvt. Fisher, Lyman J.	1st Prov. 2nd Lieut., 1st Lieut., Capt. 13th C.A.C.	
Pvt. Fowler, William Faulkner	1st Prov. Sup. Sgt. 13th C.A.C.	
Pvt. Fox, James	13th C.A.C.	
Pvt. Gordon, Arthur H.	1st Prov.	
Pvt. Graham, Nelson W., Jr.	1st Prov. Hosp. Corps, 13th C.A.C.	
Pvt. Grothmann, Roger T.	13th C.A.C.	
Pvt. Guggolz, William L.	1st Prov. 13th C.A.C.	U.S.N.

Digitized by Google

Pvt. Hardern, William T.	1st Prov. Corp. 13th C.A.C.	
Pvt. Heller, Edward	1st Prov. 13th C.A.C.	
Pvt. Helmig, Edward L.	1st Prov. Sup. Sgt. 13th C.A.C.	
Pvt. Hoare, Sidney G.	1st Prov. 13th C.A.C.	
Pvt. Holberg, Henry D.	1st Prov. Sgt. 13th C.A.C.	
Pvt. Hyett, Alfred S.	1st Prov. 13th C.A.C.	
Pvt. Kohl, Wallace W.	Sgt. 13th C.A.C.	
Pvt. Lammers, Henry	1st Prov.	
Pvt. Leahy, John	1st Prov. 13th C.A.C.	
Pvt. Lingeman, H. B.	1st Prov. Sgt. 13th C.A.C., Co. B, 1st Bn. Signal Corps, N.Y.G.	
Pvt. Lingeman, Edwin T.		
Pvt. McCaffrey, Edward A., Jr.	1st Prov. 13th C.A.C.	
Pvt. McCue, Richard D.	1st Prov.	2nd Lieut., U.S.A.
Pvt. MacDwyer, Patrick S.	1st Lieut., Capt., Maj., 13th C.A.C.	
Pvt. Mannie, G. Allen	2nd Lieut., 1st Lieut., 13th C.A.C.	
Pvt. Marten, William F.	1st Prov. 13th C.A.C.	
Pvt. Quick, William, Jr.		
Pvt. Riddell, Thomas	1st Prov. 13th C.A.C.	
Pvt. Robinson, D. B.	1st Prov. 13th C.A.C.	
Pvt. Roehsler, John L.	1st Prov. 1st Lieut., Capt., Maj. 13th C.A.C.	
Pvt. Savage, Alfred S.	1st Prov. 13th C.A.C.	
Pvt. Surber, Wilfred Andrew		O.T.C.
Pvt. Swahn, Alexander C.	1st Prov. 13th C.A.C.	
Pvt. Terry, George W., Jr.		
Pvt. Thompson, David H.	1st Prov. 13th C.A.C.	
Pvt. Thomson, Frank A.	1st Prov. 13th C.A.C.	
Pvt. Wagner, Thomas A.	13th C.A.C.	
Pvt. Walters, Joseph J.	Cook, 10th Co., 13th C.A.C.	
Pvt. Wardley, Walter F.	1st Prov. 13th C.A.C.	
Pvt. Worster, John E.	1st Sgt. 13th C.A.C.	
Pvt. Wright, W. Arthur	1st Prov.	

ELEVENTH BATTERY

Capt. Louis J. Praeger	V. 5th Battery	
Act'g 1st Sgt. William D. Wilkes	1st Prov. Capt. 23rd Infy.	1st Lieut., Air Service, U.S.A.
Pvt. Anthony, Rev. Robert W.	23rd Infy.	Lieut., Chaplain, U.S.A.
Pvt. Beatty, Francis	1st Prov. Sgt., 1st Sgt. 23rd Infy., Sgt., Color Sgt. 2nd F.A.	
Pvt. Bolland, James Elwin	1st Prov. 1st Sgt. 23rd Infy.	
Pvt. Brown, George R.	1st Prov.	
Pvt. Brunjes, Henry, Jr.	1st Prov. 23rd Infy.	
Pvt. Callender, James H.	1st Prov.	Draft Board Work.
Pvt. Cameron, Thomas C.	1st Prov.	
Pvt. Camps, Manuel	1st Prov. 23rd Infy.	

Digitized by Google

Pvt. Cauthers, Albert M.	1st Prov. 23rd Infy.	
Pvt. Cole, H. H.	23rd Infy.	
Pvt. Conover, Henry S.	1st Prov. 1st Lieut. 23rd Infy.	
Pvt. Cronin, Thomas J.	1st Prov. 23rd Infy.	
Pvt. Earle, William P., Jr.	1st Prov. 23rd Infy.	
Pvt. Evens, Arthur F.	1st Prov. 23rd Infy.	
Pvt. Evertsen, Bernardus, Jr.	1st Prov.	
Pvt. Gallon, William J.	1st Prov. 23rd Infy.	
Pvt. Garrett, James R.	1st Prov. 23rd Infy.	Spanish War, 1st Illinois.
Pvt. Genn, William H.	1st Prov.	
Pvt. Gilkes, Percy B.	1st Prov. 23rd Infy.	
Pvt. Glendon, Thomas A.	1st Prov. Q.M. Sgt. 23rd Infy.	
Pvt. Haefelein, Harry J.	1st Prov. 23rd Infy.	
Pvt. Hanshe, Irving	1st Prov. 23rd Infy.	
Pvt. Harper, William R.	1st Prov. 23rd Infy.	
Pvt. Hitchcock, George P.	1st Prov. 23rd Infy.	
Pvt. Hodges, Harry P.	23rd Infy.	
Pvt. Hunter, Edgar J.		
Pvt. Huselton, James S.	1st Prov.	
Pvt. Jacobs, Robert E.	1st Prov.	
Pvt. Jones, William G., Jr.	1st Sgt. 23rd Infy.	
Pvt. Ketcham, Frank B.	Color Sgt. 23rd Infy.	
Pvt. La Barre, Lauren B.	1st Prov. 23rd Infy.	Mach. Mate, Aviation, U.S.N., Ensign, U.S.N.R., Pay Corps.
Pvt. Lamb, William S.	1st Prov. 23rd Infy.	
Pvt. Lasher, Robert R.	1st Prov. 1st Sgt. 23rd Infy.	
Pvt. Lengerke, Frederick von	1st Prov. 23rd Infy.	
Pvt. Major, William E.	1st Prov. 23rd Infy.	
Pvt. Martin, Ernest Alvin	1st Prov. 23rd Infy.	
Pvt. Mickleborough, George W.		
Pvt. Newton, William L.	1st Prov. 23rd Infy.	
Pvt. Nixon, John M.	1st Prov. 23rd Infy.	
Pvt. Palmer, Eric H.	1st Prov. 23rd Infy.	Commissioner to Sweden and Norway, Committee on Public Information.
Pvt. Palmer, George N.	23rd Infy.	
Pvt. Parmelee, George F.	1st Prov.	
Pvt. Perkins, Bertram J.	1st Prov. 23rd Infy.	
Pvt. Pine, Frederick L.	1st Prov.	
Pvt. Ralston, Jordan D.	1st Prov. 23rd Infy.	
Pvt. Rice, Ralph M.		
Pvt. Sayles, John F.	Sgt., 1st Sgt. 23rd Infy.	
Pvt. Smiley, Clinton E.		
Pvt. Smith, Henry L.	23rd Infy.	
Pvt. Smith, Robert L.	23rd Infy.	
Pvt. Steele, Harry M.	23rd Infy.	
Pvt. Turner, Henry C.	1st Prov. 23rd Infy.	
Pvt. Voorhees, Alfred M.	23rd Infy.	
Pvt. Voorhees, Frank S.	1st Prov. 23rd Infy.	
Pvt. Weisgerber, Louis		
Pvt. Weisgerber, William	1st Prov. 23rd Infy.	
Pvt. Wills, Irving H.	1st Prov. 23rd Infy.	

Digitized by Google

TWELFTH BATTERY

Act'g Capt. Charles H. Schroeder		
Pvt. Atkinson, Percy	Sgt. 1st Bn. Signal Corps.	
Pvt. Barker, Walter F.	Signal Corps	
Pvt. Beach, William P.		
Pvt. Bierach, William J.	23rd Infy.	
Pvt. Chapman	Squad C.	Apprentice Seaman, U.S.N.R.
Pvt. Clark, Charles W.	Sup. Sgt. Squad C.	
Pvt. Courtenay, Joseph H.	23rd Infy.	
Pvt. Dean, George Q.	23rd Infy.	
Pvt. DeBevoise, James G.	2nd Lieut. Squad C.	
Pvt. Dittrich, Percy		
Pvt. Ellmore, Lewis F.	Squad C.	
Pvt. Estes, Edwin C.		
Pvt. Ford, George W.		
Pvt. Geib, John P.		
Pvt. Gray, Joseph S.		Local Exemption Board.
Pvt. Hankins, Arrow C.	1st Prov.	
Pvt. Haynes, George A.	1st Prov. 23rd Infy.	
Pvt. Heberer, Fred C.		
Pvt. Hyde, Emory J.		
Pvt. Jordan, Robert J.		
Pvt. Kinzinger, Fred		
Pvt. Knox, Charles G.	Squad C.	
Pvt. Kothe, Henry		
Pvt. Lockwood, Brockholst C.	1st Lieut. Squad C.	
Pvt. Lyon, Paul W.	1st Prov. Squad C.	
Pvt. McQuilkin, Frank W.		
Pvt. MacLardy, William	Squad C.	
Pvt. Mahnken, Berton W.	1st Prov. Squad C.	
Pvt. Matthews, Robert H.		
Pvt. Mead, Victor D.	Squad C.	
Pvt. Moelter, Anthony T.		
Pvt. Morhous, Burgess F.	1st Sgt., 2nd Lieut., Capt. 23rd Infy.	
Pvt. Neill, Rev. J. S.		
Pvt. Parker, Clarence H.		
Pvt. Paul, Irving C.		
Pvt. Place, Everett W.	Squad C.	
Pvt. Platt, C. P.		Chairman, Exemption Board 182.
Pvt. Reeve, Clifford C.		
Pvt. Robertson, Harvie J.	N.Y.G.	
Pvt. Robinson, Frederick S.		
Pvt. Schirmer, Robert F.		
Pvt. Schlenker, Robert G.		
Pvt. Schur, Wm. C.	Corp., Squad C.	
Pvt. Seifert, Charles C.	1st Prov.	
Pvt. Shelton, John T.	Squad C.	
Pvt. Sim, Charles W.	Squad C.	
Pvt. Spencer, John Philip		
Pvt. Starret, Louis S.		

Digitized by Google

Pvt. Stewart, George E.	Squad C.	
Pvt. Syrett, Harry	23rd Infy.	
Pvt. Tiffany, Howard E.		
Pvt. Timmis, Pierce	23rd Infy.	
Pvt. Vaux, A. M.		
Pvt. Weber, Andrew F.	Corp., 23rd Infy.	
Pvt. Woods, John H.		
Pvt. Yook, Rudolph	Squad C.	
Pvt. Zimmermann, Frederick C.	Squad C.	

YONKERS PROVISIONAL BATTERY

2nd Lieut. Edwin Brown Jenks	1st Lieut., 9th C.A.C., Capt., M.C., 9th C.A.C.	
Pvt. Arent, Charles H.	Corp., 9th C.A.C.	1st Lieut., Q.M.C., U.S.A.
Pvt. Belknap, Ethelbert, Jr.		
Pvt. Belknap, Frazer L.		
Pvt. Benton, Charles V.		
Pvt. Bodington, Arthur T.	Corp., 9th C.A.C.	
Pvt. Briant, Leslie D.		
Pvt. Bunker, Ellsworth		
Pvt. Bunker, Raymond U.		
Pvt. Calkins, Frank R.		
Pvt. Dodge, Francis M.	9th C.A.C.	
Pvt. Earle, Victor M.	1st Prov. 1st Sgt., 1st Lieut., Capt. 9th C.A.C.	
Pvt. Easton, Irving B.	1st Prov. 9th C.A.C.	
Pvt. Ely, Henry W.	9th C.A.C.	
Pvt. Gardner, Carroll H.		Maj., Ord., U.S.A.
Pvt. Gould, Henry B.	Sgt. 9th C.A.C.	1st Lieut., U.S.G., 1st Lieut., Infy, O.R.C.
Pvt. Harrington, Arthur W.	9th C.A.C.	1st Lieut., San. Corps, U.S.A.
Pvt. Harris, W. Cary	1st Prov. Sgt. 7th Infy., 1st Lieut., N.Y.G., 1st M.G. Bn.	
Pvt. Hibbard, Ralph B.		
Pvt. Hoes, Ernest P.	1st Prov. 1st Lieut., Capt., Maj. 9th C.A.C.	
Pvt. Hooke, F. Howard	9th C.A.C., 1st Sgt. 71st Infy.	
Pvt. Hubbell, Paul R.	Sgt. 9th C.A.C.	
Pvt. Johnson, John Q. A.	1st Prov. Sgt. 9th C.A.C.	
Pvt. Jones, Warren Arthur	1st Prov.	
Pvt. King, S. Edward		2nd Lieut., Air Service, U.S.A.
Pvt. Langford, William		
Pvt. Lasher, Duncan M.	1st Prov. 9th C.A.C.	
Pvt. Lawrence, Arthur D.		
Pvt. Le Berron, John P.		
Pvt. Longacre, Frederick D.		
Pvt. Meyer, C. D.		
Pvt. Miner, Karl B.		
Pvt. Minor, Edwin L.		
Pvt. Myers, John M.		
Pvt. Pagan, John Jr.	1st Prov. Sgt. 9th C.D.C.	
Pvt. Parton, Arthur Taylor		

Digitized by Google

Pvt. Pitkin, Elliott M.	1st Prov. Sgt. 9th C.A.C.	
Pvt. Roberts, Arthur W.		
Pvt. See, Thomas H.	9th C.A.C.	
Pvt. Sheridan, Chris. J.	1st Prov.	
Pvt. Thayer, Stephen F.	1st Prov. Sgt., Mess Sgt. 9th C.A.C.	
Pvt. Tomlinson, David.		

RESERVE BATTERY

Adams, John Quincy (dec'd)		
Allen, Thomas, 2nd.		
Andrew, Charles L.		
Bacon, W. S. Clyde		
Banks, David	Maj. R.L., N.Y.N.G.	
Barstow, Charles L.	1st Prov.	
Belknap, Francis W.		
Bell, Alfred D.		
Bouvier, J. V., Jr.		
Pvt. Carpenter, Frederick W.		
Clarke, Charles E. F.		
Colton, Cecil F.		
D'Arcy, Fitzroy		58th Infy, Bn. Canadian Forces, wounded in front of Cambrai.
Fearing, William Henry		
Fuguet, Raymond de S		
Harmon, William S.		
Harnickell, Henri C.	1st Prov.	
Howland, Charles P.		
Hubbell, Mark H.		
Ingalls, Charles A.		
Keator, Frederic Rose	1st Prov.	
Keeler, Alton S.		
Lawrence, Robert B.		
McBarron, Francis J. (dec'd.)	1st Prov.	
McKee, Samuel		
Matthews, Edwin S.		
Montgomery, H. F.		
Mott, Lewis C.		
Parsons, Argyle R.		
Richardson, William H.		
Seaman, Louis Livingston		Maj., Med. Dept., U.S.A., Med. Dept., Belgian Army.
Shronnard, Horatio S.		
Smith, Reginald De Witt	1st Prov.	
Soule, Thatcher H.		
Sparrow, J. Everett		
Strong, John R.	1st Prov.	
Sturges, Edward E.		
Van Amringe, Guy		Capt., U.S.A.
Wakeman, W. F.		
Welch, William W.	1st Prov.	
Wharton, G. Mifflin	1st Prov.	

Digitized by Google

LIST OF OFFICERS AND MEN

who served in the Ninth Coast Artillery Corps, New York Guard, between October 8, 1917, and October 2, 1919,—showing rank and grades held in the Ninth, with some notes of subsequent State and National service. Names of those of equal rank are arranged alphabetically.

Digitized by Google

NINTH COAST ARTILLERY CORPS, NEW YORK GUARD

FIELD AND STAFF

Col. George W. Burleigh, Lieut. Col.	Lieut. Col., Asst. Inspector, Division Staff, Lieut. Col. J.A.Div., N.Y.G. Col., J.A.G., N.Y.N.G., Chev., Legion of Honor, France; Comm., Crown of Italy; C.S.C., N.Y.
Col. John Ross Delafield	Maj., Lieut. Col., Col., Ord., U.S.A. Chief of Bureau of Contract Adjustment, War Dept. D.S.M., U.S.; C.S.C., N.Y.
Lieut. Col. Edward C. Delafield, Major	
Maj. S. Edson Gage, Capt., v 2nd Co.	
Maj. William L. Hodges	Maj., 1st Prov. Regt., N.Y.G.
Maj. Ernest P. Hoes, 1st Lieut., Capt., v 10th Co.	
Maj. Leonhard A. Keyes, Capt., v 11th Co.	
Maj. Francis R. Stoddard	Maj., Lieut. Col., Ord., U.S.A. Member Board to Study Anti-aircraft Defense overseas. Lt. Col. Commdg. Art. Ser. Det., V. C. A., 1920-21.
Bvt. Maj. Robert H. Wilder, Capt.	Member Board to Study Anti-aircraft Defense overseas. Acting Artillery Engineer, 9th C.D.C.
Capt. Howard Duffield, D.D.	Chaplain
Capt. Franics G. Lloyd, (dec'd), Pvt., 1st Lieut., v 4th Co.	
Capt. Paul Gibert Thebaud	I.S.A.P.

Digitized by Google

Capt. Cabot Ward, 1st Lieut.	Maj., Lieut. Col., D.S.M. Member Board to Study Anti-aircraft Defense overseas. Served Gen. Pershing's Staff. Asst. Chief of Staff, G 2 S.O.S., A.E.F. Chev., Legion of Honor, France; D.C.M., British.
1st Lieut. Henry D. Brandyce, Sgt., v 4th Co.	Asst. I.S.A.P., Capt. I.S.A.P., 8th C.A.C.
1st Lieut. Henry E. Crawford, Pvt., Sgt., 2nd Lieut., v 7th Co.	
1st Lieut. Louis Hays Dos Passos, v 4th Co. & Sup. Co., Bn. Adjt.	Capt., Sup. Off., 9th C.D.C., N.Y.N.G.
1st Lieut. Arvine C. Leach, Pvt., Bn. Sgt. Maj., v 7th Co., Bn. Adjt.	Capt., 9th C.D.C.
1st Lieut. Harvey K. Lines, Bn. Adjt.	
1st Lieut. Julius C. Lorentzen, Pvt., Bn. Sup. Sgt., v 1st Co., v Sup. Co.	
1st Lieut. Leslie Messenger, Sgt., v 8th Co., Bn. Adjt.	
1st Lieut. J. G. Phelps Stokes, v 5th Co., Bn. Adjt.	Capt. Adjt., 9th C.D.C.
1st Lieut. Joseph F. Sulger, Sgt., Asst. I.S.A.P.	Capt., 9th C.D.C.
1st Lieut. H. Pushae Williams, v 12th Co., Bn. Adjt.	
2nd Lieut. T. J. Oakley Rhinelander, Pvt., Color Sgt., v 1st Co.	Maj., 9th C.D.C.
2nd Lieut. Robert Sedgwick (dec'd.) Pvt., Sup. Sgt., v 2nd Co., v 17th Co.	
2nd Lieut. Alex. R. Thompson, unassigned; v Supply Co.	

Digitized by Google

HEADQUARTERS COMPANY

Capt. Frank E. Davidson, Regt'l Adjt.,
Capt. Harry P. Gallaher, Regt'l Adjt.,
Corp., Sgt., v 1st Co., Bn. Sgt. Maj., Regt'l Sgt. Maj., 1st Lieut., Bn. Adjt.
Capt. Louis Watjen, Regt'l Adjt.,
1st Sgt., v 1st Co., 2nd Lieut., 1st Lieut.
2nd Lieut. Frank H. Houts, Band Leader
Regt'l Sgt. Maj. Henry E. Nason
Pvt., Sup. Sgt., v 2nd Co.
Regt'l Sgt. Maj. Arthur H. Pogson,
Pvt., Corp., v 3rd Co., Pvt. v Hdqs. Co.
Regt'l Sgt. Maj. Paul Tillinghast, Capt., 9th C.D.C., N.G.N.Y.
v 10th Co., Bn. Sgt. Maj.
Bn. Sgt. Maj. E. Morrell Hinkle,
Pvt., v 2nd Co.
Bn. Sgt. Maj. Thomas W. Mayer,
Pvt., Corp., v 8th Co.
Bn. Sgt. Maj. George T. Moon,
Pvt., Sgt., v 2nd Co.
Bn. Sgt. Maj. Arthur B. Park,
Pvt.
Bn. Sgt. Maj. James H. Pinckney, Jr.
Sgt., v 4th Co., Sup. Sgt.
Bn. Sgt. Maj. Thomas O'C. Sloane, Jr. Capt., 9th C.D.C.
Sgt., 1st Sgt., v 4th Co.
Color Sgt. James R. L. Kelly,
Pvt., Sgt., v San. Det.
Color Sgt. George F. Shrady
Ord. Sgt. Ray A. Nellis,
Pvt., v 3rd Co.
Ord. Sgt. Byron M. Smith
Sgt. Bugler William R. Smith,
Bugler, Pvt., v 1st Co.
Cook Joseph Pospisil
Pvt. Becklan, Arthur H.
Pvt. Miller, Leverett S.,
v 4th Co.
Pvt. Perry, Egbert B.,
v 1st Co.

Digitized by Google

Pvt. Sampson, Walter C.,
v 2nd Co.
Pvt. Velie, Alden
Asst. Band Leader, Michael Griffin, Jr.
Drum Maj. William C. Goodwin
Drum Maj. Kenneth A. Z. Woodward
Band Sgt. Maurice Burns,
Pvt.
Band Sgt. John Helmich,
Pvt., Corp.
Band Sgt. Howard J. Jump,
Pvt.
Band Sgt. Frank J. Keenan,
Pvt.
Band Sgt. James J. Kelly,
Pvt., Corp.
Band Sgt. Walter F. Siemers,
Pvt., Corp.
Band Corp. Albert C. Bender,
Pvt.
Band Corp. Howard Franz,
Pvt.
Band Corp. Alexander Glatz,
Pvt.
Band Corp. Maurice C. Gregoire,
Pvt.
Band Corp. Joseph Hardy,
Pvt.
Band Corp. Robert Huggins,
Pvt.
Band Corp. Edward A. Kearns,
Pvt.
Band Corp. Louis K. Luthy,
Pvt.
Band Corp. Elwood Renton,
Pvt.
Band Corp. Elmer R. Specht,
Pvt.
Pvt. Barclay, Alfred F.
Pvt. Bander, Arthur J.
Pvt. Bayley, George D.

Digitized by Google

Pvt. Bayley, John B.	
Pvt. Benjamin, Roy R.	U.S.A.
Pvt. Bennett, Frank	
Pvt. Birkins, Andrew C.	U.S.A.
Pvt. Brown, Charles	
Pvt. Bullis, Howard	
Pvt. Buono, Lewis	
Pvt. Burgess, Harry P.	
Pvt. Canova, John L.	
Pvt. Cronk, Harry J.	
Pvt. Crown, Charles	
Pvt. Dalton, Wilbert C.	
Pvt. Dickson, William	
Pvt. Eggers, William A.	
Pvt. Enright, Harry	
Pvt. Farman, James F.	
Pvt. Farretti, Francis	
Pvt. Fisher, Robert S. P.	
Pvt. Gambardella, Vincent M.	
Pvt. Gresse, Elmer	
Pvt. Hall, Matthew J.	
Pvt. Hoops, Theodore H.	
Pvt. Humm, Edward	
Pvt. Kearns, Raymond	
Pvt. Kelly, John	
Pvt. Klopp, Raymond	
Pvt. M'Aleer, Frank J.	
Pvt. M'Carthy, James H.	
Pvt. M'Tiernan, Michael	
Pvt. Mac Donald, Randall,	
Pvt. Magee, John	
Pvt. Merwin, Edward D.	
Pvt. Moran, Roland W.	
Pvt. Mueller, Ernest	
Pvt. Murphy, Harold J.	
Pvt. Poggi, Edward M.	
Pvt. Polito, Frank M.	
Pvt. Rosasco, August F.	
Pvt. Roycroft, Walter R.	
Pvt. Ruscica, Ernest	
Pvt. Sabatini, Ralph	

Digitized by Google

Pvt. Savage, Peter G.	
Pvt. Seegers, Arthur Adrian	U.S.A.
Pvt. Smith, Robert	
Pvt. Titlar, Walter S.	U.S.A.
Pvt. Tonking, Charles	U.S.A.
Pvt. Wheeler, George N.	
Pvt. Wise, Frank	

SUPPLY COMPANY

Capt. Louis Hays Dos Passos, 1st Lieut., Bn. Adjt., v Hdqs.	
Capt. Howard Thayer Kingsbury	Maj., Lieut. Col., J.A.G.
Capt. Walter L. Suydam, 2nd Lieut.	
2nd Lieut. Walter P. Plummer, Pvt., v 7th Co., Sgt., Bn. Sup. Sgt.	
2nd Lieut. Alexander R. Thompson, Sgt. Regtl. Historian (Dec'd.)	
Regt. Sup. Sgt. Raymond N. Hyde, 1st Sgt.	2nd Lieut., 9th C.D.C.
Bn. Sup. Sgt. John D. Champlin, Pvt., Sgt., v 8th Co.	
Bn. Sup. Sgt. John T. L. Doughty, Pvt., Corp., v 4th Co.	
Bn. Sup. Sgt. Julius C. Lorentzen, Pvt. 1st Co., v Hdqs. Co.	
Bn. Sup. Sgt. Joseph T. Mulligan, Pvt., Corp., Sgt., v 1st Co.	1st Lieut., 9th C.D.C.
Bn. Sup. Sgt. Charles A. Schubert, Pvt.	
Bn. Sup. Sgt. J. Edward Weld, Pvt.	
Sgt. Fred H. Conklin, Pvt., Corp.	
Sgt. A. Parker Nevin	
Sgt. J. Hart Welch, Pvt., Corp., v 7th Co.	
Corp. Henry J. Donaghy, Pvt.	

Digitized by Google

SANITARY DETACHMENT

Maj. Charles Alexander Clinton, Surgeon	1st Prov. Regt., N.Y.G.
Capt. John Winters Brannan, Asst.Surgeon, Pvt., v 2nd Co.	
Capt. Edwin B. Jenks, Asst.Surgeon, 1st Lieut., v 10th Co.	
Capt. Jerome Kingsbury, Asst.Surgeon,	U.S.A.
Capt. George R. Satterlee, Asst.Surgeon	
Capt. Harmon Smith, Asst.Surgeon	
Capt. Stafford B. Smith, Asst.Surgeon, (deceased), 1st Lieut.	Capt., M.C., U.S.A
1st Lieut. Sylvester B. Husch, Dental Surgeon, Pvt.	
Sgt. Frederick H. Buss, Pvt.	
Corp. Watson W. Eldridge, Pvt.	
Corp. Reginald W. Erskine	
Pvt. Aitchison, Albert G., Jr., v 12th Co.	
Pvt. Altman, Morris	
Pvt. Beatty, Colwell H.	U.S.N.R.
Pvt. Blenheim, Lawrence E.	
Pvt. Craig, David D.	
Pvt. Haupt, Albert B.	
Pvt. King, Guy B.	
Pvt. Mygatt, Frederick E. Jr.	
Pvt. Ostrander, James K. v 11th Co.	
Pvt. Phillips, Irwin	
Pvt. Smith, Elihu	
Pvt. Swainson, John A. Jr.	

Digitized by Google

FIRST COMPANY

Capt. Ethelbert I. Low, 2nd Lieut., 1st Lieut.	U.S.A.
Capt. John Moore Perry, v 4th Co.	1st Lieut., Ord., U.S.A.
Capt. Henry Sillcocks	
Capt. Louis Watjen, 1st Sgt., 2nd Lieut., 1st Lieut., v Hdqs. Co.	
1st Lieut. Alfred L. Lane, Pvt., 1st Sgt.	
1st Lieut. Alfred Irving Scott, v 5th Co.	
2nd Lieut. Gustav Schwab, Pvt., Corp., Sgt. Mess Sgt.	
1st Sgt. Reginald C. Knickerbocker, Sup. Sgt., v M.G.Co.	
1st Sgt. H. Boardman Spalding, Pvt., Corp., Sgt.	
Sgt. Howard K. Coolidge, 1st Sgt., v 11th Co.	
Sup. Sgt. Coleman E. Kissam, Pvt., Sgt.	
Sup. Sgt. Frederick T. Parsons,	Capt., Ord., U.S.A. Tank Div.
Mess Sgt. L. Alexander Mack, Sgt.	
Sgt. William C. Dornin, Corp.	
Sgt. Harry P. Gallaher, Corp., v Hdqs. Co.	
Sgt. Harold F. Haughton, Pvt., Corp.	1st Lieut., F.A., N.Y.G.
Sgt. Francis J. Hopson	
Sgt. John Clyde Oswald, Pvt., Corp.	Capt., 1st F.A., N.Y.G.
Sgt. Robert L. Pierrepont, Pvt., Corp.	
Sgt. Walter L. Richard, Corp., v 5th Co.	

Digitized by Google

Sgt. H. B. DeVilliers Schwab, Corp., 2nd Lieut., 1st Lieut., v 2nd Co.	Capt., 9th C.D.C.
Sgt. Edwin Tatham, Pvt., Corp.	
Sgt. Aubrey D. Vibbert, (Dec'd.), Corp.	
Sgt. William S. Winslow, Pvt., Corp.	
Corp. Alfred J. Chatillon,	Lieut., Chemical Warfare Service, U.S.A.
Corp. George L. Darte, Pvt.	Capt., Intelligence Dept., U.S.A.
Corp. Ormond V. Gould, Pvt.	Ensign, U.S.N.R.
Corp. R. Russell Requa, Pvt.	
Corp. William P. Slocowich	M.G.Co., 23rd Infy., N.Y.G.
Corp. Otto H. Sturenburg, Pvt.	
Corp. Francis K. Thayer, Pvt.	
Bugler Walter J. Connors	
Bugler Francis J. Dillon	
Bugler John Kaufman	
Bugler Egbert B. Perry, Pvt., v Hdqs.Co.	
Bugler Walter C. Sampson, Pvt., v Hdqs.Co.	
Bugler William Robert Smith, Pvt., v Hdqs.Co.	
Pvt. Adams, Dunbar W.	Sgt., 61st Pioneer Infy., C.O.T.S., Camp Gordon
Pvt. Adams, Samuel F. Jr.	
Pvt. Brennan, Walter J.	Ord Dept., U.S.A.
Pvt. Brugler, Revd. Charles E.	
Pvt. Cavanaugh, Clarence F.	2nd Lieut., 1st F.A., N.Y.G.
Pvt. Chapin, Robert S.	
Pvt. Chard, Standish	1st Lieut., 9th C.D.C.
Pvt. Connell, Franklin E.	
Pvt. Connolly, Thomas F. Jr.	U.S.A.
Pvt. Coryell, Charles M.	

Digitized by Google

Pvt. Cushman, William B.	Gas Defense Service, N.A.
Pvt. Davis, Patrick Henry	
Pvt. Davis William H., v M.G.Co.	War Dept. Claims Board
Pvt. DeBuys, Walter L.	
Pvt. Dewey, George A.	
Pvt. Dwight, Henry R.	M.G.Co.
Pvt. Emmett, Richard S.	
Pvt. Fleming, William J.	
Pvt. Fraser, Robert W.	
Pvt. Fried, Frederick E.	
Pvt. Gardiner, Bentley	
Pvt. Greenfield, Sidney	
Pvt. Grumman, Fred C.	
Pvt. Hanf, Phil L.	
Pvt. Harrold Bishop S., v M.G.Co.	Served in State Dept., Gas Defense Service, U.S.A.
Pvt. Hering, Francis R. W.	
Pvt. Huxtable, Frank L.	
Pvt. Johnson, Theodore M.	U.S.A.
Pvt. Kelsey, Horatio N.	
Pvt. Lewis, Charles A.	S. 1st Class, U.S.N.R.F., SS. Martha Washington
Pvt. Livingston, Herman Jr.	
Pvt. Lorentzen, Julius C. v Sup. Co., v Hdqs. Co., v F&S	
Pvt. McClure, Archibald, Jr.	New Jersey Militia
Pvt. McElroy, Robert McN.	
Pvt. Mackay, Angus, F.	
Pvt. Mackenzie, Herbert C.	
Pvt. Mann, Walter L.	
Pvt. Manning, Clarence A. v 2nd Co., v Hdqs. Co.	42nd Infy., Pvt., Div. Mil. Intelligence, Sgt. Military Intelligence Police
Pvt. Mott, Luther D.	
Pvt. Mulligan, Joseph T. v Sup. Co.	
Pvt. Parsons, Pierre H.	
Pvt. Porter, George H.	
Pvt. Reed, Dayton F.	
Pvt. Richardson, C. Tiffany	

Digitized by Google

Pvt. Robbins, Charles F.	
Pvt. Root, Louis D.	Govt. Service, Washington, D.C.
Pvt. Rose, George C.	
Pvt. Safford, Percy M.	Red Cross Ambulance Service, France
Pvt. Sainsbury, Noel	Ensign, U.S.N.R.F.
Pvt. Salt, Edwin E.	
Pvt. Sissinere, Henry C.	
Pvt. Spraker, John S.	
Pvt. Stewart, Charles E.	
Pvt. Story, Allen L.,	1st Lieut., Ord., U.S.A.
Pvt. Sutherland, William B.	
Pvt. Tallman, Lester	
Pvt. Tillinghast, Richard B.	
Pvt. Van Duyne, John	
Pvt. Wainwright, William P.	
Pvt. Wood, Fred H.	
Pvt. Yalden, Percy A., v M.G.Co.	

SECOND COMPANY

Capt. Victor M. Earle,	v 10th Co.
Capt. S. Edson Gage,	v F&S
Capt. John T. Harrison, 1st Lieut., Pvt. v 7th Co.	Lieut. (J.G.), U.S.N.R.F.
Capt. Henry B. de Villiers-Schwab, 1st Lieut., v 1st Co.	
1st Lieut. Douglas Campbell	Abroad on important private mission for United States
1st Lieut. William E. Lowther, Sgt., 2nd Lieut., v 4th Co.	
2nd Lieut. Wilfred W. Mack, 1st Sgt.	Capt., Q.M.C., U.S.A.
2nd Lieut. Walter Neumuller, Pvt., Corp., Sgt.	
2nd Lieut. John S. Rogers	Y.M.C.A. Sec'y., at front in France. Capt., Intelligence Service, U.S.A.
2nd Lieut. Francis I. Woodburn,	C.O.T., Camp Lee. 2nd Lieut., Infy., U.S.R.
1st Sgt. Lester H. Riley, (Dec'd.) Sgt.	

Digitized by Google

Sup. Sgt. Robert H. E. Elliott, Corp., Pvt.	
Sup. Sgt. Harvey E. Fisk, Jr. Corp.	Chief Yeoman, Ensign, U.S.N.R.F.
Sup. Sgt. Alvin M. Higgins, Pvt., Corp., Sgt.	
Sup. Sgt. Elmer R. Hollander,	v 5th Co.
Mess. Sgt. D. Chester Noyes, Sgt.	Lieut., Ord., U.S.A.
Mess. Sgt. A. Parker-Smith, Corp., Sgt.	
Sgt. William E. Evans, Pvt., Corp.	
Sgt. Henry H. Livingston, Pvt.	
Sgt. Orlando P. Metcalf, Corp.	2nd Lieut., 12th Infy., N.Y.G.
Sgt. Clarence E. Miner, Pvt., Corp.	
Sgt. George T. Moon, Jr. Pvt.	v Hdqs.Co.
Sgt. Charnley L. Murray	v M.G.Co.
Sgt. Harold V. Story, Corp.	Boatswains Mate, U.S.N.R.F.
Sgt. Oliver C. Wagstaff, Pvt., Corp.	
Corp. Hubert K. Burnam, Pvt.	
Corp. Walter Dutton, Pvt.	
Corp. James S. Laing, Pvt.	
Corp. Thomas E. Morford, Pvt.	
Corp. John H. Wilday, Pvt.	
Corp. Kenneth T. Wilson, Pvt.	
Mechanic George H. Stegmann, Pvt.	v M.G.Co.
Bugler, Frank Suss	

Digitized by Google

Pvt. Bawn, Thomas Nelson	v M.G.Co.
Pvt. Beekman, Henry R.	
Pvt. Blenus, Ason M.	
Pvt. Brannan, John W.	v San. Det.
Pvt. Broncato, John L.	
Pvt. Buchan, Alfred P.	
Pvt. Cahoone, Walter E.	
Pvt. Chambers, James F.	
Pvt. Cowan, Elton Tower	
Pvt. Criswell, Edgar C.	
Pvt. Dawson, Alfred B.	
Pvt. De Gague, Charles L. E.	Transferred to F.A.
Pvt. Delenge, Frank	
Pvt. Dos Passos, Cyril R.	
Pvt. Dunsmore, John Ward	Maj. Field Director, A.R.C., Ft. Ontario, Fox Hills, S.I.
Pvt. Elliott, Arthur F.	
Pvt. Flammer, Harold	
Pvt. Glover, Dawson C.	
Pvt. Golden, William M. Jr.	
Pvt. Goldstein, Mitchell	
Pvt. Gowdie, Robert J.	
Pvt. Gross, David R.	
Pvt. Hammond, Henry B.	
Pvt. Henry, Douglas	
Pvt. Hinkle, E. Morrell v Hdqs. Co.	
Pvt. Kitchen, Victor G.	
Pvt. Knight, William T.	
Pvt. Komorowski, Adam H.	
Pvt. Koop, Eugene J.	
Pvt. Lamison, Jason G.	
Pvt. Lundsten, Conrad W.	
Pvt. McCrum, Leslie M.,	v 10th Co.
Pvt. Mc Dermott, Paul V.	
Pvt. MacLean, George W.	
Pvt. Mc Nitt, Virgil V.	
Pvt. Madden, Harry J.	
Pvt. Maguire, John D.	
Pvt. Mallaby, Oliver W. (Dec'd.)	
Pvt. Mancuso, John L.	

Digitized by Google

Pvt. Mapes, Augustus Strong	
Pvt. Martin, Edward A.	
Pvt. Matt, John C.	
Pvt. Miller, Irving	
Pvt. Mirenda, Charles	
Pvt. Moscowitz, Irving	
Pvt. Murphy, Raymond J.	
Pvt. Nason, Henry E., v Hdqs. Co.	v Hdqs.Co.
Pvt. Nelson, Neill,	v 5th Co.
Pvt. Nichols, Charles G.	
Pvt. Norris, Beverly A.	
Pvt. Oakes, George W. O.	
Pvt. Oakley, William	
Pvt. Odom, Adolphus C.	
Pvt. Ormsbee, Thomas H.	
Pvt. Pastor, Cecil Clifford	
Pvt. Pike, Henry W.	U. S. Munitions Inspector
Pvt. Polacsek, Sidney	
Pvt. Portaro, Manuel L.	
Pvt. Raymond, Roland A. (Dec'd.)	
Pvt. Roods, Fred T.	
Pvt. Sandberg, Samuel	
Pvt. Sanfillippo, Vincent	
Pvt. Sharpe, Leonard W.	
Pvt. Soehl, John H.	
Pvt. Stoughton, Charles W.,	v 5th Co.
Pvt. Sutera, Frank	
Pvt. Sutherland, Frank	
Pvt. Swift, Frederick	
Pvt. Tappan, Archibald D.,	v M.G.Co.
Pvt. Tefft, Charles E.,	v 3rd Co.
Pvt. Tileston, Thomas, 2nd (Dec'd),	v 2nd Co.
Pvt. Tracy, Horace D.	
Pvt. Traver, Elsworth E.	
Pvt. Trenholm, Julian T.	
Pvt. Vicedomini, James Edward	U.S.A.
Pvt. Vickers, H. Mountague	Important Post with British War Mission
Pvt. Wardner, William K.	
Pvt. Webb, Wilbur, F.,	U.S.M.C.

Digitized by Google

Pvt. Weld, J. Edward, v Sup. Co.
Pvt. Werner, Carl Avery, v 12th Co. Sgt., 2nd Lieut., 1st Lieut., 13th C.A.C.

Pvt. White, Melvin L.
Pvt. Whitton, William H.
Pvt. Woodburn, Lewis H.
Pvt. Zazzali, Charles.

THIRD COMPANY

Capt. Orrin L. Brodie
Capt. Oscar W. G. Ericson,
Sgt., 1st Sgt., 2nd Lieut., 1st Lieut.
Capt. Arthur B. Ford,
1st Sgt., 1st Lieut.
1st Lieut. George S. Richards, Jr.
1st Lieut. Henry G. Steinmeyer,
Sgt., 1st Sgt.
2nd Lieut. Edmund L. Judson, Jr.,
Sgt., 1st Sgt.
1st Sgt. William McCleary,
Pvt., Corp., Sgt., Sup. Sgt.
Mess Sgt. Gerard Van der Zee,
Corp.
Sgt., Charles E. Funk,
Pvt., Corp.
Sgt. Edward L. Godfrey,
Corp.
Sgt. Clarence Luce Jr.
Sgt. George S. Scofield,
Pvt., Corp.
Sgt. J. Russell White, U. S. Gas Defense Service
Corp.
Corp. Walter F. Butcher,
Pvt.
Corp. Charles Forssell,
Pvt.
Corp. Georges Guilbert,
Pvt.
Corp. Edward W. Jackson,
Pvt.

Digitized by Google

Corp. Robert Magruder Jr., Pvt.	C.O.T.S., Camp Lee, Va.
Corp. Henry E. Mecke, Pvt.	
Corp. Arthur H. Pogson,	v Hdqs.Co.
Corp. William O. Schroeder, Pvt.	
Corp. William I. Seaman, Pvt.	
Corp. Frederick G. Stuart, Pvt.	
Corp. Charles W. Thorne,	
Bugler, Alphonse J. Blatz,	
Bugler, Walter F. Connor	
Bugler, Fred A. Hartmann	
Pvt. Baldwin, Ernest L.	
Pvt. Barker, Confred W.	
Pvt. Bayne, Howard R.	Board of Contract Adjustment, War Dept.
Pvt. Bettman, Roland D.	
Pvt. Bianca, James J.	
Pvt. Bongiorno, Charles	
Pvt. Braumiller, Max	
Pvt. Brill, Moe	
Pvt. Bugbird, Herbert C.	
Pvt. Conklin, Fred A.	
Pvt. Craig, Harold A.	
Pvt. Davidson, Lawrence J.	
Pvt. Demarest, Thomas M.	
Pvt. Donlan, Edward J.	Engineers, O.T.C., Ft. Slocum
Pvt. Dougherty, Henry H.	v M.G.Co.
Pvt. Drucker, Max Jr.	
Pvt. Durland, Robert C.	
Pvt. Dusold, Charles	
Pvt. Dusterdieck, Frederick, P. G.	
Pvt. Eaton, John P.	
Pvt. Gardner, Robert W.	
Pvt. Geary, William D.	
Pvt. Gillis, Clarence B.	
Pvt. Grasberger, Victorian V.	
Pvt. Gregory, Albert	

Digitized by Google

Pvt. Groschefsky, Frank	
Pvt. Haviland, William W.	
Pvt. Hohmann, Charles C.	
Pvt. Horn, Harry	
Pvt. Iverson, Iver H.	
Pvt. Kleinman, Abraham	
Pvt. Lee, Charles B.	
Pvt. Lemelson, Emanuel	
Pvt. Little, Harry W.	
Pvt. Lum, Morris A.	
Pvt. McDermott, William J.	Infy., U.S.A., Overseas
Pvt. Mc Dowell, William George	152nd Depot Brigade, U.S.A., Overseas
Pvt. McMaster, William S.	Corp., Co. I, 2nd Pioneer Infy., A.E.F.
Pvt. Mayer, August H.	
Pvt. Medway Albert E.	
Pvt. Muller, Carlos S.	
Pvt. Nellis, Ray A.	v Hdqs.Co.
Pvt. Nelson, Fred	
Pvt. Nyhan, Thomas F.	
Pvt. Offerjost, Arthur G.	
Pvt. Pannaralla, Alfred	
Pvt. Pape, Frederick	
Pvt. Patterson, George W.	
Pvt. Pearson, Hugh W.	
Pvt. Post, John A.	
Pvt. Reiz, Walter B.	
Pvt. Reynaud, Louis	Infy., U.S.N.A., Overseas
Pvt. Rice, Philip	
Pvt. Richards, George E.	v M.G.Co.
Pvt. Riegler, Emil W.	
Pvt. Roberts, Julian G.	Red Cross, Overseas Service
Pvt. Robinson, Wilson N.	U.S.N.R.F.
Pvt. Roemer, John A.	
Pvt. Sander, Seymour	
Pvt. Shattuck, Leslie C.	
Pvt. Siegel, Morris E.	
Pvt. Skinner, Edwin H.	
Pvt. Sorg, Charles T.	
Pvt. Sykes, Harry P.	

Digitized by Google

Pvt. Tefft, Charles E.	v 2nd Co.
Pvt. Theobald, Samuel, Jr.	
Pvt. Trussell, Arthur J.	
Pvt. Turpisch, Roland J.	
Pvt. Turpisch, Walter G.	
Pvt. Venn, Archibald C.R.	
Pvt. Viertel, Samuel	
Pvt. Walsh, Francis J.	
Pvt. Waring, Robert T.	Infy., U.S.N.A., Overseas
Pvt. Warth, Albert E.	
Pvt. Wildeman, Bernard	
Pvt. Williams, Arthur, Jr.	
Pvt. Wilson, James C.	
Pvt. Wilson, Thomas S.	

FOURTH COMPANY

Capt. Willoughby J. Kingsbury, 1st Sgt., 1st Lieut.	
Capt. John Moore Perry,	v 1st Co. 1st Lieut., Ord., U.S.A.
1st Lieut. Louis Hays Dos Passos,	v Sup. Co.
1st Lieut. William F. Howard, Pvt., Sgt., Sup. Sgt., 2nd Lieut.	
2nd Lieut. William E. Lowther, Sgt.	
2nd Lieut. Thomas O'C. Sloane, Jr. Sgt., 1st Sgt., Bn. Sgt. Maj.	v Hdqs.Co. Capt., 9th C.D.C.
1st Sgt. Ferdinand S. Crosley, Sgt., Mess Sgt.	
1st Sgt. Albert H. Hastorf, Jr.	Capt., Air Service, U.S.A.
Sup. Sgt. Henry D. Brandyce, Sgt. v Hdqs. Co., v F&S	Capt., I.S.A.P., 8th C.A.C.
Sup. Sgt. Safford A. Crummey, Corp.	
Sup. Sgt. James H. Pinckney	v Hdqs. Co. Transferred K Co., 7th Infy.
Mess Sgt. Robert B. W. Elliott, Corp., Sgt.	v 11th Co.
Sgt. William B. Cass, Pvt., Corp.	
Sgt. Louis C. Hengerer, Pvt., Corp.	2nd Lieut., 9th C.D.C.

Digitized by Google

Sgt. Charles A. Sherman, Pvt., Corp.	
Sgt. Thomas S. Strong, Pvt., Corp.	
Sgt. Thomas W. Tannock, Pvt., Corp.	
Sgt. Charles M. Ward Pvt., Corp.	
Corp. James C. Ayer, M.D., Pvt.	Capt., M.C., 9th C.D.C.
Corp. Frederick E. Church, Pvt.	2nd Lieut., 9th C. D. C.
Corp. John T. L. Doughty, Pvt.	v Sup. Co.
Corp. Danforth Geer, Jr., Pvt.	2nd Lieut., U.S.A. Gen'l Staff Operative Div.
Corp. George R. Hotaling, Pvt.	S.A.T.C.
Corp. Frank W. Nye, Pvt.	
Corp. Howard C. Renwick, Pvt.	
Corp. Alfred H. Wedge, Pvt.	
Corp. Louis B. Wilson, Pvt.	
Bugler, Gottlieb Dahl	
Musician, Jack Louis Heinzmann	
Bugler, Leslie Ellis, Pvt.	
Pvt. Barbour, William Rhinehart	
Pvt. Baukhage, Hilmar R.	54th U. S. Coast Arty., A.E.F., 2nd Lieut., U.S.F.A., Attached Gen'l Hdqs., G 2 D.
Pvt. Beekman, William F.	
Pvt. Bevin, Sidney	Capt., U.S.Eng., R.C.
Pvt. Biery, Walter Lawrence	
Pvt. Blanchet, Francis A.	
Pvt. Bliven, Henry C. Jr.	
Pvt. Bright, Robert A.	v 9th Co.
Pvt. Brown, Daniel J.	

Digitized by Google

Pvt. Butler, Edward K.	
Pvt. Chappell, Benjamin C.	
Pvt. Chellis, Robert Edgar	
Pvt. Clark, DeWitt H.	U.S.A.
Pvt. Coleman, David F.,	v 9th Co.
Pvt. Colton, Wendell P.,	v M.G.Co.
Pvt. Conway James	
Pvt. Cornelius, Charles O.	
Pvt. Crook, Edward K.	
Pvt. Decker, Willis Austen	
Pvt. Denton, Frank Douglas	
Pvt. Ellard, Charles H.	v 9th Co.
Pvt. Feucht, Henry Carl	
Pvt. Frank, Henry	
Pvt. Geissman, John Albert	
Pvt. Hendrickson, Russell G.	
Pvt. Higgins, Walter Mills	
Pvt. Howard, Harold	U. S. Transport Service
Pvt. Kene, Cornelius E.,	v M.G.Co.
Pvt. Kent, W. Irving	
Pvt. Koenig, Herbert Gustave	
Pvt. Langman, Henry W.	
Pvt. Lanigan, Walter J.	
Pvt. Léon, Albert J.	
Pvt. Lloyd, Francis G. (dec'd)	v Hdqs.Co., v 8th Co.
Pvt. Lutz, Frederick L.	
Pvt. McNamee, Terrence J.	
Pvt. Malcolm, Schubael D.	
Pvt. Miller, Leverett S.	v Hdqs.Co.
Pvt. Mohr, Edward H.	
Pvt. Mohr, Louis F.	
Pvt. Morgan, D. Percy	
Pvt. O'Tool, LeRoy S.	
Pvt. Reeves, George H.,	Sgt. 17th Co., Infy., U.S.C.O.T.S., Camp Gordon, Va.
Pvt. Rogers, Myric R.	
Pvt. Rossire, Paul B.	
Pvt. Sachtleben, Chester M.	U.S.M.C.
Pvt. Sand, Henry A. L.	
Pvt. Sherman, P. Tecumseh	
Pvt. Shope, Julian B.	

Digitized by Google

Pvt. Skinner, Alanson B.	
Pvt. Smith, George C., Jr.	Corp., E.O.C., U.S.A.
Pvt. Smith, Victor B.	
Pvt. Stehli, Emil J.	
Pvt. Sweet, James A.	
Pvt. Taber, James A.	
Pvt. Thompson, Arthur G.	
Pvt. Vanderlieth, Walter A.	
Pvt. Victor, Ernest G.,	v M.G.Co.
Pvt. Wood, Walter D.,	v 9th Co.

FIFTH COMPANY

Capt. Alfred I. Scott, 1st Lieut.	v 1st Co.
1st Lieut. Elmer R. Hollander, Sup. Sgt.	v 2nd Co.
1st Lieut. J.G. Phelps Stokes, Pvt., Sgt., 1st Sgt., 2nd Lieut	Capt., Adjt. 9th C.D.C.
2nd Lieut. Walter L. Richard, Sgt.	v 1st Co.
1st Sgt. Arthur F. J. Wheatley, Pvt., Corp., Sgt.	1st Lieut., 9th C.D.C.
Sup. Sgt. Eugene R. Verdin, Pvt., Sgt.	v 2nd Co.
Sup. Sgt. Louis E. Weed, Jr., Pvt.	U.S.A.
Sup. Sgt. William J. Burns, Pvt. Corp., Sgt., Mess Sgt.	2nd Lieut., 9th C.D.C.
Mess Sgt. Gardiner C. Delmonico, Pvt., Corp., Sgt.	
Mess Sgt. Thomas L. Elder, Pvt., Corp., Sgt.	
Sgt. Eugene Colvin, Pvt.	Tank Service, U.S.A., 1st Lieut., 9th C.D.C.
Sgt. Arthur Eldredge, Pvt.	
Sgt. Robert W. Lahm, Pvt.	
Sgt. John C. Scholtz, Pvt., Corp.	

Digitized by Google

Sgt. Sterling P. Story	2nd Lieut., M.T.C.
Corp. Andrew A. Bibby, Pvt.	Y.M.C.A., Overseas
Corp. Charles E. Case, Pvt.	
Corp. Pierpont Davis, Pvt.	
Corp. John H. Grote, Pvt.	
Corp. S. Russ Hollander, Pvt.	
Corp. Frederick P. McGlynn, Pvt.	
Corp. William G. Schindele, Pvt.	
Corp. Frederick H. Ward, Pvt.	
Bugler, Benjamin Schor	
Bugler, Leonard T. Smith, Pvt.	
Pvt. Allen, Charles S.	
Pvt. Allien, Frederick	
Pvt. Appell, Alfred H.	
Pvt. Aubeck, Peter	
Pvt. Barlow, Trevor M.	Y.M.C.A., Overseas
Pvt. Beckett, Harry C.	
Pvt. Billings, Arthur T.	
Pvt. Bradin, Percival H.	Transferred to 7th Infy.
Pvt. Brandt, George H.	
Pvt. Carnahan, Robert O.	
Pvt. Clarke, Harry E.	
Pvt. Couch, Harold	
Pvt. Croft, Percy G.	
Pvt. Cullen, Thomas F.	
Pvt. Darroch, Archibald	
Pvt. Donavan, Thomas A.	U.S.N.R.F.
Pvt. Drullard, Alfred B.	Quartermaster, Ensign, U.S.N.R.
Pvt. Durand, John S.	
Pvt. Dwining, James E.	Transferred to 7th Infy.
Pvt. Eckstrom, John	
Pvt. Fazio, Vincent L.	

Digitized by Google

Pvt. Fee, Harold	
Pvt. Forbes, James	
Pvt. Fox, Thomas J.	U.S.N.R.
Pvt. Frisch, Edmund E.	Army Intelligence Bureau
Pvt. Gear, Arthur H.	
Pvt. Greene, Nelson	
Pvt. Griffo, James	U.S.N.R.F.
Pvt. Harriman, Lewis G.	
Pvt. Havens, Donald	U.S.A.
Pvt. Hewlett, George	M.G.Co., 23rd Infy.
Pvt. Hickey, Alfred J.	U.S.N.R.
Pvt. Hovey, Robert Le C.	
Pvt. Jackson, Guert, Jr.	
Pvt. Johnson, Barney T.	
Pvt. Kearns, John J.	
Pvt. Kimball, Ingalls	
Pvt. Knowles, Lewis W.	
Pvt. Kriete, Henry J.	
Pvt. Latting, Emerson	War Trade Board, Washington, D.C.
Pvt. McDonald, Harrison	
Pvt. Martin, Frank B.	
Pvt. Miner, William P.	
Pvt. Moore, Herbert B.	
Pvt. Mottelay, Paul L.	
Pvt. Nelson, Albert	
Pvt. Nelson, Neill,	v 2nd Co.
Pvt. Nicolaus, Edward George	
Pvt. Nolan, Thomas S.	U.S.N.
Pvt. Nones, Hiram T.	U.S.A.
Pvt. Paynter, Herbert E.	U.S.N.R.
Pvt. Pommerer, William C.	Rgtl. Sup. Sgt., 2nd Lt., 69th Inf.
Pvt. Reardon, John	Pioneer Infy., U.S.A.
Pvt. Ruckert, Emil J.	
Pvt. St. John, Merle I.	
Pvt. Schmidt, Jerome J.	
Pvt. Schumacher, Herman D.	U.S.M.C.
Pvt. Sinnott, John J.	
Pvt. Smith, Harold C.	U.S.A.
Pvt. Stetson, Paul H.	
Pvt. Stoughton, Charles W.	v 2nd Co.
Pvt. Van Daalen, H. A. Statius	

Digitized by Google

Pvt. Wheatley, Ralph A.
Pvt. White, George J.
Pvt. Whitmore, Daniel W.
Pvt. Woods, Joseph A.

SIXTH COMPANY

Capt. George E. Cruse, Sgt. 1st Lieut.	U. S. Employment Service, Dept. of Labor
Capt. William Douglas Owens, 1st Sgt., 2nd Lieut., 1st Lieut.	
Capt. Barrett, P. Smith, 1st Lieut.	1st Lieut., Air Service, U.S.A., 1st Lieut., Capt., 71st Infy., U.S.A.
1st Lieut. Roger H. Williams, Pvt., Corp., Sgt., 1st Sgt.	
2nd Lieut. Earl H. Emmons, Corp., Sgt., 1st Sgt.	
1st Sgt. Walter F. Burroughs, Sgt.	
1st Sgt. Cyril Nast, Corp., Sgt.	U. S. Shipping Board, Camouflage Dept.
Sup. Sgt. Francis W. Hargitt, Pvt., Corp., Sgt.	
Sup. Sgt. Arthur V. Lyall, Pvt.	1st Lieut., N.Y.G.
Mess Sgt. Effingham N. Lawrence, Pvt.	1st Lieut., 1st F.A.
Mess Sgt. Harry H. Leonard, 1st Sgt.	U.S.A.
Sgt. George T. Brokaw, Corp.	2nd Lieut., 71st Infy.
Sgt. Jarvis P. Carter	v 12th Co.
Sgt. Ralph S. Dunne	
Sgt. William L. Somerville, Pvt., Corp.	
Sgt. Loudon Swinton, Corp.	Seaman, 1st Class, U.S.N. Aide for Information of Naval Intelligence.
Sgt. Howard F. Whisler, Pvt., Corp.	
Corp. Frank E. Bennett, Pvt.	

Digitized by Google

Corp. Albert M. Childs, Pvt.	
Corp. James H. Coleman, Pvt.	
Corp. Bernard J. J. Honecker, Pvt.	
Corp. Ernest A. Howe, Pvt.	
Corp. James T. McKenna, Pvt.	
Mechanic Charles W. Knight, Pvt.	U.S.A.
Bugler, Joseph San Pietro	
Bugler, Joseph Marchese	
Pvt. Anthony, Edward E.	
Pvt. Anthony, Norman T.	
Pvt. Aspinwall, Lane	
Pvt. Ball, Jack	
Pvt. Bandler, Harry S.	Reg. Sgt. Maj., 2nd Lieut., 22nd Engineers.
Pvt. Boynton, William H.	
Pvt. Bradbury, Charles B.	162nd Infy., U.S.A. Casual on Clerical Duty.
Pvt. Chapin, Louis Ward	
Pvt. Cleeland, Samuel H.	
Pvt. Colgate, Lathrop	Q.M.C., U.S.A., A.E.F.
Pvt. Core, Ernest	
Pvt. Cramer, Howard G.	
Pvt. Cummings, William H.	U.S.A.
Pvt. Daube, Albert	U.S.A.
Pvt. Delehant, John J.	
Pvt. Dunbar, Edwin L.	U.S.N.R.
Pvt. Edge, Charles N.	
Pvt. Ewen, John	
Pvt. Fass, Frederick	
Pvt. Farrington, Walter L.	Transferred to 47th Infy.
Pvt. Gallaher, Frank H.	
Pvt. Glaenzer, Richard B.	
Pvt. Goudreau, Charles E.	
Pvt. Greene, William	
Pvt. Green, Wilson	

Digitized by Google

Pvt. Gregory, Edward B.	
Pvt. Grueninger, William J.	
Pvt. Guibert, Paul H.	U.S.A.
Pvt. Haines, Edwin Irvine	
Pvt. Hall, Irving K.	
Pvt. Harris, Thomas R.	
Pvt. Hocart, William T.	U.S.N.
Pvt. Hodges, Edwin John	2nd Lieut., 71st Co., 18th Training Bn., 153rd Brigade, Camp Dix, U. S. Infy., Camps Upton, Custer and Lee,
Pvt. Jones, Charles L.	Y.M.C.A. in France with 3rd Bn., 6th Marines at Belleau and Soissons, with 15th Arty. Served in the trenches.
Pvt. Kavanagh, F. Edge	
Pvt. Kavanagh, Rupert E.	
Pvt. Keleher, Joseph J.	
Pvt. Knapp, John G.	
Pvt. Koehler, Percy W.	
Pvt. Kurrus, Adolph S.	
Pvt. Lee, Richard T.	
Pvt. Lee, Thurman	
Pvt. Luscomb, Harris T.	
Pvt. McClain, Joseph A.	
Pvt. McClenthen, Herrick	
Pvt. Mc Master, G. T.	Transferred to 7th Infy.
Pvt. Maclachlan, Archibald	
Pvt. Mackenzie, Alexander	U.S.A.
Pvt. Mason, Seth W.	
Pvt. Mudge, Frederick P.	
Pvt. Nixon, Russell T.	
Pvt. Rapp, Conrad	U.S.A.
Pvt. Richards, Harold C.	
Pvt. Romagna, Anthony J.	
Pvt. Rotchford, Harry F.	
Pvt. Schmitz, Anthony J.	
Pvt. Severance, H. Craig	
Pvt. Stevens, Richard T.	Went to Japan in connection with Ord. Dept., U.S.A.
Pvt. Taylor, Martin McF.	

Digitized by Google

Pvt. Trowbridge, Alexander B.	1st Lieut., assigned to Staff Inspector General, N.Y.G.
Pvt. Van Doren, Louis O.	
Pvt. Walter, Mc Night A.	
Pvt. Weir, Walter A.	U.S.A.
Pvt. Weiss, W. A.	U.S.A.
Pvt. Worsley, Frederick M.	

SEVENTH COMPANY

Capt. Theodore T. Lane, (Dec'd.)	
Ist Lieut. Henry E. Crawford Pvt., Sgt., 2nd Lieut.	v F&S
1st Lieut. John T. Harrison, v 2nd Co.	
2nd Lieut. William M. Smith, Pvt., Sgt., 1st Sgt.	
1st Sgt. Bert DeNovellis, Pvt., Sgt.	
1st Sgt. Herbert R. Peck, Pvt., Sup. Sgt.	
Sup. Sgt. Thomas Clark, Pvt., Corp.	
Mess Sgt. Charles C. Roberts, Pvt.	
Sgt. Richard Fenley Hunter, Pvt., Corp.	
Sgt. Morris L. Willets, Pvt.	
Corp. William Harman Brown, Jr., Pvt.	
Corp. Joseph C. Chase, Pvt.	Accredited Portrait Painter, A.E.F.
Corp. Edward H. Gilbert, Jr. Pvt.	
Corp. Charles F. Gould, Pvt.	Sergeant Major
Corp. Emile E. Rathgeber, Pvt.	
Corp. Frank H. Rossiter, Pvt.	Corp., Sgt., Co. B, 304th Bn., Tank Corps, U.S.A.

Digitized by Google

Corp. Nathaniel S. Seeley, Pvt.	
Corp. John D. Willis, Pvt.	
Bugler, Joseph Soldati	
Bugler, Terzo Soldati	
Musician, John A. Herrlein	
Pvt. Adenaw, Arthur P. F.	
Pvt. Bagnell, Robert H.	
Pvt. Bliss, Edward Carhart	
Pvt. Breck, George W. (dec'd)	
Pvt. Comings, Henry Emerson	
Pvt. DeForest, Norman F.	
Pvt. De Raismes, Robert E.	Export Dept., War Trade Board
Pvt. Duflocq, Milton F.	
Pvt. Fox, Walter D.	
Pvt. Hale, Herbert M.	
Pvt. Harwood, Wiliam B.	
Pvt. Hill, Jesse B.	
Pvt. Hoffman, William S.	
Pvt. Howard, LeRoy	
Pvt. Hunt, Ernest C.	
Pvt. Keiser, Louis	
Pvt. Kent, Charles N.	U. S. Service Construction Dept.
Pvt. Kenworthy, Howard	
Pvt. Kissam, Daniel B.	
Pvt. Knowles, William W.	2nd Lieut., 312th Labor Bn., Q.M.C., A.E.F.
Pvt. La Cour, Lauritz U.	
Pvt. Leach, Arvine C. v Hdqs. Co., F&S	
Pvt. Litchhult, Gilbert A. Hallis	
Pvt. McKnight, Arthur M.	
Pvt. McMahon, Jo. L. G.	
Pvt. Nash, Charles W.	
Pvt. Nelson, Robert M.	
Pvt. Nesmith, Charles A.	
Pvt. Nichols, Frederick W.	
Pvt. Oates, Edward F.	1st Lieut., Q.M.C., N.A., U.S.O.R.
Pvt. Paris, Rex Lee	
Pvt. Parsons, Robert E.	

Digitized by Google

Pvt. Paulding, Harold Bartlett	
Pvt. Plimpton, Charles G.	
Pvt. Roberts, Wm. G.	
Pvt. Rue, Edgar H.	
Pvt. Saunders, Charles H. T.	
Pvt. Schaefer, George, Jr.	
Pvt. Smith, Harry L.	
Pvt. Smith, Warren P.	
Pvt. Smith, William W.	
Pvt. Stanfield, Julius J.	
Pvt. Traub, John E.	
Pvt. Treadwell, Chauncey E.	
Pvt. Vieth, Henry P.	
Pvt. Wangler, Albert M.	1st Lieut., Gas Defense Div., U.S.A.
Pvt. Watson, George W., Jr.	
Pvt. Welch, James Hart v Sup. Co.	1st Lieut., Motor Transport Corps., U.S.A.
Pvt. Whipple, Julian V.	
Pvt. Williams, Remsen T.	
Pvt. Wooster, William H.	v M.G.Co.
Pvt. Zeller, Charles, Jr.	

EIGHTH COMPANY

Capt. Francis G. Lloyd (dec'd), Pvt., 1st Lieut.	v 4th Co., v F&S
Capt. Horace F. Pomeroy,	
Capt. Walter D. Teague, 1st Lieut.	
1st Lieut. John Messenger, 2nd Lieut.	
1st Sgt. Edward H. Moir, Sgt.	
1st Sgt. Dikran M. Sarkisian, Pvt., Sgt., Mess Sgt.	
1st Sgt. Ernest F. M. Wye, Pvt., Sgt., Sup. Sgt.	
Sup. Sgt. Frank J. Allen, Pvt., Sgt.	
Sup. Sgt. Hugh C. Guiler, Pvt., Sgt.	

Digitized by Google

Sup. Sgt. Frederic K. Seward,	
Sup. Sgt. Arthur Wright, Mess Sgt.	v 9th Co.
Sgt. Robert E. Heine, Pvt., Corp.	
Sgt. Everett P. Larkin, Pvt., Corp.	
Sgt. H. Raymond Mandeville, Pvt.	Corp., M.G.Co., 106th Infy., U.S.A.
Sgt. Leslie A. Messenger	
Corp. Everett R. Currier, Pvt.	v Hdqs. F&S
Corp. Gustave Ermish, Pvt.	U.S.A.
Corp. Leonard A. Hough, Pvt.	
Corp. L. Leland Locke, Pvt.	
Corp. Amos Oneroad, Pvt.	
Corp. Clifton A. Richards, Pvt., Bugler	
Corp. Henry W. Thoms, Pvt.	
Corp. Fred Wiehl, Pvt.	
Bugler Harold Burdick	
Bugler James Brady	
Pvt. Barlow, Robert T.	v 11th Co.
Pvt. Berwick, William E.	
Pvt. Brenneis, Alfred G.	
Pvt. Bruce, William W.	
Pvt. Bubico, Michael L.	
Pvt. Carr, Gene	
Pvt. Champlin, John D.	
Pvt. Childs, Jay L.	v Sup. Co.
Pvt. Chillion, Nicholas	
Pvt. Close, Charles C.	
Pvt. Coglan, Thomas D.	
Pvt. Colwell, Madison W.	
Pvt. Cox, Harold N.	

Digitized by Google

Pvt. Cutler, Frederick H. W.	
Pvt. De Angelo, Aristide	
Pvt. Dincken, Julius M.	
Pvt. Edwards, Harold M.	U.S.A.
Pvt. Edwards, Theodoric B.	U.S.A.
Pvt. Ellinger, Carlton D.	
Pvt. Ermish, Robert	U.S.A.
Pvt. Fancy, Clarence B.	
Pvt. Fullan, Henry C.	Transferred to 22nd Eng., N.Y.G.
Pvt. Gates, Albert N.	
Pvt. Goudy, Frederic T.	U.S.N.
Pvt. Gronbeck, Carl P.	
Pvt. Harriss, William L.	303rd Stevedore Regt., Q.M.C.
Pvt. Hasselriis, Casper H. W.	
Pvt. Haupt, Louis L.	
Pvt. Hernon, William S.	U.S.N.
Pvt. Hooper, William P.	
Pvt. Johnson, Charles W.	Corp., Battery F, 59th Heavy Field Arty., U.S.A.
Pvt. Jurashek, Francis	
Pvt. Kirchwey, Karl W.	
Pvt. Ledwith, Thomas P.	
Pvt. Levett, Benjamin A.	
Pvt. Lossaso, August	
Pvt. Mantle, Robert B.	
Pvt. Martens, William C.	
Pvt. Mayer, Thomas W.	v Hdqs. Co.
Pvt. Metz, George C.	
Pvt. Nieman, Jerome	
Pvt. Otto, Christian D.	
Pvt. Patterson, John T.	
Pvt. Roberts, Thomas, Jr.	
Pvt. Rountree, Herman B.	
Pvt. Serlen, Louis	U.S.A.
Pvt. Spielberger, Harry	
Pvt. Stowe, Lyman B.	
Pvt. Stuart, Max	
Pvt. Swain, Prescott L.	
Pvt. Taylor, William J.	
Pvt. Van Wagenen, Edward	
Pvt. Vose, Charles R.	
Pvt. Webster, Cornelius C.	v 9th Co.

Digitized by Google

Pvt. Wessels, Ernest	
Pvt. Whitmore, Gilman S.	U.S.A.
Pvt. Wiegmann, August	
Pvt. Wiegmann, Henry F.	
Pvt. Wilson, Edwin B.	
Pvt. Wolter, Karl William	
Pvt. Woodrough, John R.	
Pvt. Wylie, Robert J.	v M.G.Co.
Pvt. Zeron, Joseph B.	

NINTH COMPANY

Capt. Frederic K. Seward, Sgt., Sup. Sgt., 2nd Lieut.	v 8th Co.
1st Lieut. Charles H. Ellard, Pvt., Sgt., 1st Sgt., 2nd Lieut.	v 4th Co., Capt., 9th C.D.C.
2nd Lieut. Walter D. Wood, Pvt., Sgt., 1st Sgt.	v 4th Co., 1st Lieut., Capt., 9th C.D.C.
1st Sgt. Alger C. Gildersleeve, Pvt., Sgt.	1st Lieut., Capt., 9th C.D.C.
Sup. Sgt. John L. Beinert, Pvt., Corp.	
Mess Sgt. Frank A. Dickey, Pvt., Corp.	
Sgt. Thomas C. Cheney, Pvt.	
Sgt. George D. Dannenberg, Pvt., Corp.	2nd Lieut., 9th C.D.C.
Sgt. Beverly Keator,	v M.G.Co.
Corp. John J. Donohue, Pvt.	
Corp. Henry R. Frost, Pvt.	
Corp. Maximilian R. Knitel, Pvt.	
Corp. Charles J. Kunz, Pvt., Corp.	
Corp. Stalle Vinton, Pvt.	
Musician Henry Gimpoli	
Musician Harry E. Smith	
Pvt. Alberthus, Pearson J.	

Digitized by Google

Pvt. Alberts, Martin	
Pvt. Allen, William H., Jr.	
Pvt. Bowerstock, Fred H.	
Pvt. Bright, Robert A.	v 4th Co.
Pvt. Bruce, Murray	
Pvt. Charlton, Demetrius F.	
Pvt. Coleman, David F.	v 4th Co.
Pvt. Crane, Clarence A.	
Pvt. Daly, Charles	
Pvt. DeGraff, Forest A.	
Pvt. Deshere, Harvey	Ord. Dept., U.S.A.
Pvt. Deshere, Paul R.	
Pvt. Dickie, Douglas P.	
Pvt. Fernschild, William H.	Coast Arty., U.S.A.
Pvt. Fox, Edward B.	U.S.A.
Pvt. Grannis, John W.	
Pvt. Gremple, John W.	
Pvt. Gress, John H.	
Pvt. Hall, Gamble	
Pvt. Hammen. Otto J.	
Pvt. Henin, Benjamin L.	
Pvt. Hovey, LeRoy F., Jr.	A.R.C., Overseas
Pvt. Howe, Morgan R.	
Pvt. Hubbell, Allan H.	
Pvt. Hunt, Charles E.	
Pvt. Kells, Phillip A.	
Pvt. Kilburn, Henry T.	Naval Aviation Service
Pvt. Lare, William C.	
Pvt. Law, Thomas E.	
Pvt. Longfellow, Arthur H.	
Pvt. Mc Ardle, William H.	
Pvt. Mead, Edgar R.	
Pvt. Meyer, E. Pennington	
Pvt. Morse, Harold S.	
Pvt. Murray, Joseph N.	
Pvt. Nichols, Louis M.	Capt., Hdqs. Staff, Washington, D.C.
Pvt. Osborne, Gardner	
Pvt. Randolph, Frederick B.	
Pvt. Roantree, William F.	
Pvt. Robinson, Karl D.	
Pvt. Stanford, James H.	
Pvt. Tyson, Levering E.	

Digitized by Google

Pvt. Walker, John E.	
Pvt. Wall, William H.	
Pvt. Weaver, Ernest F.	
Pvt. Webster, Cornelius C.	v 8th Co.
Pvt. Weimert, Orson J.	
Pvt. Wheeler, Herbert H.	Aviation School, Columbia University
Pvt. Whitlock, Herbert P.	

TENTH COMPANY

Capt. Victor M. Earle, 1st Sgt., 1st Lieut.	v 1st Co.
Capt. Ernest P. Hoes, 1st Lieut.	v F&S
1st Lieut. Edwin B. Jenks, 2nd Lieut.	v San. Det.
1st Lieut. Paul Tillinghast, Bn. Sgt. Maj., Regt. Sgt. Maj., 2nd Lieut.	v Hdqs. Co., Capt., 9th C.D.C., N.Y.N.G.
2nd Lieut. Thomas P. Battelle, Pvt., Corp., Sgt.	
1st Sgt. Irving B. Easton, Pvt., Sgt.	
Sup. Sgt. Fraser Brown, Pvt., Sgt.	
Mess Sgt. Steven F. Thayer, Sgt.	
Sgt. Frank J. Gallagher, Pvt.	
Sgt. Henry B. Gould, Pvt.	
Sgt. John Q. A. Johnson, Pvt.	
Sgt. Elliott M. Pitkin, Pvt., Corp.	
Corp. Charles H. Arent, Pvt.	1st Lieut., Q.M.D., U.S.A.
Corp. Arthur T. Bodington, Pvt.	
Corp. William O. Duntze, Pvt.	1st Lieut., 9th C.D.C., N.Y.N.G.
Corp. F. Harry Green	

Digitized by Google

Corp. Carl J. Link, Pvt.	2nd Lieut., 9th C.D.C., N.Y.N.G.
Corp. Thomas J. McEntee, Pvt.	
Corp. Pelham C. Wilmerding, Pvt.	4th Pioneer Infy., N.A.
Bugler Henry V. Butler	
Bugler Gerald R. V. Fitzpatrick	
Bugler George W. A. Lowey	U.S.N.R.
Bugler Charles F. Krause	
Pvt. Anderson, Joseph C.	
Pvt. Armstrong, James R. C.	
Pvt. Becker, Walter	U.S.A.
Pvt. Beckerle, Lewis H.	
Pvt. Bidwell, Charles Kirtland, Jr.	U.S.A.
Pvt. Brown, Martin G.	
Pvt. Burns, Archibald P.	
Pvt. Calkins, Frank Race	v M.G.Co.
Pvt. Campkin, Alfred G.	
Pvt. Cannon, Frank I.	
Pvt. Carroll, Harry A. (dec'd)	
Pvt. Clyde, Dave R.	v M.G.Co.
Pvt. Cochrane, Herbert R.	U.S.A.
Pvt. Dawless, Frederick W.	U.S.N.R.
Pvt. Dodge, Francis M.	
Pvt. Dunne, Edward H.	
Pvt. Ely, Henry W.	
Pvt. Evans, Harold	
Pvt. Ewing, Roy Howard	
Pvt. Fallon, Warren G.	
Pvt. Franke, William H.	
Pvt. Gingras, John M.	U.S.A.
Pvt. Gutridge, Kenneth D.	
Pvt. Harrington, Arthur W.	v M.G.Co., Lieut., San. Corps., U.S.A.
Pvt. Helffrich, Alan B.	
Pvt. Helffrich, Charles B.	
Pvt. Helffrich, Lawrence S.	
Pvt. Helffrich, Ralph S.	
Pvt. Henderson, John	
Pvt. Henwood, Clifford S.	
Pvt. Herald, William J.	

Digitized by Google

Pvt. Herney, Harold	Q.M.D.
Pvt. Hoeffler, Raymond L.	U.S.A.
Pvt. Homan, Harry E.	U.S.A.
Pvt. Hooke, Frank Howard	Transferred Co. H, 71st Infy., 1st Sgt., Same
Pvt. Hourigan, Gilbert A.	U.S.A.
Pvt. Hubbell, Paul R.	
Pvt. Ingram, Redvers	
Pvt. Kelly, John J., Jr.	
Pvt. Knoche, George F.	
Pvt. Koster, Edward S.	
Pvt. Kraemer, Henry	
Pvt. Laderer, George	
Pvt. Lasher, Duncan M.	
Pvt. Latham, Harold L.	
Pvt. Leib, Charles	
Pvt. Little, William F.	U.S.N.R.
Pvt. Lyons, Frederick W.	
Pvt. Mc Avey, Thomas J.	
Pvt. McCrum, Leslie M.	v 2nd Co.
Pvt. Mc Sweeney, John J., Jr.	
Pvt. Marlowe, Jasper R.	v M.G.Co.
Pvt. Mulligan, Eugene J.	
Pvt. Murphy, Henry V.	
Pvt. Murphy, John Francis	
Pvt. Nesbitt, Edward D.	
Pvt. O'Keefe, John L.	
Pvt. Pagan, John, Jr.	U.S.N.R.
Pvt. Peters, Clarence I.	
Pvt. Reinthal, Edward J.	U.S.N.R.
Pvt. Root, Chester W.	
Pvt. Ruoff, Frederick William	
Pvt. Safarik, Stanley J.	
Pvt. Savoye, Ralph C.	U.S.A.
Pvt. Scanlon, William A.	
Pvt. Schaefer, Algernon S.	
Pvt. Scharman, Charles	
Pvt. Schubert, John H.	U.S.A.
Pvt. Schultz, William O.	
Pvt. See, Thomas H.	
Pvt. Stryker, Russell F.	
Pvt. Watt, William, Jr.	

Digitized by Google

ELEVENTH COMPANY

Capt. Leonhard A. Keyes,	v F&S
Capt. Burt Wilcox, Pvt., 1st Sgt., 2nd Lieut., 1st Lieut.	
1st Lieut. Howard K. Coolidge, 1st Sgt.	v 1st Co., v 12th Co.
1st Lieut. William I. Foley, Pvt., Corp., Sgt., 1st Sgt.	
2nd Lieut. William B. Cass, Pvt., Corp., Sgt.	v 4th Co.
1st Sgt. Nelson A. Conover, Pvt., Corp., Sgt.	
1st Sgt. Arthur H. Sanford, Pvt., Sgt., Sup. Sgt.	
Sup. Sgt. Stephen D. Marshall, Pvt., Corp., Sgt.	
Sgt. Graham Ashmead, Pvt.	
Sgt. Leslie G. Dougherty, Pvt.	U.S.A.
Sgt. Andrew J. Dunn, Pvt., Corp.	
Sgt. Hartland St. C. West, Pvt., Corp.	
Corp. Frank L. Drew, Pvt.	
Corp. Archibald B. Dunn, (dec'd) Pvt.	
Corp. Harry W. Hayes, Pvt.	
Corp. Rolland E. Member, Pvt.	
Corp. Leo J. Sullivan, Jr. Pvt.	
Corp. Renville E Yetman, Pvt.	
Mechanic Henry W. Knight, Pvt.	
Bugler John T. Brinkman	
Bugler Edwin J. Saville	
Pvt. Allen, William T.	

Digitized by Google

Pvt. Anderson, Stanley T.	
Pvt. Arbuckle, Alexander W.	
Pvt. Atkins, Rudolph F.	
Pvt. Bedell, Kenneth Harding	
Pvt. Benson Henry E.	
Pvt. Blomberg, Herman H.	U.S.M.C.
Pvt. Brady, James O.	v 8th Co.
Pvt. Bratsch. Robert	Lieut., Aviation, U.S.A.
Pvt. Burdick, Harrison R.	Transferred Squad A, Hdqs. 1st Brigade
Pvt. Decker, Melvin D., Jr.	G.O.T.C.
Pvt. DeMois, Vernon	
Pvt. Dickinson, Walter E.	
Pvt. Driscoll, Graham E.	G.O.T.C.
Pvt. Dunn, William	
Pvt. Elder, Daniel Nesbit	
Pvt. Ettlin, Charles F. D.	
Pvt. Firth, Godfrey Treadwell	
Pvt. Fulcher, Charles L.	
Pvt. Gaines, Gordon E.	Lieut., U.S.A.
Pvt. Gifford, Charles E.	
Pvt. Gonzales, Henry T.	
Pvt. Harris, Armond di R.	
Pvt. Hartley, Frederick A.	
Pvt. Hascall, Walter P.	
Pvt. Healey, William A.	
Pvt. Henckel, George C.	
Pvt. Hoes, John P.	
Pvt. Huber, Joseph	
Pvt. Hurley, John J., Jr.	U.S.N.R.
Pvt. Hylander, Edwin H.	
Pvt. Kahn, Leroy T.	
Pvt. Kennelly,James J.	
Pvt. Ketcham, Irving S.	
Pvt. Kinsella, William J.	
Pvt. Lewis, Henry M.	
Pvt. Loonie, Frank X.	
Pvt. Louderback, Jacob H.	
Pvt. Luedicke, Oscar B.	U.S.A.
Pvt. McCallum, Douglas J.	
Pvt. McDermott, Stephen P.	U.S.N.R.

Digitized by Google

Pvt. MacKay, William C.	
Pvt. Mc Knight, Andrew P.	
Pvt. Mc Nulty, Daniel J.	
Pvt. Mc Sweeney, Daniel	
Pvt. Maier, William	
Pvt. Montanye, John C.	
Pvt. Mooney, John F.	
Pvt. Moorrees, J. P. G.	U. S. Service
Pvt. Morrison, Augustus F.	
Pvt. Nelson, Edmund	
Pvt. Nolan, Charles A.	
Pvt. Ogden, Ferdinand E.	
Pvt. Orson, William H.	Lieut., U.S.A.
Pvt. Ostrander, James K.	v San. Det.
Pvt. Pehrson, Leslie O.	
Pvt. Redenhausen, Paul	U.S.A.
Pvt. St. George, George B. B.	U.S.N.
Pvt. Sedar, Oscar J.	
Pvt. Sieber, Lawrence	
Pvt. Simpson, Malcolm D.	v 12th Co.
Pvt. Slater, Fred S.	
Pvt. Smith, Thomas H.	
Pvt. Snyder, John S.	
Pvt. Styles, Frederick E.	
Pvt. Thomas, Eldridge E.	Transferred Squad A
Pvt. Tilley, Clifford N.	
Pvt. Timmans, Leo J.	
Pvt. Wallace, William H.	Training School, Princeton University
Pvt. White, George W.	
Pvt. Williams, Walter H.	
Pvt. Wilson, Milton C.	
Pvt. Wilson, William H.	

TWELFTH COMPANY

Capt. H. King Coolidge, 1st sgt., 1st Lieut.	v 11th Co., v 1st Co.
Capt. H. Pushae Williams, 1st Lieut.	v F&S
1st Lieut. Jarvis P. Carter, Sgt., 2nd Lieut.	v 6th Co.

Digitized by Google

1st Lieut. Malcolm D. Simpson, Pvt., 1st Sgt., 2nd Lieut.	v 11th Co.
2nd Lieut. Edward L. McNicol, Pvt., Sup. Sgt., 1st Sgt.	
1st Sgt. Clarence M. Britton, Pvt., Sgt., Mess Sgt.	
1st Sgt. Archer M. Vandevoort, Pvt., Corp.	
Sup. Sgt. William J. Young, Jr. Pvt., Corp., Sgt.	
Sgt. Edward H. Austen, Pvt., Corp.	
Sgt. Romeo B. Manowitch, Pvt., Corp.	
Sgt. George B. Nolan, Pvt., Corp.	
Corp. James F. Convery, Pvt.	
Corp. Lester M. Harvey, Pvt.	
Corp. Joseph Hines, Pvt.	
Corp. Edwin E. Jaeger, Pvt.	
Corp. Peter F. Martens, Pvt.	U. S. Forces
Corp. James J. Mooney, Pvt.	
Corp. Francis A. Reilly, Pvt.	
Corp. Joseph B. Richards, Pvt.	
Bugler Daniel R. Bowen	
Bugler John J. Cairns	
Bugler Frank A. Lagattuta	
Pvt. Aitcheson, Albert G., Jr.	v San. Det.
Pvt. Albert, Arthur F.	
Pvt. Allen, David E.	
Pvt. Arbuckle, William DeWitt	
Pvt. Bailey, William H., Jr.	
Pvt. Baldanza, Giovanni B.	

Digitized by Google

Pvt. Barrett, Fred W.	
Pvt. Barrett, Joseph F.	
Pvt. Becker, Walter	
Pvt. Benson, Oscar E.	
Pvt. Bevan, William L.	
Pvt. Bleiler, Charles M.	
Pvt. Bostrom, Walter T.	
Pvt. Brady, Frank J.	
Pvt. Bruckman, Rudolph	
Pvt. Burgess, Don Carlos	
Pvt. Burke, William F.	
Pvt. Chamberlain, Arthur W.	
Pvt. Christopher, Henry Francis	
Pvt. Crawford, Floyd	
Pvt. Curtin, John J.	
Pvt. Curtin, William J.	
Pvt. Davie, Robert E.	
Pvt. Davis, Frederick J.	
Pvt. Dohrenwend, Charles J.	
Pvt. Dove, Adam	
Pvt. Feigel, Martin H.	
Pvt. Feigel, Philip H.	
Pvt. Ford, James	
Pvt. Gillen, Thomas J.	
Pvt. Green, George	
Pvt. Gurney, Virgil	
Pvt. Halloway, William E., Jr.	Naval Aviation Service
Pvt. Harrison, Wiliam J.	
Pvt. Helmicke, August L.	
Pvt. Hines, Edward R.	
Pvt. Horan, Delancey N.	
Pvt. Hose, Joseph G.	
Pvt. Hunele, Harold F.	
Pvt. Hynd, Alexander H.	U.S.N.
Pvt. Kallenbeck, John J.	
Pvt. Keely, Howard R.	U. S. Forces
Pvt. Kelly, Howard D.	
Pvt. Kinnier, Leroy H.	
Pvt. Knight, Frederick S.	U.S.A.
Pvt. Lahr, Herman F.	
Pvt. Lalicata, Charles	

Digitized by Google

Pvt. Lemon, David B., Jr.	
Pvt. Liddle, Frederick O.	v M.G.Co.
Pvt. Lowell, Francis X.	U.S.N.R.
Pvt. Ludwig, George	
Pvt. McGinness, William A.	
Pvt. McLean, William	
Pvt. Mathews, George J. K.	
Pvt. Moffat, Beverly P.	
Pvt. Mortell, Vincent P.	U.S.N.R.
Pvt. Naughton, Cornelius A.	
Pvt. Nolan, Arthur	
Pvt. Pratt, George H.	
Pvt. Rhodes, Frank	
Pvt. Robbins, Harry W.	
Pvt. Schroeder, Raymond W.	
Pvt. Sniffen, Philip Leslie	
Pvt. Tietz, Richard H.	
Pvt. Voelker, Walter G.	
Pvt. Wardrop, Robert K.	U.S.A.
Pvt. Wheeler, Albert E.	
Pvt. Wiley, Thomas G.	
Pvt. Wilkinson, Walter C .	
Pvt. Wilson, Alanson H. R.	
Pvt. Wood, John J.	v M.G.Co.

MACHINE GUN COMPANY

Capt. Charnley L. Murray, Sgt., 2nd Lieut., 1st Lieut.	v 2nd Co.
1st Lieut. Bernard Callingham, Corp., 2nd Lieut.	v 2nd Co.
1st Lieut. William H. Young, Pvt., Sgt., 1st Sgt.	F.A.T.C., Camp Zachary Taylor
2nd Lieut. Reginald C. Knickerbocker, 1st Sgt.	v 1st Co., 1st Lieut., F.A., Capt., 1st M.G. Bn., N.Y.G.
2nd Lieut. Lester F. Scott, Pvt., Corp., Sgt., 1st Sgt.	
1st Sgt. Frederick Wildnauer, Pvt., Corp., Sgt.	
Sup. Sgt. Archibald D. Tappan, Corp.	v 2nd Co.

Digitized by Google

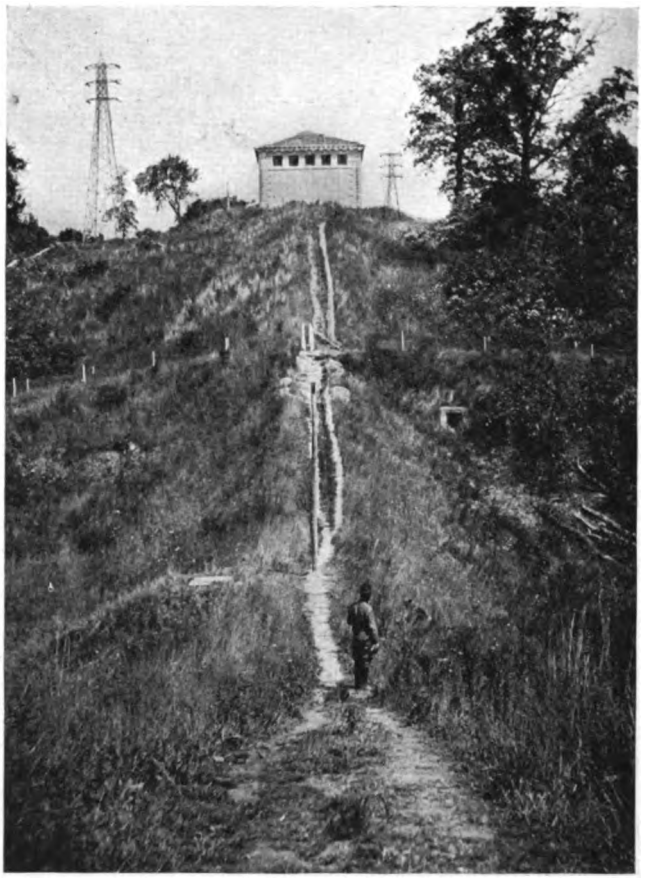
Sup. Sgt. Percy A. Yalden, Pvt.	v 1st Co.
Sgt. Beverly Keator, Pvt.	v 9th Co.
Sgt. William H. Mook, Pvt., Corp.	
Sgt. Louis A. Snyder, Pvt., Corp.	
Sgt. Robert J. Wylie, Pvt., Corp.	v 8th Co.
Corp. George W. Bricka, Pvt.	
Corp. Travis H. Hoke, Pvt.	
Corp. Franklin W. Palmer, Pvt.	
Corp. George E. Richards, Pvt.	v 3rd Co.
Corp. James J. Ritchie, Pvt.	
Bugler William B. Krass	
Bugler George W. B. Neusser	
Bugler James Tenny	
Pvt. Allen, Douglas T.	
Pvt. Axford, Clinton B.	
Pvt. Bassford, Abraham, 3rd	v 11th
Pvt. Bawn, Thomas N.	v 2nd Co.
Pvt. Besley, Charles H.	
Pvt. Boyd, Reginald P.	
Pvt. Breitweiser, William P.	
Pvt. Calkins, Frank R.	v 10th Co.
Pvt. Clark, Alvin D.	
Pvt. Clune, Richard L.	
Pvt. Clyde, David R.	v 10th Co.
Pvt. Colton, Wendell P.	
Pvt. Coupland, Albert J.	
Pvt. Cowan, Harold G.	
Pvt. Davis, William H.	v 1st Co.
Pvt. Delafield, Maturin L.	
Pvt. Dobler, Hugh F.	
Pvt. Dougherty, Henry H.	v 3rd Co.

Digitized by Google

Pvt. Elfast, Henry B.	
Pvt. Elliott, William M.	
Pvt. Emmet, Richard S.	v 1st Co.
Pvt. Geoffrey, James L.	
Pvt. Harrington, Arthur W.	v 10th Co., Lieut., San. Corps., U.S.A.
Pvt. Harrold, Bishop S.	v 1st Co., State Dept. Service
Pvt. Hilton, Percy K. (dec'd.)	
Pvt. Hosking, James C.	
Pvt. Huber, Eugene	
Pvt. Kelly, Robert E., Jr.	
Pvt. Kene, Cornelius E.	v 4th Co.
Pvt. Lanning, Wilton F.	
Pvt. Lewis, James M.	
Pvt. Lewis, Merlin C.	
Pvt. Liddle, Frederick O.	v 12th Co.
Pvt. Lisle, Charles W., Jr.	
Pvt. Long, Richard H.	
Pvt. Lowde, George M.	
Pvt. Lund, Edward C.	
Pvt. McArthur, Charles J.	
Pvt. McDaniels, Clarence	
Pvt. Marlowe, Jasper R.	v 10th Co., U.S.N.
Pvt. Mathews, Edward J.	
Pvt. Mitchell, William C.	
Pvt. Murray, Ernest M.	Ch. Boatswain's Mate, U.S.N.R.
Pvt. Murray, Guy T.	
Pvt. Nadel, Frank	
Pvt. Nather, Waldemar	
Pvt. Penny, Carl P.	
Pvt. Perrine, Alfred J.	
Pvt. Plant, Edwin S.	
Pvt. Rebhan, Joseph H. B.	
Pvt. Roe, Henry C.	
Pvt. Russell, Downs N.	
Pvt. Skinner, Kenneth	
Pvt. Sohst, Rudolph E.	
Pvt. Stansbury, Robert I.	
Pvt. Stegmann, George H.	v 2nd Co.
Pvt. Strang, William H.	
Pvt. Swift, George F.	

Digitized by Google

Pvt. Sypher, William H.
Pvt. Talmage, John F.
Pvt. Thackaberry, Harold L.
Pvt. Tuthill, Paul M.
Pvt. Van Houten, Charles M.
Pvt. Vietor, Ernest G. v 4th Co.
Pvt. Volck, Howard C.
Pvt. Wilder, Frank
Pvt. Winquist, A. Douglas
Pvt. Wood, John J. v 12th Co.
Pvt. Wooster, William H. v 7th Co.
Pvt. Young, Ralph L.



ALONG THE AQUEDUCT

Digitized by Google

MAJOR HOWLAND PELL AND CAPTAIN THEODORE T. LANE.

AT HEADQUARTERS OF COMPANY B

Digitized by Google

MAJOR GENERAL JOHN F. O'RYAN

Digitized by Google

GOVERNOR ALFRED E. SMITH

Digitized by Google

ADJUTANT GENERAL BERRY

ADJUTANT GENERAL STOTESBURY

ASST. ADJ. GENERAL WESTCOTT

ADJUTANT GENERAL SHERRILL

Digitized by Google

MILITARY RECORDS

OF

OFFICERS

who served in the Field, Staff and Provisional Batteries of the VETERAN CORPS OF ARTILLERY, S. N. Y., between April 6 and October 8, 1917; and in the NINTH COAST ARTILLERY CORPS, N. Y. G., between October 8, 1917 and October 2, 1919.

Compiled from data supplied by the officers themselves.

These records are arranged in alphabetical order..

Digitized by Google

CAPT. JOHN WINTERS BRANNAN

1ST LIEUT. HENRY D. BRANDYCE

2ND LIEUT. THOMAS P. BATTELLE

Digitized by Google

2nd LIEUTENANT ELECTUS T. BACKUS

Enlisted V. C. A., November 4, 1914.
Corporal, March 26, 1917, 4th Battery.
Sergeant, April 26, 1917.
2nd Lieutenant, July 23, 1917.
1st Prov. Reg., 2nd Lieutenant, Co. B, Kensico, August 7 to 15.
Captaincy granted Aberdeen Proving Grounds, but commission never issued.

2nd LIEUTENANT THOMAS PARKMAN BATTELLE

Enlisted 9th C. A. C., January 9, 1918, 10th Company.
Corporal, April 27, 1918.
Sergeant, July 16, 1918.
2nd Lieutenant, January 20, 1919.

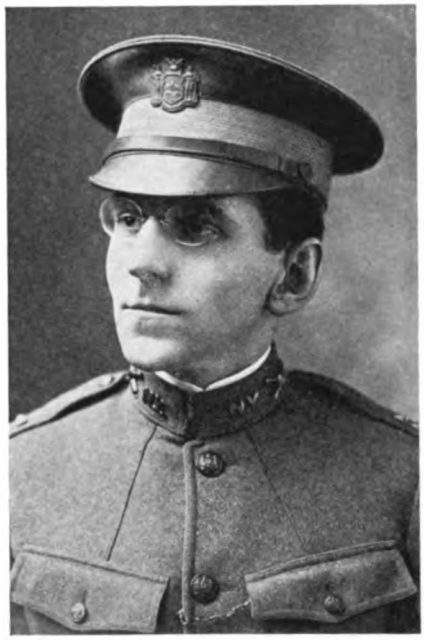
CAPTAIN HENRY D. BRANDYCE

Enlisted V. C. A., May 2, 1917, 4th Battery.
Corporal, August 7, 1917.
1st Prov. Reg., Corporal, Co. B, Kensico (Post 11), August 7 to 18; Sergeant, Co. Hq., August 19 to September 15.
Sergeant (V. C. A.), September 25, 1917.
Transferred to 9th C. A. C., N. Y. G., October 8, 1917, 4th Co.
Supply Sergeant, December 28, 1917.
Battalion Sergeant Major, February 15, 1918, 1st Battalion.
1st Lieutenant, Asst. I. S. A. P., March 15, 1918.
Detailed Asst. Range Officer, Navy Rifle Range, Peekskill, N. Y., June 1, 1918.
Captain, I. S. A. P., 8th C. A. C., December 4, 1918.
Captain, R. L., September 24, 1919.

CAPTAIN JOHN W. BRANNAN, M. C.

Enlisted, V. C. A., April 25, 1917, 2nd Battery.
1st Prov. Reg., Private, Co. A, August 7 to 14.
Transferred to 9th C. A. C., October 8, 1917.
Captain, M. C., N. Y. G., December 18, 1918; assigned to 9th C. A. C.

Digitized by Google



CAPT. ORRIN L. BRODIE

Digitized by Google

CAPTAIN ORRIN LAWRENCE BRODIE

Training: Civil Engineer and Plattsburg and Eng. Officers' Trg. Bn., N. Y. City.
Enlisted, V. C. A., April 9, 1917, 3rd Battery.
2nd Lieutenant, April 23, 1917, commanding 3rd Battery.
Captain, July 2, 1917.
1st Prov. Reg., Commanding Co. A, September 5th to 14th, 1917.
Captain, 9th C. A. C., October 8, 1917.
Captain, R. L., N. Y. G., March 26, 1918.
Ordered to duty Engineer at War Plant, Alabama; on this duty until July, 1919.

COLONEL GEORGE WILLIAM BURLEIGH

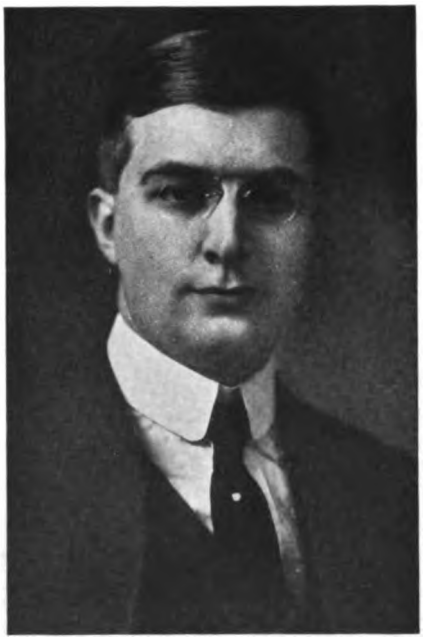
Enlisted, V. C. A., August 10, 1915.
Corporal, March 12, 1917.
Sergeant, April 19, 1917.
1st Lieutenant, Battalion Adjutant, April 30, 1917.
Rendered service to the **1st Prov. Reg.,** N. Y. G., guarding N. Y. City Water Supply, August-September, 1917.
Captain, September 6, 1917.
Aide to General Commanding Military Forces, New York State.
Transferred to 9th C. A. C., October 8, 1917.
Lieutenant-Colonel, October 18, 1917.
Colonel, September 19, 1918, commanding 9th C. A. C.
Colonel, R. L., N. Y. G., October 2, 1919 (at own request).
Lieutenant-Colonel, I. G.'s Dept. (Staff Corps and Depts.), N. Y. G., October 7, 1919, and assigned Asst. Inspecter Divn.
Lieutenant-Colonel, J. A. G.'s Dept., N. Y. G., March 23, 1920, assigned as Judge Advocate, Division, N. Y. G.
Colonel, J. A. G.'s Dept. (Staff Corps and Depts.), N. Y. G., January 18, 1921.
Aide on Staff of Governor (in addition to other duties), February 1, 1921.
Colonel, J. A. G.'s Dept., N. Y. N. G., date of rank, January, 18, 1921.
Chevalier, Legion d'Honneur (French Republic), April 11, 1921 (for services rendered with United States in civilian and military capacity—decoration conferred by M. René Viviani).
Conspicuous Service Cross, N. Y. State.
Commendatore, Crown of Italy, December, 1921.

(For photograph, see page 176)

Digitized by Google

1ST LIEUT. DOUGLAS CAMPBELL

1ST LIEUT. BERNARD CALLINGHAM



1ST LIEUT. JARVIS P. CARTER

2ND LIEUT. WILLIAM B. CASS

Digitized by Google

1st LIEUTENANT BERNARD CALLINGHAM

Enlisted, V. C. A., April 18, 1917, 2nd Battery.
1st Prov. Reg.,Co. A, August 7 to 9; Co. B, Elmsford and Kensico, August 10 to 13; 17 to 21; 25 to 29.
Enlisted, 9th C. A. C., November 19, 1917.
Corporal, April 29, 1918.
2nd Lieutenant, May 31, 1918.
1st Lieutenant, January 20, 1919.

1st LIEUTENANT DOUGLAS CAMPBELL

Enlisted Troop K, 1st U. S. Vol. Cav. (Roosevelt's Rough Riders), June 29, 1898.
Enlisted, V. C. A., May 20, 1910.
Corporal, 2nd Battery, May 17, 1917.
Sergeant, May 31, 1917.
1st Lieutenant, July 16, 1917.
1st Prov. Reg.. Co. B, Kensico, August 21 to 23; commdg. Co. B, August 24 to 30.
1st Lieutenant, 9th C. A. C., October 8, 1917.

1st LIEUTENANT JARVIS P. CARTER

Enlisted, V. C. A., June 9, 1917.
Corporal, July 12, 1917.
Sergeant, September 3, 1917.
1st Prov. Reg.,Corporal, Co. A, August 7 to 22; Co. B, August 23 to 25 (Acting Sergeant, from August 23).
Transferred to 9th C. A. C., October 8, 1917.
2nd Lieutenant, January 26, 1918.
1st Lieutenant, July 19, 1918.

2nd LIEUTENANT WILLIAM BARRETT CASS

Enlisted, V. C. A., May 7, 1917, 4th Battery.
1st Prov. Reg.,Co. B, Kensico, September 11 to 12.
Transferred to 9th C. A. C., October 8, 1917.
Corporal, 4th Co., November 26, 1917.
Sergeant, August 21, 1918.
2nd Lieutenant, 11th Co., March 14, 1919.
2nd Lieutenant, R. L., N. Y. G., February 25, 1920. Editor, "9th Coast News."
Range Officer, Caldwell, N. J., August 18 to September 1, 1919.
On 9th C. A. C. Rifle Team, 1919.

Digitized by Google

CAPT. ARTHUR T. CHESTER

MAJ. CHARLES ALEXANDER CLINTON

CAPT. H. KING COOLIDGE

Digitized by Google

MAJOR CHARLES A. CLINTON, M. C.

Enlisted, V. C. A., June, 1917, 4th Battery.
Detailed to assist Dr. J. Kingsbury.
1st Prov. Reg., as 1st Lieutenant, Asst. Surgeon, with Co. B, Elmsford, August 7 to 21 and 24 to 26; then ordered to New Platz, N. Y., Hq. 2nd Battalion, August 26 to September 30.
Captain M. C., assigned to 9th C. A. C., November 8, 1917.
Major M. C., assigned to 9th C. A. C., November 23, 1917.
Detailed to **1st Prov. Reg.**, as Acting Chief Medical Officer, August 1 to September 15, 1918; Battalion Medical Officer, September 15 to October; Commdg. Field Hospital No. 2, Ossining to December 31, 1918 .
Surgeon, 9th C. A. C., to October 2, 1919.
Surgeon, 9th C. D. C., N. Y. N. G., at present.

CAPTAIN HOWARD KING COOLIDGE

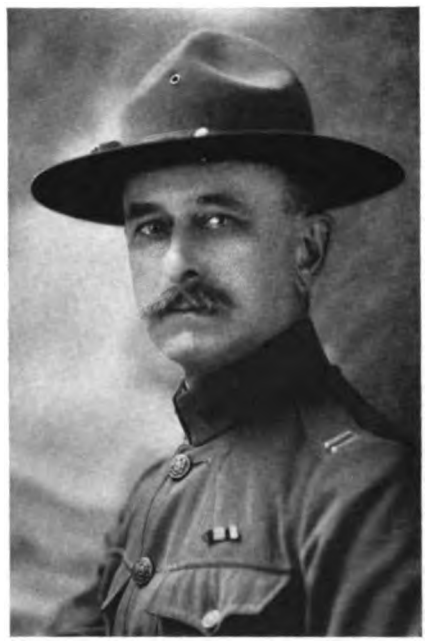
Enlisted, Naval Militia, S. N. Y., May 15, 1895. Gun Captain, May 15, 1899.
Enlisted, U. S. Navy, Spanish War, April 26, 1898. Gunners Mate, April 26, 1898
Hon. Discharge, September 2, 1898.
Enlisted, V. C. A., January 26, 1917.
Corporal, 1st Battery, June 7, 1917.
1st Prov. Reg., Corporal, Co. A, August 7 to 21.
Transferred to 9th C. A. C., October 8, 1917.
Sergeant, 1st Co., November 19, 1917.
1st Lieutenant, 11th Co., January 18, 1918.
Captain, commanding 12th Co., August 28, 1918.
Commission Approved 1st Lieutenant, A. G. O., U. S. A., October 31, 1918, but not accepted account of Armistice.
Captain, R. L., N. Y. G., July 9, 1919.
Detailed 90 days active service with 9th C. D. C., November 4, 1920.

1st LIEUTENANT HENRY E. CRAWFORD

Enlisted Squadron C, N. G. N. Y., January 13, 1908.
Corporal, May 15, 1911.
Sergeant, 2nd Cavalry, N. G. N. Y., June 3, 1912.
Enlisted V. C. A., August 16, 1917, 7th Battery.
1st Prov. Reg., Sergeant, Co. A, August 17 to 19; August 31 to September 4.
Transferred to 9th C. A. C., October 8, 1917.
2nd Lieutenant, 7th Co., November 28, 1917.
1st Lieutenant, Bn. Adj., June 29, 1918.

Digitized by Google

CAPT. GEORGE E. CRUSE



CAPT. FRANK E. DAVIDSON

Digitized by Google

CAPTAIN GEORGE E. CRUSE

Enlisted, V. C. A., May 14, 1917, 6th Battery.
Corporal, July 12, 1917.
1st Prov. Reg., Co. A, August 15 to 22; Co. B, Elmsford, August 23 to 29 (Acting Sergeant).
Sergeant, September 13, 1917.
Transferred to 9th C. A. C., October 8, 1917.
2nd Lieutenant, 6th Co., November 23, 1917.
1st Lieutenant, January 16, 1918.
Captain, Commanding 6th Co., August 28, 1918.

CAPTAIN FRANK EVERETT DAVIDSON

Seventh Regiment, N. G. N. Y., 8 years service.
Florida State Militia, 3 years service.
Veteran Corps of Artillery, 4 years service.
1st Prov. Reg., 1st Lieutenant, Adjutant, 1st Battalion, August 7th to 31st, at Hq., Croton Lake.
Transferred to 9th C. A. C., October 8, 1917.
Captain, Regimental Adjutant, 9th C. A. C., October 8, 1917.

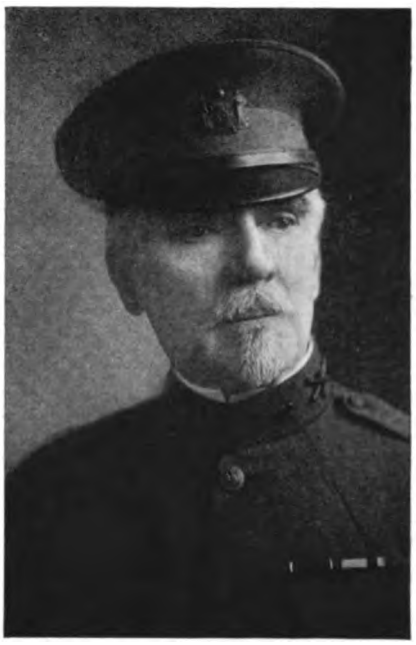
LIEUTENANT-COLONEL EDWARD COLEMAN DELAFIELD

Enlisted, V. C. A., October 6, 1909.
Corporal, May 17, 1911.
Sergeant, November 15, 1911.
1st Lieutenant, Quartermaster, November 16, 1915.
Captain, 1st Battery, March 26, 1917.
Major, 1st Battalion, May 26, 1917.
Rendered services to **1st Prov. Reg.**, guarding N. Y. City Water Supply, 1917.
Transferred to 9th C. A. C., October 8, 1917, as Major.
Lieutenant-Colonel, September 30, 1918.

(For photograph, see page 200)

Digitized by Google

1ST. LIEUT. CLARENCE H. EAGLE



CAPT. HOWARD DUFFIELD, D.D.

CAPT. LOUIS HAYS DOS PASSOS

Digitized by Google

COLONEL JOHN ROSS DELAFIELD, D. S. M.

Enlisted, V. C. A., January 26, 1910.
Corporal, December 13, 1911.
Color-Sergeant, April 19, 1912.
Chief of Section, 1915.
Vice-Commandant, February 4, 1916.
Rendered services to 1st Prov. Reg., guarding N. Y. City Water Supply, 1917.
Colonel, 9th C. A. C., N. Y. G., October 8, 1917.
Major, Ordnance Dept. U. S. A., September 17, 1918.
Finance Manager, Chicago District Ordnance Office, Chief Advisory Section, O. D., U. S. A., January 18, 1919; member Ordnance Claims Board, January 11, 1919.
Lieutenant-Colonel, March 25, 1919.
Colonel, June 28, 1919.
Chairman, Board of Contract Adjustment, W. D., August 5, 1919.
Honorable Discharge, June 30, 1920.
Colonel, O. O. R. C., U. S. A., February 21, 1921.
Distinguished Service Medal, August 26, 1921.
Conspicuous Service Cross, S. N. Y.

(For photograph, see frontispiece)

CAPTAIN LOUIS HAYS DOS PASSOS

Enlisted, V. C. A., March 5, 1905.
Corporal, May 17, 1911.
Sergeant, November 15, 1911.
2nd Lieutenant, March 29, 1917, 4th Battery.
1st Lieutenant, April 23, 1917.
Transferred to 9th C. A. C., October 8, 1917.
Adjutant, 2nd Battalion, October 25, 1917.
Captain, Supply Officer, June 8, 1918.
Captain, Supply Officer, 9th C. D. C., October 2, 1919.

CAPTAIN HOWARD DUFFIELD

Chaplain, 9th C. A. C., N. Y. G., November 8th, 1917.

CAPTAIN VICTOR M. EARLE

Enlisted 9th C. A. C. and warranted 1st Sergeant, October 8, 1917.
1st Lieutenant, 10th Co., June 4, 1918.
Captain, August 28, 1918.

Digitized by Google

CAPT. OSCAR W. G. ERICSON

CAPT. CHARLES H. ELLARD

Digitized by Google

CAPTAIN CHARLES H. ELLARD

Enlisted, V. C. A., 4th Battery, April, 1917.
1st Prov. Reg., Co. B, August 7 to 10; Elmsford, Acting Sergeant, August 12 to 17; 20 to 25; 28 to 29.
Transferred to 9th C. A. C., October 8, 1917, 4th Co.
Sergeant, transferred to 9th Co., May, 1918.
1st Sergeant, 9th Co., June, 1918.
2nd Lieutenant, October 25, 1918.
1st Lieutenant, January 25, 1919.
Captain, January 14, 1920.
Federalized, December 10, 1920, commanding 21st Co., 9th C. D. C., N. Y. N. G.
Regimental Rifle Team, 1919 and 1920.

2nd LIEUTENANT EARL H. EMMONS

Enlisted, V. C. A., July 2, 1917, 6th Battery.
1st Prov. Reg., Co. A, August 11 to 25; Acting Corporal, Co. B, Kensico, August 26 to September 5.
Transferred to 9th C. A. C., October 8, 1917.
Corporal,
Sergeant, March 11, 1918, 6th Co.
2nd Lieutenant, September 11, 1918.
Reserve List, N. Y. G., February 27, 1919.
Re-commissioned 2nd Lieutenant, 9th C. D. C., December 5, 1919.

CAPTAIN OSCAR W. G. ERICSON

Enlisted U. S. M. C., July 2, 1903.
Hon. Discharge, July 7, 1907.
Enlisted V. C. A., 3rd Battery, April 9, 1917.
Sergeant, May 17, 1917.
1st Prov. Reg., Sergeant, Co. A, September 5 to 14.
Transferred to 9th C. A. C., October 8, 1917.
2nd Lieutenant, 3rd Co., April 9, 1918.
1st Lieutenant, June 4, 1918.
Captain, Commanding 3rd Co., December 18, 1918.
Captain, 9th C. D. C., N. Y. N. G., at present.

Digitized by Google

MAJ. S. EDSON GAGE

CAPT. ARTHUR O. FORD

1ST LIEUT. WILLIAM I. FOLEY

Digitized by Google

1st LIEUTENANT WILLIAM I. FOLEY

Enlisted 9th C. A. C., November 25, 1917, 11th Co.
Corporal, March 11, 1918.
Sergeant, November 1, 1918.
1st Sergeant, January 10, 1919.
1st Lieutenant, February 24, 1919.

CAPTAIN ARTHUR OAKLEY FORD

Enlisted, V. C. A., April 20, 1917, 3rd Battery.
1st Sergeant, May 17, 1917.
1st Prov. Reg., 1st Sergeant, Co. A, September 5 to 14.
Transferred to 9th C. A. C., October 8, 1917.
1st Sergeant, 3rd Co., November 12, 1917.
2nd Lieutenant, February 28, 1918.
1st Lieutenant, April 9, 1918, commanding 3rd Co.
Captain, June 4, 1918.
Captain, R. L., N. Y. G., November 12, 1918.

MAJOR SAMUEL EDSON GAGE

Enlisted Squadron A, N. G. N. Y., April 26, 1901.
Corporal, May 22, 1908.
Sergeant, February 23, 1912.
Honorable Discharge, January 4, 1915.
Enlisted, V. C. A., February 22, 1915.
Corporal, 1916.
Sergeant, April 19, 1917.
2nd Lieutenant, April 26, 1917.
1st Lieutenant, May 14, 1917.
Captain, Commanding 2nd Battery, June 14, 1917.
1st Prov. Reg., Commanding Co. A, August 7 to 19.
Transferred to 9th C. A. C., October 8, 1917, commanding 2nd Co.
Major, 1918.
Had passed examination for commission, U. S. A., when Armistice was signed.

Digitized by Google

BVT. MAJ.-GEN. ASA BIRD GARDINER, (DEC'D.)

CAPT. HARRY P. GALLAHER

CAPT. JOHN T. HARRISON

Digitized by Google

CAPTAIN HARRY P. GALLAHER

Enlisted, V. C. A., June 12, 1917, 1st Battery.
1st Prov. Reg., Corporal, Co. A, August 7 to 22.
Transferred to 9th C. A. C., October 8, 1917.
Corporal, 1st Co., November 12, 1917,
Sergeant, January 7, 1918.
Battalion Sergeant-Major, May 3, 1918.
Regimental Sergeant-Major, June 17, 1918.
1st Lieutenant, Battalion Adjutant, August 3, 1918.
Captain, Regimental Adjutant, November 19, 1918.

BREVET-MAJOR-GENERAL ASA BIRD GARDINER, DEC'D.

1st Lieutenant, 31st N. Y. Infantry, May 27, 1861.
Captain, 22nd N. Y. Volunteers, May 31, 1862.
1st Lieutenant, Adjutant, U. S. Veteran Reserve Corps, February 11, 1865.
2nd Lieutenant, 9th U. S. Infantry, July 20, 1866.
1st Lieutenant, February 14, 1868.
Transferred to 1st U. S. Artillery, April 13, 1869.
Acting Dept. and Div. J. A. and Asst. A. G., 1871.
Major and J. A. (Lieut.-Col.), August 18, 1873.
Professor of Law, U. S. M. A., 1874-8.
Assistant to Secretary of War, 1887-8.
Retired, 1888. Awarded Medal of Honor for distinguished services.
Brevetted Captain for meritorious and gallant services, May 13, 1865.
Lieutenant-Colonel, Vice-Commandant, V. C. A., S. N. Y.
Colonel-Commandant.
Brevetted Major General in the Military Forces of the State of New York for "Gallant conduct in Gettysburg Campaign, and gallant and meritorious service during the War of the Rebellion, with rank from August 20, 1866."

CAPTAIN JOHN T. HARRISON

Enlisted, V. C. A., August 2, 1917, 7th Battery.
1st Prov. Reg., Sergeant, Co. A, August 7 to 15.
Transferred to 9th C. A. C., October 8, 1917.
1st Lieutenant, 7th Co., November 23, 1917.
Captain, July 2, 1918.
Lieutenant (J. G.), U. S. N. R. F.

Digitized by Google

MAJ. ERNEST P. HOES

1ST LIEUT. ELMER R. HOLLANDER

MAJ. WILLIAM L. HODGES

Digitized by Google

COLONEL HENRY W. HODGE, DEC'D.

Private, 7th Infantry, N. G. N. Y.
Captain, V. C. A., S. N. Y.
Major, Lieutenant-Colonel, Colonel, C. E., U. S. A.
Served on General Pershing's Staff, A. E. F.

(For photograph, see page 348)

MAJOR WILLIAM L. HODGES

Enlisted, V. C. A., April 19, 1916.
Corporal, December 26, 1916.
Color-Sergeant,
2nd Lieutenant, March 27, 1917.
1st Lieutenant, April 26, 1917.
Captain, May 7, 1917.
Major, July 9, 1917, commanding 3rd Battalion.
1st Prov. Reg., Major, commanding 1st Battalion, HQ, Croton Lake, August 7, 1917 to August 10, 1918.
Transferred to 9th C. A. C. as Major, 3rd Battalion, October 8, 1917.

MAJOR ERNEST P. HOES

R. O. T. C., Plattsburg, August, 1916.
1st Prov. Reg., Co. A, from Yonkers Prov. Battery, August 24 to 31.
Enlisted 9th C. A. C., October 8, 1917.
Sergeant, 1917.
1st Lieutenant, 10th Co., December 4, 1917.
Captain, February 28, 1918.
Major, commanding 1st Battalion, September 30, 1918.

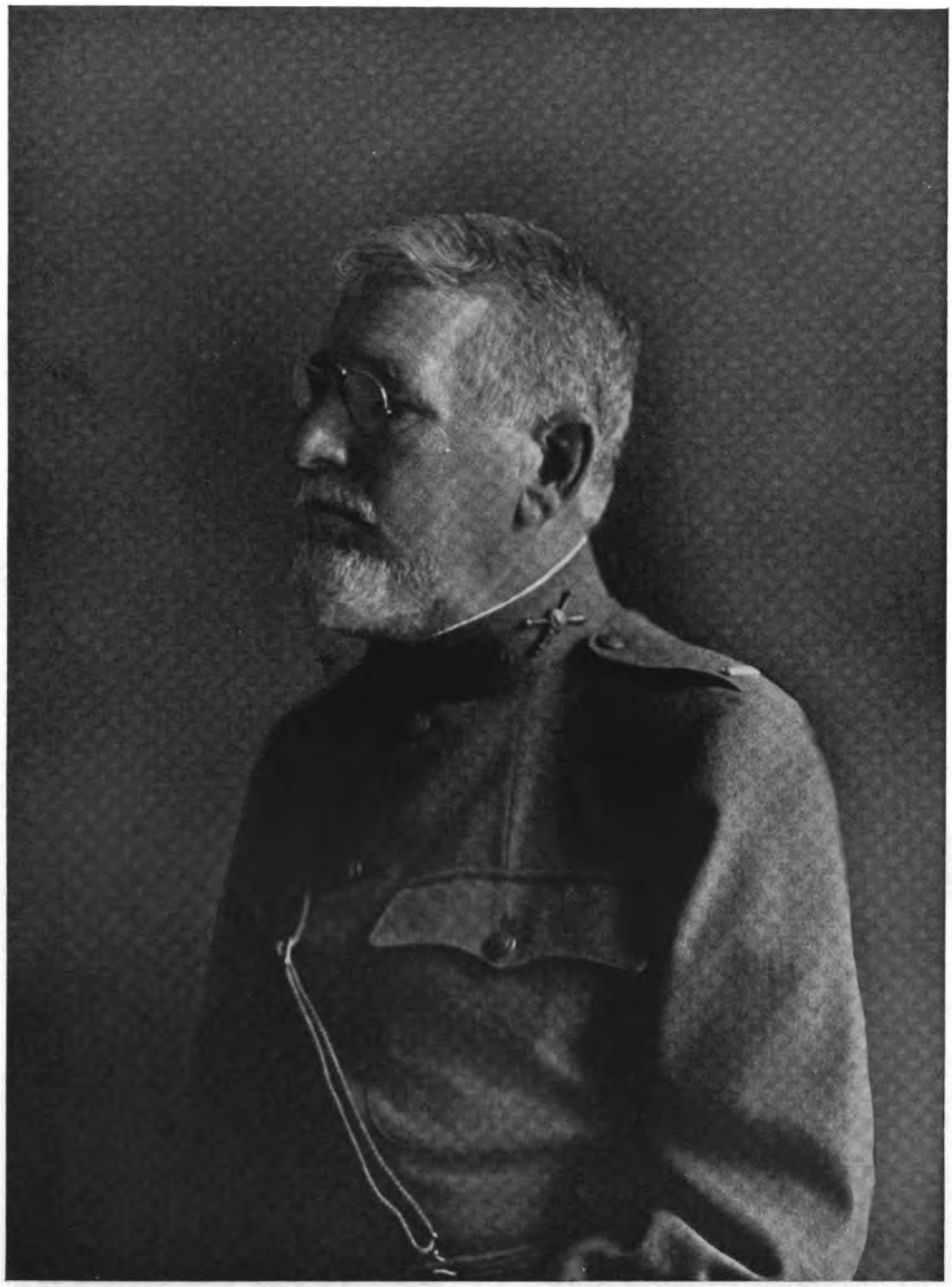
1st LIEUTENANT ELMER RAND HOLLANDER

Enlisted 1st Corps Cadets, M. V. M., October, 1890.
Hon. Discharge, October, 1895.
Enlisted V. C. A., March 12, 1917, 2nd Battery.
Corporal, April 26, 1917.
Sergeant, May 17, 1917.
1st Prov. Reg., Sergeant, Co. A, August 16 to 23.
Transferred to 9th C. A. C., October 8, 1917.
1st Lieutenant, 5th Co., December 4, 1917.

Digitized by Google

COLONEL HENRY W. HODGE, DEC'D.

Digitized by Google



CAPT. FRANCIS G. LLOYD, DEC'D.

Digitized by Google

1ST LIEUT. WILLIAM F. HOWARD

2ND LIEUT. RAYMOND N. HYDE

2ND LIEUT. FRANK H. HOUTS

1ST LIEUT. SYLVESTER B. HUSCH

Digitized by Google

2nd LIEUTENANT FRANK E. HOUTS

Enlisted in 9th C. A. C., Band, November 8, 1917.
Band Leader, December 1, 1917.
2nd Lieutenant, Headquarters Co., commanding Band.

1st LIEUTENANT WILLIAM F. HOWARD

Enlisted V. C. A., April, 1917, 4th Battery.
Corporal, May 31, 1917.
1st Prov. Reg., Corporal, Co. B, Elmsford, August 7 to 14.
Transferred to 9th C. A. C., October 8, 1917.
Sergeant, 4th Co., November 14, 1917.
2nd Lieutenant, August 28, 1918.
1st Lieutenant, November 20, 1918.
1st Lieutenant, 9th C. D. C., October 2, 1919.

1st LIEUTENANT SYLVESTER B. HUSCH, M. C.

Enlisted 9th C. A. C., San. Det., February 25, 1918.
1st Lieutenant, Dental Corps, November 6, 1918, assigned to 9th C. A. C.
Reserve List, N. Y. G., February 1, 1919; served as Dental Surgeon in Turkey with Near East Commission.
Re-commissioned, to active service, July 17, 1919.

2nd LIEUTENANT RAYMOND NEWTON HYDE

Enlisted, V. C. A., January 29, 1911.
Corporal.
Sergeant, July 12, 1917.
Mess Sergeant, Supply Co., July 17, 1917.
1st Prov. Reg., Mess Sergeant, Co. A, August 7 to 10.
Transferred to 9th C. A. C., October 8, 1917.
1st Sergeant, Supply Co., November 19, 1917.
Regimental Supply Sergeant, April 4, 1918.
2nd Lieutenant, 9th C. D. C.

Digitized by Google

MAJ. LEONHARD A. KEYES

LT.-COL. HOWARD T. KINGSBURY

CAPT. EDWIN B. JENKS

Digitized by Google

CAPTAIN EDWIN B. JENKS, M. C.

2nd Lieutenant, Yonkers Prov. Battery, V. C. A.
Transferred to 9th C. A. C., October 8, 1917.
1st Lieutenant, 10th Co., March 7, 1918.
Captain, Med. Corps, N. Y. G., May 20, 1918, assigned to 9th C. A. C. as Asst. Surgeon.

2nd LIEUTENANT EDMUND L. JUDSON, JR.

Enlisted V. C. A., April 26, 1917, 3rd Battery.
Sergeant, August 16, 1917.
1st Prov. Reg., Sergeant, Co. A, September 5 to 14.
Transferred to 9th C. A. C., October 8, 1917.
1st Sergeant, 3rd Co., April 8, 1918.
2nd Lieutenant, July 23, 1918.
2nd Lieutenant, Motor Transport Reserve, U. S. A.

MAJOR LEONHARD A. KEYES

Lieutenant, Co. C, Home Defense League, 1st Precinct, New York City.
Captain, commanding 11th Co., 9th C. A. C., December 11, 1917.
Major, commanding 3rd Battalion, February 3, 1919.
Major, 9th C. D. C., N. Y. N. G. at present.

LIEUTENANT-COLONEL HOWARD THAYER KINGSBURY

Enlisted V. C. A., November 1, 1911.
Corporal, December 4, 1912.
Sergeant, November 3, 1915.
1st Lieutenant, Paymaster, March 26, 1917.
Captain, Paymaster, May 21, 1917.
Rendered services to 1st Prov. Reg., N. Y. G., guarding New York City's Water Supply, August-September, 1917.
Transferred to 9th C. A. C., October 8, 1917, as Captain, Supply Officer.
Major, J. A. G., December 11, 1917.
Lieutenant-Colonel, J. A. G., September 2, 1918.
Reserve List, N. Y. G., January 15, 1919.
Re-commissioned Lieutenant-Colonel, J. A. G.'s Dept., March 16, 1920.
Lieutenant-Colonel, J. A. G.'s Dept. (S. C. & D.), N. Y. N. G., December 27, 1920.
Lieutenant-Colonel, J. A. G. O. R. C., U. S. A., September 8, 1921.

Digitized by Google

MAJ. JEROME KINGSBURY, M. C.

CAPT. WILLOUGHBY J. KINGSBURY

CAPT. REGINALD C. KNICKERBOCKER

Digitized by Google

MAJOR JEROME KINGSBURY, M. C.

1st Lieutenant, Asst. Surgeon, V. C. A.
1st Prov. Reg., 1st Lieutenant, Asst. Surgeon, at HQ, Croton Lake, N. Y.
Captain, Asst. Surgeon, 9th C. A. C.
M. R. C., U. S. A.

CAPTAIN WILLOUGHBY J. KINGSBURY

Enlisted V. C. A., April 17, 1917, 4th Battery.
Corporal, May 17, 1917.
1st Prov. Reg., Acting Sergeant, Co. B, Kensico and Scribner's Farm, August 7 to 15; Kensico, September 1 to 3.
Sergeant, September 22, 1917.
Transferred to 9th C. A. C. as Sergeant, 4th Co., October 8, 1917.
1st Sergeant, October 22, 1917.
1st Lieutenant, November 23, 1917, commanding 4th Co.
Captain, July 16, 1918.
Captain, R. L., N. Y. G., November 14, 1919.

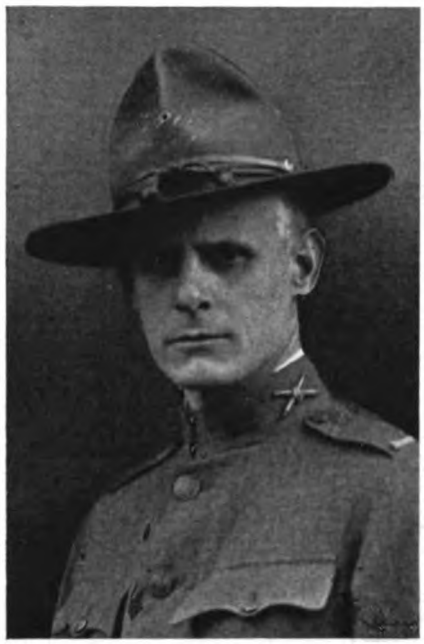
CAPTAIN REGINALD C. KNICKERBOCKER

1st Battalion, Nav. Mil., N. Y., 1903-1911. Hon. Disch.
Enlisted, V. C. A., May 1, 1917, 1st Battery.
Corporal, July 26, 1917.
1st Prov. Reg., Corporal, Co. A, August 7 to 14; 18 to 19; 22 to 26.
Transferred to 9th C. A. C., October 8, 1917.
Sergeant, 1st Co.
Supply Sergeant.
1st Sergeant.
2nd Lieutenant, Machine Gun Co.
Captain, 1st F. A., N. Y. G.
Captain, 1st M. G. Battalion N. Y. G.

1st LIEUTENANT ALFRED L. LANE

Enlisted V. C. A., June 29, 1917, 1st Battery.
1st Prov. Reg., Co. A, August 7 to 20, 1917.
Transferred to 9th C. A. C., 1st Co., October 8, 1917.
Sergeant, February 15, 1918.
1st Sergeant, April 26, 1918.
2nd Lieutenant, October 2, 1918.
1st Lieutenant, November 20, 1918.

Digitized by Google



1ST LIEUT. JULIUS C. LORENTZEN

CAPT. ARVINE C. LEACH

1ST LIEUT. HARVEY K. LINES

Digitized by Google

CAPTAIN THEODORE T. LANE, DEC'D.

Enlisted V. C. A., May 17, 1917.
Sergeant, May 24, 1917.
1st Lieutenant, June 18, 1917, assigned to 7th Battery.
1st Prov. Reg., 1st Lieutenant, Co. A, August 7 to 22; Adjutant, 1st Battalion, HQ. Croton Lake, August 23; Acting Judge Advocate, September, 30, 1917.
Transferred to 9th C. A. C., October 8, 1917.
Captain, commanding 7th Co., 9th C. A. C., October 23, 1917.
1st Prov. Reg., Summary Court Officer and Inspector, 1st Battalion, November 24, 1917.
Detached **1st Prov. Reg.** and returned to home station January 31, 1919.
Died at his home, Flushing, L. I., N. Y., April 14, 1920.

(For photograph, see page 232)

CAPTAIN ARVINE C. LEACH

Enlisted V. C. A., June 18, 1917, in 7th Battery.
1st Prov. Reg., Co. A, August 28 to September 4.
Sergeant-Major, September, 1917.
Transferred to 9th C. A. C., October 8, 1917.
Sergeant-Major, 3rd Battalion, October, 1917.
1st Lieutenant, Adjutant, 3rd Bn., February 11, 1919.
Captain, 23rd Co., 9th C. D. C., N. Y. G., December 26, 1919.
Captain, 9th C. D. C., N. Y. N. G. at present.

1st LIEUTENANT HARVEY KLAPP LINES

Enlisted Co. F, 7th Inf., N. G. N. Y., June 11, 1892. Served through Brooklyn Car Riots, 1895.
N. Y. State Cross of Honor, 10 years "Long and Faithful Service," 1915.
Mustered into U. S. Service, June 28, 1916 for Mexican Border Service.
Corporal (at McAllen, Tex.), June, 1916.
Hon. Disch. from U. S. A. and N. G. N. Y., August 28, 1916.
Enlisted V. C. A., December, 1916.
Corporal, early in 1917.
Sergeant, a month later.
1st Prov. Reg., Sergeant, Co. A, August 15 to 22.
Transferred to 9th C. A. C., October 8, 1917.
1st Lieutenant, Adjutant, 1st Battalion, November 23, 1917.
1st Lieutenant, R. L., N. Y. G., April 2, 1919.
Decorations: N. Y. S. Cross of Honor, 10 years; 7th Regt. Cross of Honor; U. S. A. Mexican Border Medal.

Digitized by Google

1ST LIEUT. WILLIAM E .LOWTHER

CAPT. ETHELBERT I. LOW

CAPT. BENJAMIN RUSH LUMMIS

Digitized by Google

CAPTAIN FRANCIS G. LLOYD, DEC'D.

Enlisted V. C. A., May 18, 1917, 4th Battery.
1st Prov. Reg., Co. B, Elmsford, August 7 to 10.
Transferred to 9th C. A. C., October 8, 1917, 4th Co.
1st Lieutenant, Regimental Staff, August 30, 1918.
Captain, (temporarily assigned to 8th Co.) Regimental Staff, 1918.

(For photograph, see page 349)

CAPTAIN ETHELBERT IDE LOW

Enlisted V. C. A., 1917, 1st Battery.
Corporal, May, 1917.
Sergeant, 1917.
1st Prov. Reg., Sergeant, Co. A, August 7 to 8; 10 to 14; 16 to 24.
2nd Lieutenant, October, 1917.
Transferred to 9th C. A. C., October 8, 1917.
1st Lieutenant, 1917.
Captain, commanding 1st Co., 1918.
Candidate, F. A. O. T. S., Camp Zachary Taylor, August 27 to December 11, 1918.
Captain, F. A. R. C., December 11, 1918.

1st LIEUTENANT WILLIAM E. LOWTHER

1st Lieutenant, Spuyten Duyvil Co., H. D. League, April, 1916, to April, 1917.
Enlisted V. C. A., April 16, 1917, 4th Battery.
Corporal, May 17, 1917.
1st Prov. Reg., Acting Sergeant, Co. B, Kensico, August 7 to 14; September 1 to 3.
Sergeant, September 13, 1917.
Transferred to 9th C. A. C., October 8, 1917.
2nd Lieutenant, 4th Co., December 10, 1917.
1st Lieutenant, July 19, 1918.

CAPTAIN BENJAMIN RUSH LUMMIS

Enlisted V. C. A., November 28, 1910.
Corporal, December 15, 1911.
Commissary Sergeant, February 21, 1912.
1st Lieutenant, Commissary, November 19, 1913.
Captain, Commissary, March 15, 1917.
Rendered services to **1st Prov. Reg.**, guarding N. Y. City's Water Supply, August-September, 1917.

Digitized by Google

MAJ. JAMES CLARK McGUIRE

COL. THATCHER T. P. LUQUER

CAPT. WILFRED W. MACK

2ND LIEUT. EDWARD L. McNICOL

Digitized by Google

COLONEL THATCHER T. P. LUQUER

Five years 100% service, V. C. A.; rank attained, Captain.
R. O. T. S., Plattsburg, September, 1915; grade, Corporal.
N. Y. Training Battery, January-July, 1916.
R. O. T. S., Plattsburg, August, 1916; grade, Corporal.
Captain, Eng. R. C., U. S. R., March 1, 1917.
Captain, ordered to Ft. Oglethorpe, Ga., May 8, 1917.
Major, Eng. R. C. August 15, 1917, assigned to 306th Engineers, 81st Division, Camp Jackson, S. C.
Lieutenant-Colonel, Eng. N. A., May 14, 1918. Sailed overseas, July 30, 1918.
Defensive Sector, St. Die, September 22 to October 19; commanding Regt., October 6 to December 13, 1918, and March 21 to May 4, 1919.
Meuse-Argonne offensive, November 2 to 11, 1918.
Cited by Div. Order No. 50, December 25, 1918, for conduct in action, November 9 to 11.
Colonel (temp.) Eng., U. S. A., March 21, 1919.
Hon. Disch., May 29, 1919.
Colonel, Eng. R. C., November 28, 1919.
Conspicuous Service Cross, S. N. Y.

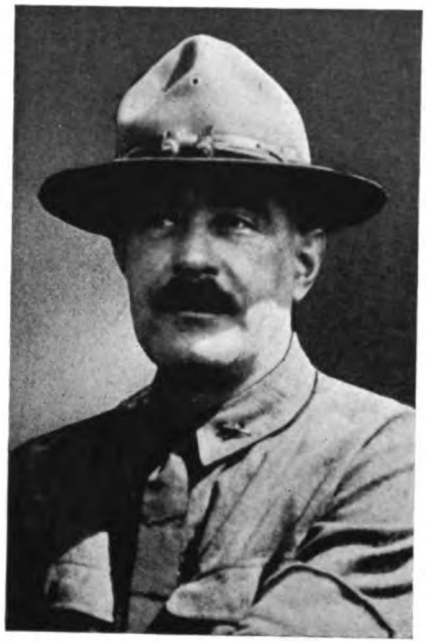
2nd LIEUTENANT EDWARD L. McNICOL

Enlisted 9th C. A. C., N. Y. G., December 10, 1917, 12th Co.
Supply Sergeant, 1918.
1st Sergeant, May 10, 1918.
2nd Lieutenant, August 28, 1918.

CAPTAIN WILFRED WHALEY MACK

Enlisted V. C. A., 1917, 2nd Battery.
1st Prov. Reg., Acting Sergeant, Co. A, August 7 to 17.
Transferred to 9th C. A. C., October 8, 1917.
2nd Lieutenant, August 31, 1918.
Hon. Disch., October 11, 1918.
Captain, Q. M. C., U. S. A., F. & A. Div., September 25, 1918.
Hon. Disch., December 10, 1918.
Captain, Q. M. R. C., March 31, 1919.

Digitized by Google



CAPT. CHARNLEY L. MURRAY

1ST LIEUT. LESLIE A. MESSENGER

1ST LIEUT. JOHN MESSENGER

2ND LIEUT. WALTER NEUMULLER

Digitized by Google

1st LIEUTENANT JOHN MESSENGER

N. Y. Military Commission, Camp Peekskill, June-July, 1917.
Enlisted, V. C. A., August, 1917, 8th Battery.
1st Prov. Reg., Co. B, Kensico, August 31 to September 6.
Transferred to 9th C. A. C., October 8, 1917.
2nd Lieutenant, 8th Co., November 23, 1917.
1st Lieutenant, February 17, 1919.

1st LIEUTENANT LESLIE A. MESSENGER

Private, Schoolmen's Battalion, October, 1915-October, 1916.
Enlisted, V. C. A., August, 1917, 8th Battery.
1st Prov. Reg., Co. B., Kensico, August 31 to September 6.
Transferred to 9th C. A. C., October 8, 1917.
Sergeant, November 26, 1917.
2nd Lieutenant, March 14, 1918.
1st Lieutenant, Battalion Adjutant, April 9, 1918.

CAPTAIN CHARNLEY L. MURRAY

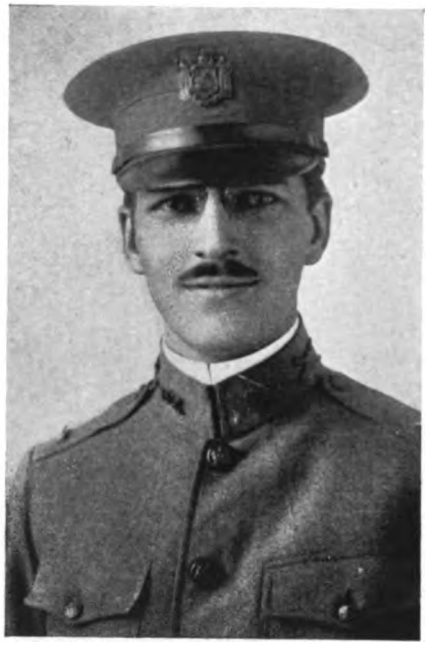
Seaman, U. S. N., April 26 to September 4, 1898.
Enlisted, V. C. A., May 15, 1917.
Corporal, 2nd Battery, June 21, 1917.
1st Prov. Reg., Corporal, Co. A, August 15 to 30.
Sergeant, September 13, 1917.
Transferred to 9th C. A. C., October 8, 1917, 2nd Co.
2nd Lieutenant, April 9, 1918; organized and commanded Machine Gun Co.
1st Lieutenant, May 20, 1918.
Captain, July 15, 1918.

2nd LIEUTENANT WALTER NEUMULLER

Enlisted V. C. A., September 5, 1917.
Enlisted 9th C. A. C., N. Y. G., December 6, 1917, in 2nd Co.
Corporal, April 15, 1918.
Sergeant, August 21, 1918.
2nd Lieutenant, November 20, 1918.
Hon. Disch., April 30, 1919.

Digitized by Google

MAJ. JOHN MOORE PERRY



CAPT. WILLIAM DOUGLAS OWENS

CAPT. WALTER P. PLUMMER

Digitized by Google

CAPTAIN WILLIAM DOUGLAS OWENS

Enlisted V. C. A., April 4, 1917.
Corporal, April 26, 1917.
Sergeant, 6th Battery, May 21, 1917.
1st Prov. Reg., 1st Sergeant, Co. A, August 7 to 17; 22 to 23.
Transferred to 9th C. A. C., October 8, 1917.
1st Sergeant, 6th Co., October 8, 1917.
2nd Lieutenant, January 26, 1918.
1st Lieutenant, September 11, 1918.
Captain, Commdg. 6th Co., October 25, 1918.

MAJOR JOHN MOORE PERRY

Enlisted V. C. A., January 8, 1913.
Corporal, January 31, 1915.
2nd Lieutenant, April 30, 1917, assigned to 4th Battery.
1st Lieutenant, July 29, 1917.
Captain, commdg. 4th Battery, September 6, 1917.
1st Prov. Reg., 1st Lieutenant, Co. B., Peekskill, Aug. 7 to 10; commdg. Elmsford Sector, August 11 to 30; commandg. Co. B, Kensico, September 5 to 13.
Transferred to 9th C. A. C., October 8, 1917, commdg. 4th Co.
Detailed to duty **1st Prov. Reg.**, November, 1917, as Inspector, 1st Battalion.
Served during winter 1917-1918.
Detailed Asst. Range Officer, Navy Rifle Range, June 1, 1918.
1st Lieutenant, Ordnance, U. S. A., August 5, 1918.
Captain, 9th C. A. C., N. Y. G., March 31, 1919.
Captain, 9th C. D. C., N. Y. N. G., 1920.
Major, 9th C. D. C., N. Y. N. G., 1921.

CAPTAIN WALTER P. PLUMMER

Enlisted V. C. A., July 25, 1917, 7th Battery.
1st Prov. Reg., Co. A, Aug. 29 to Sept. 6.
Transferred to 9th C. A. C., October 8, 1917.
Sergeant, Supply Co., November 19, 1917.
Battalion Supply Sergeant, April 15, 1918.
2nd Lieutenant, Asst. Supply Officer, May 20, 1918.
Captain, Supply Officer, 9th C. D. C., N. Y. N. G., 1921.

Digitized by Google

COL. LOUIS JEWETT PRAEGER

MAJ. T. J. OAKLEY RHINELANDER

CAPT. HORACE F. POMEROY

Digitized by Google

CAPTAIN HORACE F. POMEROY

Private, Corporal, Co. L, 2nd Maine Inf., 1877-80.
Enlisted V. C. A., July 7, 1917, 8th Battery.
2nd Lieutenant, July 30, 1917.
1st Prov. Reg., 2nd Lieutenant, Co. B, Kensico, Aug. 14 to 19.
Transferred to 9th C. A. C., October 8, 1917.
Captain, commdg. 8th Co., November 23, 1917.

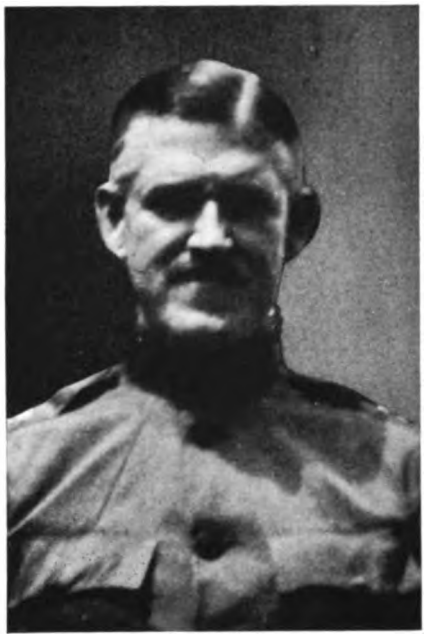
COLONEL LOUIS JEWETT PRAEGER

Enlisted, February 20, 1885, Co. A, 23rd Regt., N. G. S. N. Y.
2nd Lieutenant, February 10, 1892.
1st Lieutenant, September 19, 1892.
Captain, January 6, 1896.
Retired (own request), January 6, 1906.
Captain, V. C. A. (Art. Ser. Det.), May 21, 1917, commdg. 5th and 11th Batteries.
1st Prov. Reg., August 22 to September 5, 1917, commdg. Co. A.
Lieut.-Col. 23rd Regt., N. Y. G., November 9, 1917.
Colonel, commdg. 23rd Regt., N. Y. G., December 22, 1917.
Retired (own request—15 years Commissioned Officer), November 28, 1919.

MAJOR T. J. OAKLEY RHINELANDER

Enlisted Co. E, 7th Infantry, N. G. N. Y., June 10, 1875; hon. disch. August 5, 1881; re-enlisted Co. K, June 15, 1886, and Hon. Disch., October 17, 1895.
Enlisted V. C. A., 1897 (in 1917, 1st Battery).
Color-Sergeant, 1915.
1st Prov. Reg., Co. A, Aug. 7 to 16.
Transferred to 9th C. A. C., October 8, 1917, 1st Co.
Color-Sergeant, June 8, 1918.
2nd Lieutenant, attached to Staff, 1918.
1st Lieutenant, 9th C. D. C., attached to Staff, 1920.
Captain, attached to Staff, 1920.
Major, attached to Staff, 9th C. D. C., N. Y. N. G., 1921.

Digitized by Google



CAPT. GEORGE R. SATTERLEE

CAPT. JOHN S. ROGERS

LIEUTENANT WALTER L. RICHARD.

Digitized by Google

2nd LIEUTENANT WALTER L. RICHARD

Enlisted V. C. A., May 21, 1917, 1st Battery.
Corporal, July 12, 1917.
Sergeant, August 16, 1917.
1st Prov. Reg., Sergeant, Co. A, Aug. 17 to 19; 23 to 25.
Transferred to 9th C. A. C., October 8, 1917, to 1st Co.
1st Sergeant, November 13, 1917; assigned to new 5th Co.
2nd Lieutenant, January 16, 1918.
Adjutant (Acting), 2nd Battalion, November 29, 1918.
R. L., N. Y. G., February 3, 1919.

1st LIEUTENANT GEORGE S. RICHARDS, JR.

Enlisted V. C. A., April 6, 1917, 3rd Battery.
Sergeant, May 17, 1917.
1st Lieutenant, July 2, 1917.
1st Prov. Reg., 1st Lieutenant, Co. A, Sept. 5 to 14.
Transferred to 9th C. A. C., October 8, 1917, to 3rd Co.

CAPTAIN JOHN SHILLITO ROGERS

Private, Troop 3, Squadron A, N. G. N. Y., December, 1898, to December 1903.
Enlisted V. C. A., Spring, 1917, 2nd Battery.
Corporal, April 26, 1917.
Sergeant, May 17, 1917.
2nd Lieutenant, May 28, 1917.
1st Prov. Reg., commdg. Co. B, Kensico, Aug. 30 to Sept. 5.
Transferred to 9th C. A. C., October 8, 1917, 2nd Co.
Y. M. C. A. Secretary with A. E. F. in France, January 16 to July 1, 1918.
Captain, U. S. A., October 31, 1918, Div. Mil. Intelligence.
Hon. Disch., Dec. 28, 1918.

CAPTAIN G. REESE SATTERLEE, M.C.

Private, 7th Infantry, N. G. N. Y., December 13, 1893.
Hospital Corps, N. G. N. Y., May 16, 1900.
Corporal, September 28, 1900.
Asst. Hospital Steward, June 21, 1901.
Captain, Asst. Surgeon, November 29, 1907.
1st Lieutenant, Med. R. C., U. S. A., April 10, 1913.
Captain, Asst. Surgeon, M. C., N. Y. G., assigned to 9th C. A. C., Dec. 4, 1917.

Digitized by Google

CAPT. WILLIAM L. SAYERS

2ND LIEUT. GUSTAV SCHWAB

CAPT. ALFRED I. SCOTT

Digitized by Google

CAPTAIN WILLIAM L. SAYERS

Enlisted 1st Field Hospital, N. G. N. Y., 1906; served 6 years; F. and Hon. Disch. as Sergeant.
Enlisted V. C. A., 1913.
Corporal.
Sergeant.
Commissary Sergeant.
Sergeant-Major.
2nd Lieutenant.
1st Lieutenant, 1917.
1st Prov. Reg., 1st Lieutenant, Co. A, Aug. 22 to Sept. 5.
Transferred to 23rd Infantry, N. Y. G.
Captain, Machine Gun Co., 23rd Inf.
Aide on Staff of Governor, January 1, 1919.
Military Instructor, 1918, under Mil. Training Commission.

2nd LIEUTENANT GUSTAV SCHWAB

Enlisted V. C. A., June, 1917, 1st Battery.
1st Prov. Reg., Pvt., Co. B, Kensico, Aug. 22 to 25; Actg. Corporal, Aug. 26 to Sept. 5 (last week, Outpost 11).
Transferred to 9th C. A. C., October 8, 1917.
Corporal, November 19, 1917, 1st Co.
Sergeant, May 27, 1918 (Mess Sergeant).
2nd Lieutenant, December 3, 1918.
R. L., N. Y. G., November 15, 1919.

CAPTAIN ALFRED I. SCOTT

Enlisted V. C. A., July 25, 1916.
Corporal, May 8, 1917, 1st Battery.
Sergeant, June 7, 1917.
1st Sergeant, July, 1917.
1st Prov. Reg., Sergeant, Co. A, Aug. 11 to 19.
1st Lieutenant, September 4, 1917.
Transferred to 9th C. A. C., October 8, 1917.
Captain, November 23, 1917, assigned to newly-organized 5th Company.

Digitized by Google

CAPT. ADAM T. SHURICK

CAPT. FREDERIC K. SEWARD

2ND LIEUT. LESTER F. SCOTT

Digitized by Google

2nd LIEUTENANT LESTER F. SCOTT

Enlisted 9th C. A. C., April 11, 1918.
Corporal, May 27, 1918, Machine Gun Co.
Sergeant, July 1, 1918.
1st Sergeant, September 6, 1918.
2nd Lieutenant, October 10, 1918.

2nd LIEUTENANT ROBERT SEDGWICK, DEC'D.

Enlisted V. C. A., April 23, 1917, 2nd Battery.
Transferred to 9th C. A. C., October 8, 1917, Hq. Co.
2nd Lieutenant, October 23, 1918, attached to Staff.

(For photograph, see page 394)

CAPTAIN FREDERIC K. SEWARD

Enlisted V. C. A., July 9, 1917, 8th Battery.
1st Prov. Reg., Acting Supply Sergeant, Co. B, Kensico, August 15 to 21 and August 26.
Transferred to 9th C. A. C., October 8, 1917, 8th Co.
Sergeant, 1917.
Supply Sergeant, December 19, 1917.
2nd Lieutenant, May, 1918, assigned to command newly-organized 9th Company.
Captain, commanding 9th Co., August 28, 1918.

CAPTAIN ADAM T. SHURICK

Captain, V. C. A., July 2, 1917; commanding 8th Battery.
1st Prov. Reg., Captain, commanding Co. B, Kensico (with Sector at Elmsford), August 7 to 23.
1st Lieutenant, Eng. R. C., U. S. A., July 20, 1917; ordered to active duty, O. T. C., Washington, D. C., September 2, 1917.
Captain, 1st Regt. Replacement Engineers, December 11, 1917; assigned command Co. A, January 2, 1918.
Transferred to Camp Forrest, Ga., July 20, 1918.
Assigned to command Co. B, 211th Engineers, August 13, 1918.
Assigned command Co. D, 209th Engineers, August 27, 1918.
Later detailed to Camp Mills, N. Y., to prepare for overseas duty. Armistice having been signed, ordered to return to Camp Sheridan, Ill., November 21, 1918.
Hon. Disch., January 16, 1919.

Digitized by Google

CAPT. HENRY SILLCOCKS

CAPT. T. O'CONOR SLOANE, JR.

1ST LIEUT. MALCOLM D. SIMPSON

Digitized by Google

CAPTAIN T. O'CONOR SLOANE, JR.

Enlisted V. C. A., May 28, 1917, 4th Battery.
Corporal, May 30, 1917.
1st Prov. Reg., Acting Sergeant, Co. B, Elmsford, August 7 to 15; Acting 1st Sergeant, August 16 to 29; September 5 to 15. (Kensico HQ.)
Transferred to 9th C. A. C., October 8, 1917, to 4th Co.
1st Sergeant, November 30, 1917.
2nd Lieutenant, December 3, 1918.
1st Lieutenant, 9th C. D. C., December, 1919.
Captain, 9th C. D. C., N. Y. N. G., August 4, 1920.

CAPTAIN HENRY SILLCOCKS

Seaman, Conn. Naval Militia, 1898-99.
Enlisted V. C. A., February, 1917.
Assigned to 1st Battery, March 27, 1917.
Corporal, April 19, 1917.
Sergeant, May 17, 1917.
2nd Lieutenant, June 4, 1917.
1st Lieutenant, August 6, 1917.
1st Prov. Reg., 1st Lieutenant, Co. A, August 15 to 18; 20 to 23, commanding Sector at Hq., Dobbs Ferry Road.
Captain, commanding 1st Battery, September 13, 1917.
Transferred to 9th C. A. C., October 8, 1917, commanding 1st Co.
Transferred to R. L., N. Y. G., May 14, 1918, because of injuries (permanent) received in bayonet drill.

1st LIEUTENANT MALCOLM D. SIMPSON

Enlisted 9th C. A. C., N. Y. G., December 5, 1918, 11th Co.
Sergeant, February 9, 1918; transferred to 12th Co. and appointed 1st Sergeant.
2nd Lieutenant, May 20, 1918.
1st Lieutenant, August 28, 1918.
On leave from Regiment, November 7, 1918, for civilian duty with American Commission to Negotiate Peace in Paris.
Commanding Officer, 24th Co., 9th C. D. C., April 1, 1919.
Transferred to Hq., November 25, 1919.
R. L., N. Y. G., January 6, 1920.

Digitized by Google

CAPT. CHANDLER SMITH

CAPT. BARRETT P. SMITH

Digitized by Google

CAPTAIN BARRETT PUTNAM SMITH

Enlisted V. C. A., February, 1917.
Corporal, 1917.
Sergeant, 1917.
1st Sergeant, 6th Battery, 1917.
2nd Lieutenant, 1917.
1st Prov. Reg., 2nd Lieutenant, Co. A, Kensico, August 15 to 22.
Transferred to 9th C. A. C., October 8, 1917.
Captain, commanding 6th Co., November, 1917.
1st Lieutenant, A. S., U. S. A., August 3, 1918.
Transferred by request September 16, 1918, to U. S. Infantry, assigned to 71st Regiment, 11th (Lafayette) Division.
Captain, Infantry, 1918, commanding Co. H, 71st Infantry.
Hon. Disch., Camp Meade, Md., February 6, 1919.

CAPTAIN CHANDLER SMITH

Enlisted V. C. A., February 18, 1902.
Corporal, November 17, 1910.
Sergeant, November 15, 1911.
1st Lieutenant, Paymaster, November 16, 1915.
Captain, Adjutant, March 26, 1917.
Rendered services to 1st Prov. Reg., guarding N. Y. City's Water Supply, August-Septebmer, 1917.
Captain, A. S., Sig. R. C., U. S. A., January 7, 1918.
Columbus, O., Adjutants' School Military Aeronautics, January 23 to March 23, 1918.
Adjutant.
Commanding 262nd Aero Squadron, Scott Field, Belleville, Ill., March 31 to September 1, 1918. Wing Commander, Survey Officer, Summary Court Officer.
Commanding Co. B, Mil. Trg. Det., S. A. T. C., Valparaiso, Ind., September 3, 1918 to January 18, 1919.
Captain A. S. Sig. O. R. C., U. S. A., May 15, 1919.
Member, Council of Administration, V. C. A., January 8, 1920 to February, 1921.

Digitized by Google

CAPT. EDMUND BANKS SMITH

CAPT. HARMON SMITH

CAPT. STAFFORD B. SMITH, DEC'D.

Digitized by Google

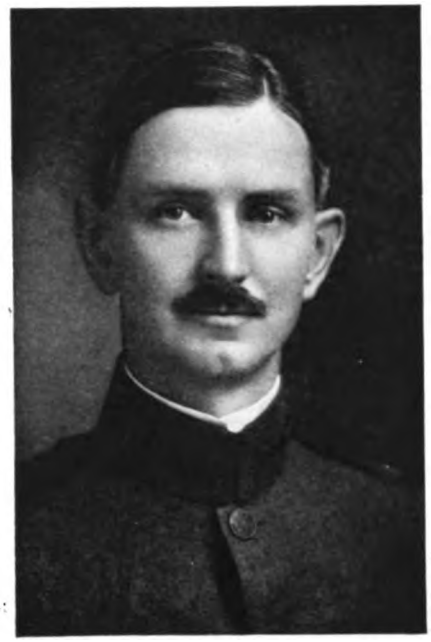
CAPTAIN HARMON SMITH, M. C.

Captain, M. C., N. Y. G., assigned to 9th C. A. C., September, 1918, to May, 1919.

CAPTAIN STAFFORD B. SMITH, M. C., DEC'D.

Enlisted V. C. A., April 30, 1917, 6th Battery.
Transferred to 9th C. A. C., October 8, 1917.
1st Lieutenant, M. C., N. Y. G., assigned to 9th C. A. C., December 4, 1917.
Captain, M. C., May 8, 1918.
Captain, U. S. Public Health Service.

Digitized by Google



LT.-COL. FRANCIS R. STODDARD, JR.

1st LIEUT. HENRY G. STEINMEYER

Digitized by Google

1st LIEUTENANT WILLIAM M. SMITH

Enlisted V. C. A., July 10, 1917, 7th Battery.
Sergeant, July 26, 1917.
1st Prov. Reg., Sergeant, Co. A, August 7 to 15; 17 to 23; 31 to September 6.
Transferred to 9th C. A. C., October 8, 1917, 7th Co.
1st Sergeant.
2nd Lieutenant, July 9, 1918.
1st Lieutenant.

1st LIEUTENANT HENRY G. STEINMEYER

Enlisted V. C. A., March, 1917, 3rd Battery.
1st Prov. Reg., Corporal, Co. A, September 5 to 6; Acting Sergeant, September 7 to 12.
Transferred to 9th C. A. C., October 8, 1917, 3rd Co.
1st Sergeant.
1st Lieutenant.
R. L., N. Y. G., December, 1920.

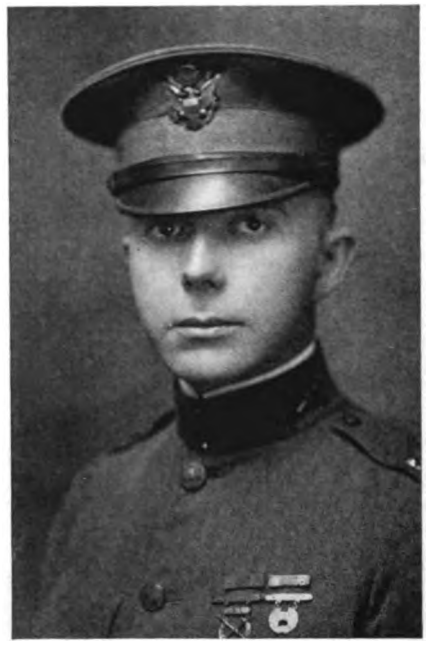
LIEUTENANT-COLONEL FRANCIS RUSSELL STODDARD, JR.

Served with U. S. Vols. 1898 during Spanish War; and with National Guard on Mexican Border in 1916.
Captain, 1904.
Enlisted V. C. A., December 4, 1912.
Captain, 1917, commanding 2nd Battery.
Major, May, 1917, commanding 2nd Battalion.
Served as observer of anti-aircraft defenses on French and British Fronts, 1917.
Graduated from Div. Staff School, Army War College, and served as Divisional Ordnance Officer, 17th Div., U. S. A., 1918-1919.
Commander, Art. Service Det., V. C. A., 1920-21.
Lieutenant-Colonel, Ord. R. C., U. S. A.

Digitized by Google

CAPT. WALTER L. SUYDAM

CAPT. J. G. PHELPS STOKES



CAPT. JOSEPH F. SULGER

Digitized by Google

CAPTAIN J. G. PHELPS STOKES

Captain and Commandant, 1st Div. Cadets, Berkeley School, N. Y. City, 1885-1889.
Military Certificate, Yale University, 1891.
Enlisted, Squadron A, N. G. N. Y., April 9, 1896.
Volunteered for War with Spain, 1898.
Discharged September 18, 1901.
Enlisted V. C. A., August 15, 1917.
Rendered services to 1st Prov. Reg., guarding N. Y. City's Water Supply, August-September, 1917.
Transferred to 9th C. A. C., October 8, 1917.
Sergeant (1st Sergeant), February 25, 1918, 5th Co.
2nd Lieutenant, March 14, 1919.
1st Lieutenant.
Captain, Adjutant, 9th C. D. C., N. Y. N. G. at present.

CAPTAIN JOSEPH F. SULGER

CAPTAIN WALTER LISPENARD SUYDAM

Enlisted V. C. A., December 11, 1907.
Corporal, January 8, 1909.
Quartermaster-Sergeant, November 17, 1910.
1st Lieutenant, Quartermaster, January 9, 1911.
Brigade Major, May 10, 1915.
Member, Council of Administration, 1917 and many prior years.
2nd Lieutenant, 9th C. A. C., N. Y. G., November 15, 1917, Assistant Supply Officer.
Captain, Supply Officer, December 26, 1917.
Treasurer, Regimental Fund, November 19, 1917.

Digitized by Google

CAPT. PAUL G. THEBAUD

CAPT. WALTER D. TEAGUE

CAPT. RAYMOND L. TAFT

Digitized by Google

CAPTAIN RAYMOND L. TAFT

Enlisted V. C. A., May, 1917.
1st Lieutenant, commanding 9th Battery, August 6, 1917.
1st Prov. Reg., 1st Lieutenant, Co. A, August 7 to September 17. Hq. of Sector, Fort Hill Road.
Sergeant, 23rd Infantry, N. Y. G.
Captain, commanding Co. F, 23rd Regiment.

CAPTAIN WALTER D. TEAGUE

Enlisted V. C. A., July 6, 1917, 8th Battery.
1st Prov. Reg., Acting Sergeant, Co. B, Post 10, August 15 to 17; Hq., Kensico, August 20 to 22.
Transferred to 9th C. A. C., October 8, 1917, to 8th Co.
1st Lieutenant, November 23, 1917.
Captain, January 30, 1919.

CAPTAIN PAUL GIBERT THEBAUD

Enlisted V. C. A., 1890.
Captain, Ordnance Officer, 1917.
Rendered services to **1st Prov. Reg.**, guarding N. Y. City's Water Supply, August-September, 1917.
Transferred to 9th C. A. C., October 8, 1917, to Staff.
Captain, I. S. A. P., October 8, 1917.

2nd LIEUTENANT ALEXANDER R. THOMPSON, Dec'd.

Enlisted V. C. A., March 10, 1911.
Private Hq. Company, May 12, 1917.
Sergeant, July 12, 1917.
Rendered services to **1st Prov. Reg.**, guarding N. Y. City's Water Supply, August-September, 1917.
Transferred to 9th C. A. C., October 8, 1917.
Sergeant, Supply Co., November 19, 1917.
2nd Lieutenant, Asst. Supply Officer, February 28, 1918.
Regimental Historian, March 11, 1918.
Retired for age, March 29, 1918; same date detailed for active duty with 9th C. A. C., N. Y. G.
R. L. N. Y. G., October 3, 1918.

(For photograph, see page 225)

Digitized by Google

COLONEL CABOT WARD

CAPTAIN PAUL TILLINGHAST

CAPT. HENRY B. DE VILLIERS-SCHWAB

Digitized by Google

CAPTAIN PAUL TILLINGHAST

Enlisted V. C. A., May 21, 1917, 4th Battery.
Corporal, August 13, 1917, detailed to Hq.
Rendered services to **1st Prov. Reg.**, guarding N. Y. City's Water Supply, August-September, 1917.
Sergeant, September 18, 1917.
Transferred to 9th C. A. C., October 8, 1917.
Sergeant-Major, November 21, 1917, 1st Battalion.
Sergeant-Major, February 8, 1918, Regimental.
2nd Lieutenant, June 6, 1918, assigned to 10th Co.
1st Lieutenant, October 25, 1918.
Captain, 9th C. D. C., N. Y. N. G., February 9, 1920, to date.

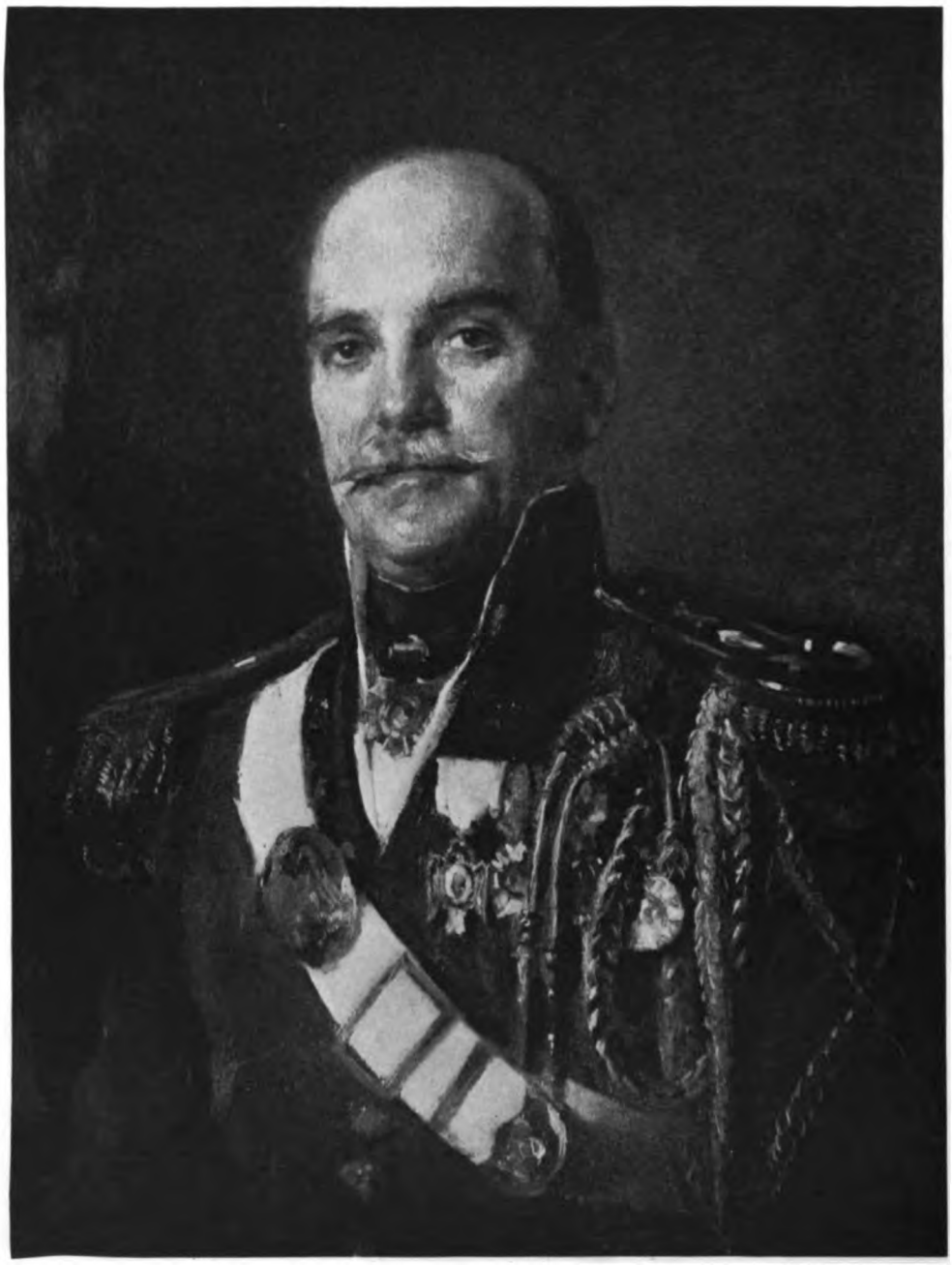
CAPTAIN HENRY B. de VILLIERS-SCHWAB

Enlisted 9th C. A. C., January 28, 1918, 1st Co.
Corporal, March 17, 1918.
Sergeant, June 7, 1918.
2nd Lieutenant, July 19, 1918.
1st Lieutenant, October 2, 1918.
Assigned to command 2nd Co., October 6, 1918.
Captain, October 9, 1918.
Leave of absence granted, July 1, 1920.
R. L., N. Y. G., January 18, 1921.

COLONEL CABOT WARD, D. S. M.

Enlisted V. C. A., March 22, 1917.
Corporal, 1st Battery, April 26, 1917.
Sergeant, May 17, 1917.
1st Lieutenant, Battalion Adjutant, July 30, 1917.
Appointed member Anti-Aircraft Commission, August 25, 1917.
Transferred to 9th C. A. C., October 8, 1917 as Captain, N. Y. G.
Major, A. S., Sig. Corps, U. S. A.
Lieutenant-Colonel, Asst. C. of S. and Chief Intelligence Section, S. O. S., U. S. A.
General Staff.
Member Staff, C. in C., A. E. F.
Asst. C. of S., G. 2, S. O. S.
Chief, 2nd Section, G. S.
Colonel.
D. S. M., U. S. Legion d'Honneur, France. D. C. M., Great Britain.

Digitized by Google



COL. CHARLES ELLIOT WARREN

Digitized by Google

COLONEL CHARLES ELLIOT WARREN, D. S. M.

Enlisted 7th Infantry, N. G. N. Y., 1883; served in all grades and ranks up to Lieutenant-Colonel, State Forces—12th Infantry; 5th Brigade Staff; Division Staff.

Captain, Staff 3rd N. Y. Vol. Brig., Spanish War Campaign, 1898.

V. C. A., 1906-1916.

Brigade Major, V. C. A., 1917.

Plattsburg, 1915, 1916.

Major, O. R. C., U. S. A., January, 1917.

Assigned to Staff of Chief of Ordnance, U. S. A., May 1, 1917.

Lieutenant-Colonel, January 2, 1918; assigned to duty with Secretary of War, Washington, D. C.

Relieved from active duty, January 7, 1919.

D. S. M., August 14, 1919.

Colonel, O. R. C., U. S. A., August 27, 1919.

Conspicuous Service Cross, S. N. Y., January 2, 1921.

Decorations:—Distinguished Service Medal, U. S.

Conspicuous Service Cross, N. Y.

Victory Medal, U. S.

Spanish-American War Medal, N. Y.

World War Medal, N. Y.

Long Service Medal—20 years, N. Y.

Long and Faithful Service and War Service Decoration, 7th (107th) Infantry.

Diploma of Honor and Decoration Aerial League of America World War.

Digitized by Google

BVP. MAJ. ROBERT H. WILDER

CAPT. H. PUSHAE WILLIAMS

CAPT. LOUIS WATJEN

Digitized by Google

CAPTAIN LOUIS WATJEN

M. T. C., Plattsburg, August 10 to September 6, 1916.
Enlisted V. C. A., May 26, 1917.
Corporal, 1st Battery, July, 1917.
1st Prov. Reg., Acting Sergeant, Co. B, Kensico Hq., August 22 to September 5.
Transferred to 9th C. A. C., October 8, 1917.
1st Sergeant, 1st Co., November 13, 1917.
2nd Lieutenant, December 4, 1917.
1st Lieutenant, May 20, 1918.
Captain, commanding 1st Co., October 2, 1918.
Regimental Adjutant, March 4, 1919.
Captain, R. L., N. Y. G., October 6, 1919.

CAPTAIN BURT WILCOX

Enlisted 9th C. A. C., November 23, 1917, 11th Co.
Sergeant, February 8, 1918.
1st Sergeant, February 18, 1918.
2nd Lieutenant, May 20, 1918.
1st Lieutenant, August 28, 1918.
Captain, February 11, 1919.

BREVET-MAJOR ROBERT H. WILDER

Enlisted V. C. A., August 6, 1917.
Captain, August 6, 1917.
Served on Commission to study Anti-Aircraft Defense overseas.
Transferred to 9th C. A. C., October 8, 1917.
Captain, 9th C. A. C., N. Y. G., October 8, 1917.
Brevetted Major by the Governor of the State of New York for "distinguished service under fire in the face of the enemy."

CAPTAIN H. PUSHAE WILLIAMS

2nd Lieutenant, V. C. A., July, 1917, 7th Battery.
1st Prov. Reg., 2nd Lieutenant, "Transportation Officer," August-September, attached to 1st Battalion.
Transferred to 9th C. A. C., October 8, 1917.
Captain, November, 1917, commanding 12th Co.
Captain, C. M. G. O. T. S., U. S. A.
Captain, commanding 20th Co., 9th C. D. C.

Digitized by Google

1ST LIEUT. WILLIAM H. YOUNG

1ST LIEUT. ROGER H. WILLIAMS

CAPT. WALTER D. WOOD

2ND LIEUT. FRANCIS I. WOODBURN

Digitized by Google

1st LIEUTENANT ROGER H. WILLIAMS

Military Instruction, Cornell University, 2 years.
Enlisted 9th C. A. C., December 10, 1917, 6th Co.
Sergeant, May 27, 1918.
1st Lieutenant, March 14, 1919.

CAPTAIN WALTER D. WOOD

Enlisted 9th C. A. C., N. Y. G., October 8, 1917, 4th Co.
Transferred to newly-organized 9th Co., June 4, 1918.
Sergeant, June 11, 1918, Supply Sergeant.
1st Sergeant, August 1, 1918.
2nd Lieutenant, February, 1919, assigned to 9th Co.
1st Lieutenant, 9th C. D. C., February, 1920; assigned to 21st Co.
1st Lieutenant, 9th C. D. C., N. Y. N. G., December 10, 1920.
Captain, 9th C. D. C., N. Y. N. G., 1922.

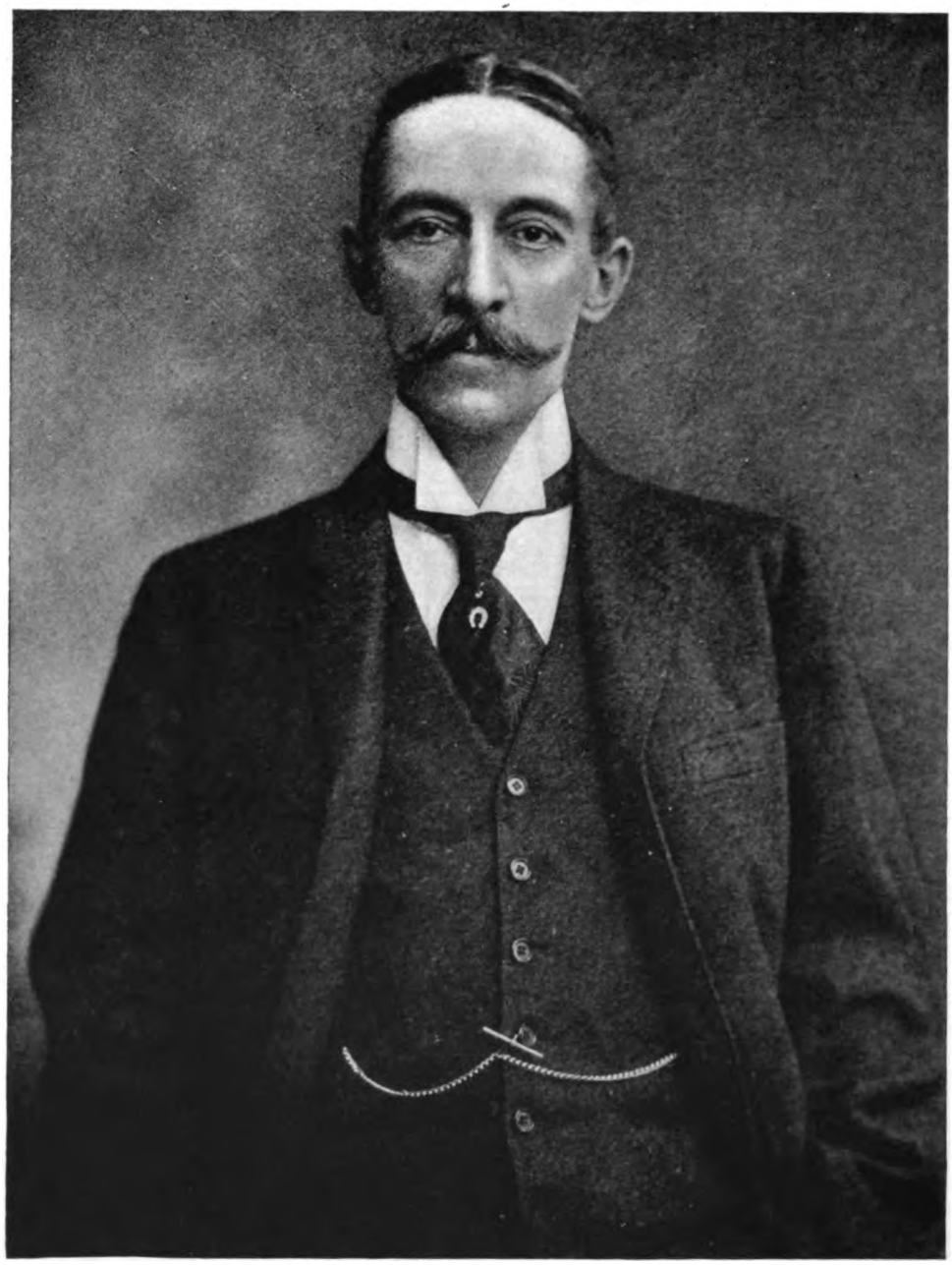
2nd LIEUTENANT FRANCIS I. WOODBURN

Sergeant, Plattsburg Training Camp, 1916.
Enlisted V. C. A., March 19, 1917.
Corporal, April 19, 1917.
Sergeant, May 17, 1917, 2nd Battery; 1st Sergeant.
1st Prov. Reg., 1st Sergeant, Co. A, August 7 to 27; 30 to September 17; Co. B, Elmsford, August 28 to 29.
Transferred to 9th C. A. C., October 8, 1917, as 1st Sergeant, 2nd Co.
2nd Lieutenant, January 31, 1918.
2nd Lieutenant, Infantry, U. S. A.
2nd Lieutenant, Infantry R. C., U. S. A.

1st LIEUTENANT WILLIAM H. YOUNG

Enlisted 9th C. A. C., April 8, 1918, M. G. Co.
Sergeant, May 27, 1918.
1st Sergeant, September 6, 1918.
1st Lieutenant.

Digitized by Google



LIEUT. ROBERT SEDGWICK, DEC'D.

Digitized by Google

REPORT OF SPECIAL COMMITTEE APPOINTED BY LIEUT.-COL. JOHN R. DELAFIELD ON COSTS OF EQUIPMENT.

"April 10, 1917.

Necessary expenditures for Arms and Equipment to Dec. 31, 1917.

12	Machine Guns, Lewis Type @ $750.00	$ 9,000.00
12	3-Pounder Guns @ $4,000.00	48,000.00
12	Chassis for Transporting Acetylene Lights @ $400.00	4,800.00
	Mounting and Special Body Work for 12 Searchlights @ $50.00	600.00
12	Chassis for Transporting 3-Pounders and Lewis Guns @ $1,750.00	21,000.00
	Mounting and Special Work for 12 3-Pounders @ $300.00	3,600.00
2	Chassis for Wireless and Apparatus @ $1,000.00	2,000.00
12	Acetylene Searchlights, Tanks and Accessories @ $75.00	900.00
150	Lockers @ $9.00	1,350.00
200	Rifles @ $7.00	1,400.00
1	Armorer for Six Months @ $150.00 a Month	900.00
1	Assistant Armorer for Six Months @ $125.00 a Month	750.00
2	Gasoline, Oil, Repairs or per Car per month $35.00	
26	Cars @ $35.00, 910 per Month—Six Months	5,460.00
	No ammunition included in this estimate.	
	Total	$99,760.00

Respectfully Submitted,

(Signed) James C. McGuire, Major Engineers Officers Reserve Corps, U. S. A.

(Signed) Thatcher T. C. Luquer, Captain Engineers Officers Reserve Corps, U. S. A.

Fund called "VETERAN CORPS OF ARTILLERY, SPECIAL—JOHN ROSS DELAFIELD, VICE-COMMANDANT"

February 26th, 1917 to December 31st, 1917

STATEMENT OF RECEIPTS AND DISBURSEMENTS

RECEIPTS

Subscriptions and Donations	$22,885.00
Special Subscriptions for Lewis Machine Gun to be used in Brooklyn	750.00
(Conditional liability for refund on this item)	
Interest on bank balances	68.65
Deposit on rifles and equipment—3rd Battery	414.20
Deposit on rifles and equipment—5th Battery	414.20
	$24,532.05

Digitized by Google

DISBURSEMENTS

Payments for loan of rifles and equipment—1790 Rifle Club, including 55,000 rounds of ball cartridges		$ 3,181.87	
Arms, ammunition, etc., purchased:			
Ammunition, (part of which has already been expended) gun slings, bayonets and general equipment	$ 1,555.92		
30% Payment to Bethlehem Steel Co. for mount for 3-inch Anti-Aircraft gun—1917 Model (Liability thereon $4,690.00 still unpaid)	2,010.00		
Payment to Savage Arms Corporation on account of 24 Lewis Machine Guns (Liability thereon $13,000.00 still unpaid)	5,000.00		
		8,565.92	
Other equipment purchased (blankets, cots, chairs, lockers, etc.)		3,759.79	
(A large part of this equipment is said to be stored at City Island and not now available)			
Expenses of City Island Camp		2,098.60	
Expenses incidental to Guard Duty on New York City Aqueduct		1,414.96	
Balance of advance for expenses of Capt. Wilder on trip to Europe to study anti-aircraft methods, etc. (Unexpended balance to be refunded)		1,000.00	
McLain-Hadden-Simpers Co. services and expenses in connection with subscription campaign		1,173.95	
Sundry administrative and incidental expenses (printing, stationery, telegrams, and sundry office expenses for provisional batteries and 1790 Rifle Club)		2,689.70	23,884.79
Balance in Bank, December 31st, 1917			$ 647.26

Digitized by Google

Fund called "VETERAN CORPS OF ARTILLERY, SPECIAL—JOHN ROSS DELAFIELD, VICE-COMMANDANT"

December 31st, 1917 to November 25th, 1919

STATEMENT OF RECEIPTS AND DISBURSEMENTS JOHN ROSS DELAFIELD—SPECIAL ACCOUNT

Balance in bank, December 31st, 1917, per last report.....		$ 647.26

RECEIPTS

Sales of Lockers.....	$ 1,048.55	
Sales of Rifles.....	40.50	
Sale of Pistol and Holster.....	21.00	
Sale of Belts.....	364.65	
Refund on advances to Capt. Wilder on trip to Europe to study anti-aircraft methods.....	150.00	
Refund of deposit on Anti-Aircraft Gun Mounts.....	2,010.00	
Refund on Aqueduct Expenses.....	48.83	
23rd Regiment—N. Y. Guard Fund.....	100.00	
Contribution	25.00	
Interest on bank balance.....	2.03	
Transferred from "John Ross Delafield Armament" account	7.87	3,818.43
		$ 4,465.69

DISBURSEMENTS

Rifles and Miscellaneous Equipment.....	$ 642.37	
Ammunition	733.16	
Payments to Savage Arms Corporation on account of Machine Guns	2,500.00	
Expenses of City Island Camp.....	146.22	
Sundry Incidental Expenses (Printing, Stationery, Telephone, Telegraph, etc., etc.).....	395.11	
Transferred to "John Ross Delafield—Armament" Account..	48.83	
		$ 4,465.69

Digitized by Google

JOHN ROSS DELAFIELD—ARMAMENT ACCOUNT

RECEIPTS

Transferred from "John Ross Delafield—Special" Account..	$ 48.83	
Loan—John Ross Delafield.....	600.00	
Sale of 6 Machine Guns.....	7,500.00	
Donation—for purchase of Machine Guns.....	3,000.00	
Donations—for purchase of Machine Gun Trucks.....	1,021.29	
Interest on bank balance.....	1.00	$12,171.12

DISBURSEMENTS

Refund of Deposit of 5th Battery for Rifles and Equipment..	$ 414.20	
Ammunition	87.50	
Payments to Savage Arms Corporation on account of Machine Guns	10,500.00	
Machine Gun Trucks purchased.....	996.00	
City Island Camp Expenses.....	18.60	
Transferred to "John Ross Delafield—Special" Account....	7.87	12,024.17
Balance in Bank November 25, 1919.....		$146.95

Note: The Fund still owes Col. John Ross Delafield $600.00 on account of Loan made by him.

Digitized by Google

LIST OF CONTRIBUTORS TO SPECIAL FUND

C. L. Adams
J. E. Aldred
Mrs. John Anderson
Joseph Anderson, Sr.
George F. Archer
P. Aubeck
Henry D. Babcock
George F. Baker, Jr.
Henry B. Barnes
R. D. Bartlett
Andrew Baxter
Bayard & Company
Miss Eunice C. Beecher
Mrs. William C. Beecher
W. L. Benedict
W. E. Benjamin
W. E. Benner
George L. Bergen
Miss Susan Dwight Bliss
M. Block
Miss May Benson
William B. Boulton
Robert Pendelton Bowler
W. B. Bowne
Robert E. Boyd
Mrs. Cornelia R. Boyle
John Boyle & Co., Inc.
Ira H. Brainerd
E. C. Bridgman
John I. D. Bristol
George T. Brokaw
Brooklyn Trust Company
Alfred T. Brown
Mrs. Mary A. Brown
Mrs. S. Edwin Buchanan
Charles R. Buckley (deceased)
Miss Theodora Buckley
Jonathan Bulkly
Charles C. Bull
Mrs. George W. Burleigh
L. C. Butler
Mrs. Howard Carroll
George M. Chaffee
Robert S. Chapin
Mrs. Alfred J. Chatillon
George R. Christian
Frederick G. Clapp
Caroline S. Coeltz
William Colgate
William Conroy
Charles E. Cowan
Colonel Alexander B. Crane
Dr. Louis F. Criado
A. M. Crosby
Daniel N. Crouse
Cruikshank Company
Guernsey Currin
William E. Curtis
Curtiss Aeroplane Corporation
George L. Darte
Katherine K. Dashiell
Frank E. Davidson
J. Clarence Davies
Fellowes Davis
G. H. Dean
Ezra De Forest
Edward C. Delafield
John Ross Delafield
Charles F. Dellinger
Edward R. DeWitt
Dillworth, Lockwood & Co.
Charles A. Ditmas
A. J. Doan & Son
Robert P. Dodd
Carl F. Doerr
L. W. Dominick
A. Lispenard Doremus
John V. N. Dorr

Digitized by Google

Michael Dreicer
Henry R. Drowne
Helen S. DuBois
William B. Dudley
Cleveland A. Dunn
Gano Dunn
Harris A. Dunn
John A. Eckert
George Simpson Eddy
Herman L. R. Edgar
Otto M. Eidlitz
Thomas L. Elder
Frederick L. Eldridge
Ludwig Elling
William Elliott
William D. Ellis
William Fahnestock
H. W. Farnum
William J. Farrell
Mrs. E. Fleitmann
Mrs. H. C. Fleitmann
W. E. Frank
I. T. Frankel
G. C. Frelinghuysen
Henry J. Fuller
Edwin Louis Garvin
Charles R. Gibson
Mary Gilpin
William Gilpin
John L. Goodbody
William J. Graham
Dr. James C. Greenway
William E. S. Griswold
Fred Gross
Carl F. Ginshaber
Charles A. Halstead
William Hample, Jr.
William F. Hanse
Charles J. Hardy
Charles Hart
Mrs. Eugene W. Harter
James Mott Hartshorne
William F. Hause
Frederick B. Hawley
W. N. Hedges
Harold Herrick
George Hewlett
Charles M. Higgins
Francis L. Hine
George W. Hoadley
Miss May V. Hoffman
Home Title Insurance Co.
Sheldon Hopkins
Robert LeC. Hovey
Walter C. Hubbard
Mrs. George F. Hummel
Hungerford Brass Co.
Henry Hyams
A. M. Hyatt
George Edward Ide (deceased)
Charles Isham (deceased)
Lawrence Jacob
Edwin C. Jameson
Robert A. Keasbey Co.
Alan D. Kenyon
Charles D. Kerley
Dr. Edward L. Keyes
H. D. Kingsbury
Charles W. Knight
Francis La Bau
James L. Laidlaw
Alfred P. Laighton
Mrs. Isabel L. Lane
Lewis H. Lapham
Lawrence Belting Co.
Mrs. Warner M. Leeds
Albert J. Leon
Henry Lindemeyer & Sons
Francis G. Lloyd
Arthur H. Lockitt

Digitized by Google

Herbert W. Lockwood
J. D. Loizeaux Lumber Co.
Edmund B. Lombard
John B. Lord
Ethelbert I. Low
William G. Low
Miss Katharine Ludington
Thatcher T. P. Luquer
Frank Lyman
Mrs. William S. MacDonald
L. Alexander Mack
T. L. Manson & Co.
Mrs. John Markle
William A. Marshall
E. Tildon Mattox
Robert Maxwell
H. R. May
Charles Mayer
George W. Mead
Albert E. Medway
Henry E. Meeker
Miss Evelyn Miller
Louis F. Mohr
Edward H. Mohr
William H. Moore
James L. Morgan
David H. Morris
A. Henry Mosle
Arthur J. Moss
Janet Muller
Frank C. Munson
Mrs. Lindley Murray
Louis F. Musil
Morton C. Nichols
John Notty
George W. Olvaney
Eugene H. Outerbridge
Pacific Lumber Co.
Frederick T. Parsons
Mrs. Frederick T. Parsons
S. H. P. Pell
Charles E. Perkins
John J. Pierrepont
Miss Julia Pierrepont
Mrs. Robert A. Pinkerton
Charles R. Pitt
Henry M. Post
W. Rockhill Potts
Edgar D. Pouch
Colonel Louis J. Praeger
F. T. Proctor
Thomas R. Proctor
Edward Brevoort Renwick
M. D. del Rio
T. J. Oakley Rhinelander
E. G. Richards
Richardson & Dutt
J. F. Risley
John S. Rogers
Frederick T. Rubidge
Max Ruckgaber, Jr.
Henry Ruhlender
Charles Howland Russell
Mrs. Horace Russell
Arthur Ryle
J. Sanford Saltus
Ethelbert L. Sand
Charles Sayre
George G. Schaefer
Jacob H. Schiff
John Schulte
John Schulteis
Mrs. A. H. Scribner
A. P. W. Seaman
Dr. Louis L. Seaman
Edward M. Seguine
F. B. Sewall
Edward B. Sexton
A. R. Shattuck
Mrs. James Guthrie Shaw

Digitized by Google

Finley J. Shepard
N. C. Shepard
Abraham Sherman
Samuel J. Shimer
Frederic B. Shipley
Horatio S. Shonnard
Arthur J. Singer
Charles W. Sloane
Frank I. Smith
George C. Smith
J. F. Smith
Thos. E. Smith
Mrs. Frank L. Sniffen
William Somerville
H. Boardman Spalding
Spencer, Trask & Co.
Edward E. Sprague
Russell T. Starr
J. Staub
Stephenson Mfg. Co.
Richard T. Stevens
Stimson & Williams
Rev. Ernest M. Stires, D.D.
S. F. Street
Mrs. Gustaf Stromberg
John R. Strong
Edward J. Sullivan
Walter L. Suydam
William L. Sweet, Jr.
Louise S. Tallcott
Henry O. Tallmadge
W. H. Tappan
Elinore S. Taylor
Dr. Z. S. Taylor
Charles H. Tenny
Roderick Terry, Jr.
Samuel Thorne, Jr.
Sydney Thursby
Charles G. Tompkins
Mrs. Stanley T. Tumbridge
Mrs. John Van Nostrand
Clarence C. Vernam
Walter S. Viele
Mrs. Katherine S. Vietor
Ernest G. Vietor
John O. Wade
Oliver C. Wagstaff
William P. Wainwright
E. P. Walker
James J. Wardrop
N. J. Weil
Miss Julia Chester Wells
J. W. Wheaton
Henry K. White
H. W. White
Norman De R. Whitehouse
White Pine Sash Co.
J. Whitney
Frank B. Wiborg
Edward A. Wickes
William G. Willcox
Charles A. Willetts
Danforth Williamson
Mrs. Alfred S. Wise
W. Wilton Wood
Frank Young
Minnie Young
George A. Zabriskie
William Ziegler, Jr.
Adolph Zukor

Digitized by Google

Extract from Minutes of Meeting of the Council of Administration of the Society of the War of 1812 held on the 8th day of January, 1918.

WHEREAS, during the year 1917 the Veteran Corps of Artillery was expanded by the enlistment of various provisional batteries for the purpose of providing anti-aircraft defense for the City of New York, and in order to provide funds for the purpose of training and equipping said batteries, various patriotic persons placed in the hands of the Vice-Commandant, John Ross Delafield, as custodian, and as a Special Fund, sums of money to be expended in his discretion for such objects and purposes, and

WHEREAS, the said Delafield actually spent large sums and has incurred liabilities in and about the training of said batteries and in the purchase of arms and material, and

WHEREAS, any need for anti-aircraft defense by this Corps having passed, but a need arose for the building up of the New York Guard, N. Y., and accordingly the Provisional batteries were detached from this Corps and the members thereof in most part incorporated in various regiments and corps of the New York Guard and it is desirable that the Special Fund be closed up and the relation of all parties to it be clearly defined, therefore

RESOLVED, That the Council of Administration of the Society of the War of 1812, Veteran Corps of Artillery, S. N. Y., do hereby make it a matter of official record that all sums of money so contributed to and received by the said John Ross Delafield were placed in his sole control as custodian for the purposes above mentioned to be expended by him in his discretion and that neither this Council of Administration, nor the Board of Officers, nor the Veteran Corps of Artillery, nor the Society of the War of 1812 ever had or now has or will assert any control or right or dominion over said Fund nor over the property purchased by said funds so far as such property can be distinguished from property purchased with the funds of the Corps and in consequence thereof and in consideration of the agreement by said John Ross Delafield to save harmless the said Society, the said Corps, this Council and the Board from all claim or liability on account of any purchase, contracts or acts entered into or done in, about or concerning the premises this Council of Administration does hereby, on behalf of the Veteran Corps of Artillery, S. N. Y., and Society of the War of 1812, release to said John Ross Delafield, as such custodian, all their right, title and interest, if any, in and to said funds and said property.

IT IS FURTHER RESOLVED that the Commissary and the Quartermaster be requested to turn over to said Custodian or to his order on demand any prop-

Digitized by Google

erty purchased out of said funds on his presenting in writing proper evidence of the purchase of said property and of its identity; and they are requested to render him all proper assistance in preparing such evidence.

IT IS FURTHER RESOLVED, that the subscription and exchange of copies of these resolutions by said John Ross Delafield, and by the Corps and Society by this Council, is to be considered as a mutual acceptance of the terms of the above agreement.

ASA BIRD GARDINER,
Colonel Comdt.

Official
H. Schieffelin Sayers
First-Lieutenant Adjutant.

On the same day the Board of Officers of the Veteran Corps of Artillery executed and delivered an identical instrument, which was signed by:

ASA BIRD GARDINER, *Colonel, Commandant;*

CHANDLER SMITH, *Captain, Adjutant;*

EDMUND BANKS SMITH, *Captain, Chaplain;*

BRYCE METCALF, *Lieutenant;*

BENJAMIN R. LUMMIS, *1st Lieut. Commissary;*

NORMAN BENTLEY GARDINER, *Captain, Quartermaster.*

"HEADQUARTERS, 1st BRIGADE,
NEW YORK GUARD.
Park Avenue and Thirty-Fourth Street.

New York, July 7, 1919.

Colonel George W. Burleigh,
27 Cedar Street,
New York City.

My dear Colonel Burleigh:

I have your letter of July 3rd, and it is a great pleasure to me to write you a letter covering the questions referred to therein.

1. General Asa Bird Gardiner, Commandant of the Veteran Corps of Artillery, State of New York, presented to me the draft form of the order afterwards known

Digitized by Google

as G. O. 46, A. G. O., October 8, 1917, wherein the Veteran Corps of Artillery, S. N. Y. was attached to Headquarters, 1st Brigade, and the Provisional Batteries, field and staff, were transferred to the 9th Coast Artillery Corps. This draft was approved by me without change, and sent to the Adjutant General, who approved it, and it was issued by command of the Governor.

2. After the order had been approved by the Governor, it was conveyed to me over the telephone and I immediately ordered, over the telephone, Lieutenant-Colonel John Ross Delafield, then Vice-Commandant, to assemble his men and transfer the twelve Provisional Batteries of the Veteran Corps of Artillery to the State of New York with all their equipment and property as soon as possible to the Armory of the former 9th Coast Defense Command at 125 West 14th Street, New York City, and there to hold such property subject to the order of the Commanding General of the First Brigade.

3. At the time of this transfer you were a Captain in the Veteran Corps of Artillery, attached as an Aide to the staff of Brigadier-General Charles H. Sherrill, as the General Commanding the Military Forces of the State of New York. Upon the organization of the 9th Coast Artillery Corps as ordered, Colonel Delafield recommended you to me for appointment as Lieutenant-Colonel which you declined. Subsequently, I personally asked you to reconsider and accept the commission, and it was at the earnest request of General Sherrill and myself that you did so reconsider and accept the commission as Lieutenant-Colonel and were assigned to the 9th Coast Artillery Corps, New York Guard.

I should like to take this opportunity to reiterate what I said in a previous letter to you, that, as the Brigadier-General commanding the First Brigade, I was entirely familiar with all the circumstances and the changes which were desired and were made in transferring the Provisional Batteries of the Veteran Corps of Artillery to the 9th Coast Artillery Corps. Everything that you personally did in these matters was carried out under the direction of the Military authorities of the State and after consultation with them and with their full knowledge and approval.

I wish to add that you carried out this difficult task in a straightforward and businesslike manner, and your conduct under most trying circumstances was all that could be desired of an officer and a gentleman.

Yours faithfully,

(Signed) GEORGE R. DYER."

Digitized by Google

STATE OF NEW YORK

THE ADJUTANT GENERAL'S OFFICE

ALBANY

BRIG. GEN. LOUIS W. STOTESBURY

The Adjutant General

July 16th, 1917.

Col. Commandant Asa Bird Gardiner,

Commanding Veteran Corps of Artillery.

Sir:

I am directed by the Governor to inform you that the recruitment and enlistment of qualified rank and file in The Veteran Corps of Artillery, S. N. Y., in the military service of the State of New York, between March 13th, 1917, to April 11th, 1917, to constitute an Artillery Battalion for Anti-air-craft gun service is approved.

The Governor also approves the formation since April 11th, 1917, of such additional batteries for said Corps as may be required, pursuant to Chapter 328, Laws of 1904, Section 9, for its efficiency for Anti-air-craft gun service in preparation to resist hostile invasion, and further authorizes and approves the enlistment and muster in for the War into said Corps of accepted Volunteers from the reserve militia, as authorized by Chapter 151, Laws of 1917, Section 2, said Volunteers to be subject to the laws and Regulations governing said Corps.

Three Muster-in Rolls for every battery of said Corps shall be prepared, and the rank and file of said batteries mustered into the State military service by you and a duly verified copy thereof transmitted to this office, and the second duplicate to the Commanding Officer of the Battery, and further Muster-in Rolls with further additions will be transmitted in like manner.

As occasion requires, you will, by direction of the Governor, report to this office, from time to time, the progress of this military service to the State in the enlistment, drill, discipline and efficiency for Anti-air-craft gun service for the defense of New York City—of the several batteries of The Veteran Corps of Artillery, S. N. Y., and forward additional Muster-in Rolls of recruits, as above indicated.

Yours very truly,

(Signed) LOUIS W. STOTESBURY

The Adjutant General.

Digitized by Google

WAR DEPARTMENT
OFFICE OF THE CHIEF OF STAFF
WASHINGTON

July 21, 1917.

Lt. Col. John Ross Delafield,
Veteran Corps of Artillery of New York,
27 Cedar Street,
New York City.

My dear Colonel:

Your request to me that the services of the Veteran Corps of Artillery be authorized by the War Department to assist in laying out and manning the aerial defenses of New York City and to send abroad a Commission to study ways and means, was forwarded to the Chief of Staff with a favorable recommendation several days ago and I trust will be approved.

The patriotic offer of the Veteran Corps merits recognition and I trust it will be forthcoming. I have no doubt but that your body will be faithful to any trust reposed, and I regret only that shortage of artillery material will delay the early installation of the defenses already planned.

Very sincerely,

(Signed) JOSEPH E. KUHN

Brigadier General, General Staff,
Chief of War College Division,
Assistant to the Chief of Staff

Digitized by Google

WAR DEPARTMENT
THE ADJUTANT GENERAL'S OFFICE
WASHINGTON

July 21, 1917.

From: The Adjutant General of the Army.

To: Lieutenant-Colonel John Ross Delafield, Commanding Artillery Service Detachment, Veteran Corps of Artillery, 27 Cedar St., New York City

Subject: Anti-Aircraft Artillery Defense of New York City by the Veteran Corps of Artillery, N. Y.

1. I am directed by the Secretary of War to inform you that the patriotic offer of the Veteran Corps of Artillery to assist in the aerial defense of New York City, communicated to the President of the Army War College in your letter of July 6th, 1917, is highly appreciated.

2. While the absence of anti-air-craft artillery renders it improbable that any defense system can be established for some time in the future, there will be no objections to the designated officers of your Corps proceeding at their own expense to London and Paris in the meantime for the purpose of studying the defense systems of these cities. Upon application from these officers, a letter of credential will be furnished by this office and a request made of the State Department for the issuance of the necessary passports.

3. The War Department will appreciate receiving copy of the report made by the officers in question.

(Signed) J. F. DEAN
Adjutant General

Digitized by Google

WAR DEPARTMENT
THE ADJUTANT GENERAL'S OFFICE,
WASHINGTON.

370.3 (New York City)
Miscl.

August 7, 1917.

From: The Adjutant General of the Army.

To: Major Francis R. Stoddard, Jr., Veteran Corps of Artillery, New York.

Subject: Letter of credential.

1. I am directed by the Secretary of War to inform you that he has no objection to your proceeding, at your own expense, to London and Paris for the purpose of studying the anti-aircraft artillery defense of those cities.

2. The Secretary of War desires that all officials of the United States Army render such assistance to you in the prosecution of your work as may be desirable and possible.

(Signed) J. T. DEAN
Adjutant General.

STATE OF NEW YORK
EXECUTIVE CHAMBER
ALBANY

August 10th, 1917.

From: The Governor of the State of New York.

To: Major Francis R. Stoddard, Jr., Veteran Corps of Artillery, New York.

Subject: Study of the anti-air-craft artillery defenses of the cities of England and France.

1. The War Department of the United States, and the State Department of the United States, have consented that you go abroad to study the anti-air-craft artillery defenses of the cities of France and England, and to report upon the same.

2. You are therefore authorized to proceed abroad for such purpose, and upon completion of the work, to return to your home station.

3. Such assistance as the officers and representatives of the United States, diplomatic or otherwise, will give you in the execution of your mission, will have the grateful appreciation of the Governor of the State of New York.

(Signed) CHARLES S. WHITMAN

Digitized by Google

THE ASSISTANT SECRETARY OF STATE

WASHINGTON

September 13, 1917.

George W. Burleigh, Esquire,
52 Wall Street,
New York City.

Sir:

Your letter in regard to the visit of Major Francis R. Stoddard, Jr., Captain Robert H. Wilder and Lieutenant Cabot Ward to London and Paris to study defence system in those cities, has been received in Mr. Phillips' absence, and I hasten to let you know that the Embassies in London and Paris have been informed of the visit of these officers and instructed to notify the proper authorities.

Very truly yours,

(Signed) R. C. JONES
Private Secretary.

DEPARTMENT OF THE EAST

GOVERNOR'S ISLAND, N. Y.

August 20, 1917.

Col. John Ross Delafield,
Commanding The Veteran Corps Artillery.
New York.

Sir:

Having solicited and received quite a while ago authority from the War Department to correspond direct with Bureau Chiefs in perfecting the anti-aircraft defenses of the metropolitan district of New York, I have had conferences and correspondence with the President of the War College, the Chief of Coast Artillery, the Chief of Ordnance and with the Chief Signal Officer of the Army on this subject; also with the Governor of New York State, and with the Mayor of the City of New York. All of these authorities cordially concurred with me in the wisdom of designating the Veteran Corps of Artillery of New York to take charge of this service. Yours is one of the oldest of all military organizations in the country and is composed of gentlemen of ability, education and standing in the community, many of them being men of wealth. Their reputation for patriotism and zeal is unsurpassed. All are most patriotic and earnestly desirous of doing their "bit" in the war, notwithstanding they are outside the age limits of the selective draft law. All are highly intelligent and specially qualified for the type of service they are proposing to do.

Digitized by Google

Your organization has always been in the habit of turning out on all suitable public occasions in the City. Its duty has always been done in such manner as to indicate a high degree of zeal, esprit and efficiency.

The desirability of a comprehensive study of European experience is the consideration which has led your Corps to send three of its most highly qualified officers to Europe at its own expense.

I take pleasure in commending you and your Corps for your patriotic zeal and determination.

Very sincerely,

(Signed) J. F. BELL

Major General, U. S. A., Commanding.

CITY OF NEW YORK

Office of the Mayor.

August 20, 1917.

President of the Municipal Council, City of Paris,
Hotel de Ville, Paris, France

My dear Mr. President:

This letter will be presented by Major Francis R. Stoddard of the Veteran Corps of Artillery of the State of New York. By direction of the Governor of the State and with the approval of the State and War Departments of the United States Major Stoddard is visiting London and Paris with Captain Robert H. Wilder and Lieut. Cabot Ward, also of the Veteran Corps, in order to study and report upon the anti-aircraft artillery defenses of those cities. As Mayor of the City of New York I am deeply interested in any plans for defense against hostile aircraft. It gives me very great pleasure, therefore, to commend these gentlemen to you and to ask that every possible opportunity be given them to study the anti-aircraft defenses of your city in detail.

Thanking you for any courtesies you may show to them, and with an expression of my highest regard, believe me,

Yours very sincerely,

(Signed) JOHN PURROY MITCHEL

Mayor.

(Similar letters to the same person from the Mayor for Captain Robert H. Wilder and Lieut. Cabot Ward.)

Digitized by Google

AMBASSADE
DE LA REPUBLIQUE FRANÇAISE
AUX ETATS-UNIS

Washington, August 21, 1917.

Dear Mr. Burleigh,

Referring to our conversation of yesterday, I have the honor of forwarding to you herewith a letter for our Customs Authorities which will facilitate matters for Lieut. Ward and his companions when they land in France.

I have also cabled to my Government asking that their visit to Paris and their inspection of our defences, especially the aerial ones, be facilitated to them in every way.

I wish them the most pleasant and useful journey, and I beg you to believe me,

Very sincerely yours,

(Signed) JUSSERAND.

Hon. George W. Burleigh,
52 Wall Street,
New York City.

AMBASSADE
DE LA REPUBLIQUE FRANÇAISE
AUX ETATS-UNIS

Washington, le 20 Aout, 1917.

Les Autorités des Douanes Françaises sont prieés d'accorder à M.M. le Major Francis R. Stoddard fils, le Capitaine Robert H. Wilder et le Lieutenant Cabot Ward, citoyens américains qui se rendent en France chargés d'une mission militaire, toutes les facilités pour l'entrée de leurs bagages et de procéder avec des égards particuliers aux formalités dont elles ne pourraient les dispenser.

L'Ambassadeur de France;

(Signed) JUSSERAND.

Messieurs les Officiers des Douanes Françaises.

Digitized by Google

(A Copy)

Description of Bearer.

Age 40 years
Stature 6 feet 2 inches
Forehead high
Eyes blue
Nose straight
Mouth mustached
Chin oval
Hair dark (Tinged gray)
Complexion medium
Face oval

Photograph

This is to certify that the attached photograph bears the signature, and is a likeness of the person to whom this passport is issued. In witness whereof the seal of the Department of State is impressed upon the photograph.

(Seal)

No. 882

(Special Passport)

UNITED STATES OF AMERICA.

DEPARTMENT OF STATE,

TO ALL TO WHOM THESE PRESENTS SHALL COME, GREETING:

KNOW YE, that the bearer hereof

FRANCIS RUSSELL STODDARD, JR.,

a citizen of the United States, Major, Veteran Corps of Artillery, State of New York (anti-aircraft artillery), is about to proceed to England and France on official business for the War Department.

These are therefore to request all whom it may concern to permit him to pass freely without let or molestation, and to extend to him all such friendly aid and protection, as would be extended to like officers of Foreign Governments resorting to the United States.

IN TESTIMONY WHEREOF, I, Robert Lansing, Secretary of State of the United States of America, have hereunto set my hand and caused the seal of the Department of State to be affixed at Washington, this 8th day of August, A. D. 1917, and of the Independence of the United States of America, the 142nd.

(Signed) ROBERT LANSING.

(SEAL)

(Similar passports were received by Captain Wilder and by Lieutenant Ward)

Digitized by Google

STATE OF NEW YORK
THE ADJUTANT GENERAL'S OFFICE
ALBANY

August 6, 1917.

Special Orders.
No 198

I. It having been made to appear to the Governor that in the state of war now existing, grave danger is apprehended and exists as to the safety of property and public utilities of the City of New York and more particularly the water system of said city and that there is imminent danger of attempts being made to destroy and injure said property and of breaches of the peace, tumult and riot in connection with such attempts and the Mayor of the said city of New York having requested the Governor to order out a sufficient military force of the State in aid of the civil authorities, in accordance with the provisions of Law, I do, by virtue of the Constitution annd Laws of the State, order out the following military forces of the State for the protection of said property and public utilities.

A provisional regiment of infantry of 12 companies to be formed of detachments of organizations of the military forces of the State to be selected by the officer hereinafter designated to command same and to consist of not to exceed 53 officers and 1200 enlisted men of appropriate grades, including a sanitary detachment of 4 officers and 10 men.

II. The detachments composing said provisional regiment to be designated as above set forth will be assembled at their respective armories, at 7 p. m., on Tuesday, August 7th, 1917,under orders of the Commanding Officer of said regiment and will take over the guarding said property at 6 p. m., Friday, August 10th, 1917.

III. Colonel John B. Rose, 1st Infantry, New York Guard, is hereby detailed to active duty and will at once assume command of the troops ordered out under this order. He will confer with the Mayor of the City of New York as to the disposition of troops to guard said property, and with the Chief Quartermaster, State Quartermaster Corps, State Arsenal, 463 Seventh Avenue, New York City, as to subsistence and transportation for his command. Five-day rations will be purchased locally and taken in the field with troops placed on duty under this order.

IV. Commutation of rations at the rate of 75 cents per day is authorized wherever it is impracticable to furnish rations in kind. Wherever cooking facilities are available rations in kind will be issued at the rate of 52 cents per day.

V. The Chief Quartermaster, State Quartermaster Corps, will issue the necessary transportation.

Digitized by Google

VI. No debts will be contracted or obligations incurred except as expressly authorized by orders from this office. No horses will be hired without like authority. The requirements of the Military Law and Regulations will be strictly followed in all purchases.

By Command of the Governor:

(SEAL) LOUIS W. STOTESBURY,

The Adjutant General.

Official:
(Signed) EDWARD J. WESTCOTT
Maj. Asst. to The Adjutant General.

HEADQUARTERS 1ST BRIGADE, N. Y. G.

Park Avenue and Thirty-Fourth Street

New York, January 21, 1918.

Colonel John Ross Delafield,
9th Coast Artillery Corps, N. Y. G.,
125 West 14th Street,
New York City.

My dear Colonel Delafield:

May I most warmly congratulate you upon the splendid showing made by the officers and men of your command at the ceremonies incident to the reception of the Royal Serbian Commission at City Hall. Their fine bearing, personnel and steadiness were most favorably commented upon by everyone.

The marching review given to the Adjutant General at Lafayette Street after the ceremonies was also most admirably performed.

It augurs well for the future of the New York Guard and will serve as an example of efficiency for other organizations to follow.

Will you not only accept my thanks for your hearty co-operation in last Saturday's ceremonies, but also congratulate and thank the officers and men of your regiment who composed the Battalion.

With renewed thanks and congratulations, I am,

Yours most sincerely,

(Signed) GEORGE R. DYER.

Digitized by Google

COAST ARTILLERY SCHOOL
FORT MONROE, VIRGINIA

April 11, 1918.

From: The Commandant

To: The Adjutant General, State of New York

Subject: Report on French and British Anti-Aircraft Artillery.

1. Report on this subject submitted to the Adjutant General of the Army, under date of December 19, 1917, by—

Major Francis R. Stoddard, C. A. C., N. Y. G
Capt. Robert H Wilder, C. A. C., N. Y. G.
Lieut. Cabot Ward, C. A. C., N. Y. G

was received at this school on January 15, 1918, forwarded by request to the Chief Signal Officer on February 25, 1918, and received back April 10, 1918.

2. This is an excellent report and was of considerable value in starting instruction on the subject here. Later reports have verified the accuracy of details and this with the general grasp of the subject, speaks well for the ability and enterprise of these officers, especially as the study was new to them.

3. It is regretted that through misunderstanding expected arrangements for one or more of these officers to relate experiences at the beginning of instruction here failed.

4. It is requested that they be informed that the assistance furnished this school is highly appreciated.

(Signed) F. K. FERGUSSON
Colonel, C. A. C., J. O. S.

President of the Union Club,
1 East 51st Street,
New York City.

March 31st, 1919.

Dear Sir:

During the visit of the 27th Division, and while the 104th Field Artillery was quartered in this Armory, we received a consignment of cigarettes sent to me with the compliments of the Union Club. This was mighty thoughtful and deeply appreciated, and on behalf of our guests, the officers and enlisted men of the 104th Field Artillery, and on behalf of my own command, I wish to thank you, as President, and the members of the Union Club for this courtesy and gracious gift.

Yours very sincerely,
(Signed) GEORGE W. BURLEIGH
Colonel.

Digitized by Google

NATIONAL WAR WORK COUNCIL

of the

Young Men's Christian Associations of the United States.

347 Madison Ave., New York.

November 1, 1920.

Dear Colonel Burleigh:

The following resolution was passed at the last meeting of the Executive Committee, and I take pleasure in forwarding the same to you in the hope that you will transmit to the officers under you the appreciation of the Council for this piece of work:—

The War Work Council of the Young Men's Christian Association, desiring to convey to Colonel George W. Burleigh and the Officers under him, the appreciation of the Council for the work performed by them in training 4,000 Overseas Secretaries during the late war, passed the following resolution at a meeting of the Executive Committee on October 13th, 1920:—

RESOLVED: that the War Work Council of the Y. M. C. A., in acknowledgment of their appreciation of the service rendered by Colonel George W. Burleigh and the officers of the 9th Coast Defense Command, (formerly 9th Coast Artillery Corps), desire to convey to these Officers the thanks of the Council for the military training given by them to some 4000 secretaries sent overseas in the late war, and to assure them that this service essentially promoted a spirit of discipline which very vitally assisted in their service overseas in their relationship with the American Army.

Very sincerely,

(Signed) JOHN SHERMAN HOYT,

Vice Chairman.

Col. George W. Burleigh,
27 Cedar St.,
New York

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google